

**THE WRITINGS OF**  
**REV. R. GERALD CULLETON**

**THE PROPHETS AND OUR TIMES**

**(Page 2)**

**THE REIGN OF ANTICHRIST**

**(Page 120)**

# THE PROPHETS AND OUR TIMES

By

R. GERALD CULLETON



*"It shall come to pass in the last days, says the Lord, that I will pour forth of my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams. And moreover upon my servants and upon my handmaids in those days will I pour forth of my Spirit, and they shall prophesy."(Acts 2:17-18)*

*"In all ages men have been divinely instructed in matters expedient for the salvation of the elect . . . and in all ages there have been persons possessed of the spirit of prophesy, not for the purpose of announcing new doctrines, but to direct human actions." (St. Thomas: Summa: 2:2:174:Res. et ad 3)*



TAN BOOKS AND PUBLISHERS, INC.  
Rockford, Illinois 61105

**NIHIL OBSTAT:**

**L. Arvin  
Censor Deputatus**

**IMPRIMATUR:**

**Philip G. Scher  
Bishop of Monterey-Fresno, California November 15, 1941**

**The imprimatur indicates merely negative approval, that is to say that no errors against faith or morals have been noted in the book. But it does not mean that any approval is given to any private oracle or any opinion expressed in the work.**

**Originally published by the author, Rev. R. Gerald Culleton in 1941 and 1943.**

**Copyright ° 1941 and 1943 by R. Gerald Culleton Copyright \* 1974 by TAN Books and Publishers, Inc.**

**PRINTED AND BOUND IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA**

**TAN BOOKS AND PUBLISHERS, INC.**

**P.O. Box 424**

**Rockford, Illinois 61105**

**1974**

# CONTENTS

## THE PROPHETS AND OUR TIMES

<b>Preface.....</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>Part One: Has this Century been foreseen.....</b>	<b>9</b>
<b>Part Two: Topical Index to the Prophecies.....</b>	<b>53</b>
<b>Part Three: The Prophetic Text.....</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>Bibliography.....</b>	<b>249</b>
<b>Index to the Prophecies.....</b>	<b>252</b>

## PUBLISHER'S PREFACE

A few words need to be said about reissuing Father Gerald Culleton's *The Prophets and Our Times*. First of all it is now thirty-three years since the book was first published, and Father Culleton had an idea the world was then witnessing the events foretold by the prophecies he had recorded, the colossal occurrence of that time being of course, World War II, the greatest struggle the world has ever known. Yet, from our view we realize those prophecies he presented and interpreted have not been fulfilled. Then too, there appeared in 1970 Mr. Yves Dupont's *Catholic Prophecy—The Coming Chastisement*, which for its brevity and command of the significance of the prophecies' meaning, has no equal in any book that I am familiar with, and certainly the present volume will not replace his nor eliminate the need of students interested in this subject reading *Catholic Prophecy* as well. Father Culleton's work traces many of the same prophecies as Mr. Dupont's and in general restricts itself to the same era; however, Father's book is considerably larger and more comprehensive in its coverage, for which reason, mainly, we have thought to reprint it. Added to this, however, is the general accuracy of *The Prophets and Our Times*, despite Father's penchant for interpreting the prophecies as being fulfilled by the events of his day.

Probably the most provocative characteristic of this book, especially to readers who have had no introduction to the subject, is the cohesiveness of the various prophecies—how they coalesce, dovetail, agree, and complement one another—this despite the fact that they were made in different centuries, from the fourth down to our own, and at times generally when transportation and communication were very poor, a factor which would preclude collusion (this is virtually unthinkable, given the conditions). The question arises then, do these prophecies, taken together, form a body of knowledge, or even a quasi-body of knowledge? The author certainly treats them as if they do. Still the contemporary reader will ask: "Well, do they?" This, I believe, each person will have to answer for himself, based largely upon the interior evidence of the prophecies themselves. For my own part, I think they do. This judgment, however, is more mature than perhaps most readers will be able to make and comes from having read in various books prophecies other than those appearing here or in any recent editions, all of which prophecies I feel fit the general pattern laid down by Father Culleton in *The Prophets and Our Times*.

Moreover, it has been my good fortune to come across a number of books from which he draws his material, some of these over a hundred years old. The impression which a reading of these older books gives, most decidedly, is that people in those days were just as interested in the prophecies as we are today, and the writers of those books were extremely careful to cite their sources and would be judged by their work as sane, sensible and careful academicians, giving most scrupulously their own sources and filling in many details about the lives of the various saintly prophets. In this regard I am thinking especially of *The Christian Trumpet*. The present author, moreover, has not excerpted all that he could from these books, but rather has selected only the most apropos material.

If we are to grant that this group of prophecies forms a sort of corpus of knowledge, what are the general outlines of this information? Here, I believe, we all owe a great debt to Father Culleton for his grouping of this information into two general categories, the first of which he covers in the present book and the second of which he treats in his *Reign of Antichrist* (1951), also being reissued concomitantly with the present book, and one which the reader, if he is interested in this subject at all will surely want to peruse, in order to flesh out his view or perspective of events. In general, the information covered by his two books concerns the time of Antichrist, on the one hand, and the time generally which precedes it, on the other. The time preceding Antichrist we might well refer to as the "dress rehearsal" period. Now the time of the Antichrist will be the most distressing the world has ever known, and the Bible is very explicit in specifying that his reign will last three and one-half years or forty-two months or 1,290 days. These figures are given in several different places in the Bible (*Daniel* 12:7; 12:11; *Apoc.* 11:2-3; 13:14), in order that, it would seem, we do not in any way understand them symbolically; the reason for this is obvious: God wishes to console the good people of that time with the knowledge of precisely when their great tribulation will end—in truly a touching measure of His mercy toward frail humanity. Shortly after the end of Antichrist comes the End of Time, the most prophesied event in the Bible, otherwise referred to as "the Day of the Lord," which is a time not to be longed for: "Woe to them that desire the day of the Lord" says the prophet Amos (5:18). In the view of St. Thomas Aquinas, the Day of the Lord immediately precedes the General Judgment.

At that time Our Lord returns in triumph and in judgment as the Lord of lords and King of kings. Now, the whole affair is so important, it would seem, considering both the Biblical prophecies and the saintly prophecies (which Father Culleton concerns himself with here), that it is not sufficient for it simply to happen once. Rather it seems we are to have a foretaste of both the agony and the joys of that later set of events, during a time which serves very much as a warning to the world. This period is dominated by the personage of the Great Monarch; the world in his time enters a severe period of tension (social, political, and religious), which eventuates in terrific military struggles (none of which appear to be Armageddon, it might be added), the final result being the world-wide triumph of this Catholic prince, under whom and through whose influence virtually the entire world becomes Catholic. During his reign there is unprecedented peace, prosperity, and progress. But toward the end of his time, the stiff-necked, hard-hearted men of that day descend once more into widespread sin, and shortly after the Great Monarch, Antichrist makes his appearance. Just as Our Lord at His second coming, the Great Monarch is a king of kings and lord of lords, who rules in justice and who brings an unheralded *Pax Christiana*, thus it would seem, forming a "type of Christ" in His second coming. Such, then, is a rough delineation of the events recorded in Father Culleton's two books. Whether or not it is valid the reader can judge for himself.

A number of other questions arise in this regard which might be considered briefly. "Are we in the Great Apostasy mentioned by St. Paul in 2 *Thessalonians*, Chapter 2? One encounters among troubled Catholics today a good deal of mention about this. The answer is that it would seem we are not, but in view of the "dress rehearsal" concept elucidated above, we are most certainly experiencing a *serious* loss of faith on the part of a large portion of the Catholic population; yet many are still holding fast, despite the confusion rampant in the Church. When the reader has read the prophecies contained here, he will begin to see that most likely "the Great Apostasy" will come *after* the reign of the Great Monarch and refers to the general falling away after his time.

It might well be asked, "Are we close to the End of Time, or to the time of Antichrist?" Many authoritative writers think that, we are. Personally, I would not discount the possibility, especially since some of the conditions are now fulfilled, and it takes little imagination to see how others could be. In this regard writers, and even saints,

have been mistaken in the past, for which reason none of us should be too hasty to say yes to this question. Referring to the End of Time, Our Lord Himself told us, "But of that day or hour no man knoweth, neither the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father." (*Mk.* 13:32). Nonetheless, we are certain that it will come and come "as a thief in the night." (1 *Thess.* 5:2). St. Paul tells us that Our Lord will return "in a very little while" (*Heb.* 10:37), and St. Peter tells us that "one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" (2 *Pet.* 3:8), from which we can safely infer that the present Christian era is not going to be all that long. If indeed we are close to the End of Time, or at least close to or beginning the "dress rehearsal" period, it would seem providential that these prophecies would be made known now on so widespread a basis, enabling those who thus desire to be advised on the matter.

"Have some of the prophecies about the first of these two periods in fact been fulfilled?" The answer to this question is yes, some of these prophecies seem to be coming true, notably the widespread loss of faith, confusion in the Church (even in matters of Faith), bankruptcy of the democracies in Western Europe (that is to say their inability to cope with problems of labor, inflation, political unrest, social justice, international finance, and simple "planning for the future"). Already, we are hearing more and more about an imminent eruption in Italy, which will be one of the hallmarks of the period of the Great Monarch. Given the space to develop the notion in a substantive way, and citing additional prophecies to this effect, I believe I could quite easily support this answer.

Despite the fact that these prophecies, taken together, form a compelling tract, we must remember that they are not dogma, that is, do not concern *de fide* pronouncements of the Church. They are simply given for our instruction, to help us, it would seem, in a trying time. If some good Catholics choose not to accept them or choose to lay little stock in them, it is not the duty of any one of us to coerce his mind into assent (as if that were possible). These prophecies are not needed for salvation, but they may indeed be needed for sanity, and certainly for hope, by some or many of us. Indeed, there is a great deal of hope in the personages of the Great Monarch and the Angelic Pastor (a holy Pope) mentioned here. They are truly romantic figures, in the best sense of the word, and so much after the style of God, who in His action among men tends to be both simple and surprising, subtle and irresistible; in His own good time surely something like

the events predicted in this book are bound to occur—they are, as it were almost wrapped up part and parcel in the confusion of the world's current life. With the development of that confusion, so trying on us all, is bound to emerge the solution from a most unpredictable quarter. Hence, the enemies of God and of His Holy Church will not know where or how to prepare themselves to resist successfully the advent of the Great Monarch. God will nurture this man in His own manner, who, the prophecies seem to indicate, will not even be known to

himself until a late moment. When that man finally takes the field, it will be all over for the enemies of God, despite their numerical superiority and seeming greater power.

With these thoughts in mind we are pleased to reissue *The Prophets and Our Times* and hope that it will bring enlightenment and consolation to those who read it.

Thomas A. Nelson

June 26, 1974

Feast of Ss. John and Paul

# PREFACE

My modest attempt to put before modern readers many prophecies which their forefathers used to read has been very graciously accepted. As the orders for copies of the book have exceeded my supply I present this second edition. Readers of the first have expressed regret that the prophecies were not arranged chronologically nor indexed. I have been guided by this constructive criticism.

I am sure that there are still private prophecies which have escaped both me and my past readers. If any new reader knows of any such I would greatly appreciate a communication from him. This would make a third edition as complete as humanly possible.

There has been, of course, some destructive criticism. It has come chiefly from those who read only the title of the book. To those and to all I would say: "If we arrange our things spiritual on the presumption that we are dealing with true prophets and living in the times forecast, but our things material as though it were a waste of time to read this book, we shall find ourselves pleasing God and not making fools out of ourselves before sensible men."

There are many individuals and institutions to whom I am greatly indebted for their kind help with this work. On them I pray God to bestow appropriate blessings.

—Feast of Easter, 1943



*The first Pentecost—The Coming of The Holy Ghost*

# PART I

## HAS THIS CENTURY BEEN FORE-SEEN?

(Signs to precede the Reign of Anti-Christ)

Introduction.....	9
The contents of this book.....	10
Some notions on prophecy.....	11
What we MUST versus what we MAY believe.....	14
Apology for this Book.....	18
Estimates of the Prophecies .....	19
Chapter I: Evils of the Latter Days.....	23
Chapter II: Persecution of Christians.....	30
Chapter III: The Latter Day Jews.....	33
Chapter IV: Devotion to the Sacred Heart.....	36
Chapter V : Famine, Pest and War.....	40
Chapter VI: The Great Monarch and Angelic Pastor.....	49

*Come, Holy Ghost, Creator blest,  
And in our hearts take up Thy rest.  
Come with Thy grace and heav'nly aid  
To fill the hearts which Thou hast made.*

*O Holy Ghost, through Thee alone,  
Know we the Father and the Son.  
Be this our never changing creed,  
That Thou dost from them both proceed.*

# INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER

## PREAMBLE

In all times of international or at least widespread strife a number of oracles are brought off musty shelves and the Scriptures are searched to learn, if possible, the divine reasons behind it and its likely outcome. In all such times there is a conflict, more or less pronounced, between good and evil hence often the question: Is this the time of Anti-Christ or at least is it a combat of such tremendous importance in the history of the Christian Church that it has merited pre-mention in the Scriptures<sup>1</sup> and the expressions of long buried wise or holy men?

In our days there progresses a war, the equal of which has never before disgraced the earth. Is it merely the natural development of war science and the interdependence of nations that makes each succeeding conflict more terrible

<sup>1</sup>"We feel that the present hour is a phase of the solemn story of humanity predicted by Christ." Pius XII Radio Address, 11-24-40.

and extended than its predecessor? Or is this war more sinister because it is a strife "par excellence" of error against truth?

We may feel quite sure that the present world engagement lacks the signs for the end of the world. There is no reason to suspect any modern war lord of being the Anti-Christ. Could the struggle be a type or symbol or even an announcement of the Anti-Christ? Scripture tells us to expect many an Anti-Christ before the real one comes. Many there have been, are, and doubtless will be. For a certainty there are anti-Christian leaders and armies in the field today so we must admit that this war comes under the Scripture text: "There shall be many false Christs . . . but the end is not yet," but to go farther and say that this conflict is an announcement of the near approach of the Anti-Christ is another question.

## THE CONTENTS OF THIS BOOK

There are gathered together between the covers of this book a number of Scripture texts. Some of them certainly and others probably refer to the latter (but not necessarily the last) days of the world. To these have been added many sayings of saints and sages which bear on things to come after their day, yet apparently before the appearance of Anti-Christ.

The author has divided the prophecies used herein into two groups: the public prophecies (Scripture and the Fathers) and the private prophecies as found in the Apocrypha and the works of pious or learned men. The whole collection quotes over 200 seers. The extracts are arranged more or less chronologically so that the development of the ideas concerning the latter days may be more apparent. The prophecies are prefaced by an exhaustive topical index and the author's concordance of them. With this in mind the gentle reader will realize that the author possesses not the gift of prophecy, nor does he profess even reasonable certainty for his own interpretations or correlations. On the contrary, he furnishes his texts to the reader and reminds all that where the Universal Church is silent each may draw his own conclusions provided he draw with caution.

The prophetic texts recorded are of certain divine origin only in the instances where they form parts of Sacred Scripture or Tradition, and the interpretations of these are matters of faith only in those few instances where the Church has given the meaning.

All other oracles found herein are to be classed as private. Some of them are said by their authors to have been revelations from God either to the author himself or to one or other pious or saintly person known to the author. Others of them have come down in the tradition of one or other nation and no doubt represent what the national bards were given to understand by the early national saints. The remainder is rather commentaries on oracles. They are by authors who do not profess to have had revelations, but who were wise men and who based their ideas of the future on Scripture, the Fathers, the saints and an intimate knowledge of history, the effects of evil and the capabilities of human ingenuity.

Without going into the various arguments in favor of, or against the authenticity, either of the present documents which contain these private oracles, or the oracles themselves, the writer has felt justified in using all those

quotations which seem not to contradict the teaching of the Church, and which, at the same time, have merited acceptance in the works of other authors better equipped

than he to pass on their merit. Let us say this: they are (unless otherwise noted) oracles which have for generations intrigued the children of earth.

## SOME NOTIONS ON PROPHECY

In our day it is common, even among some men of faith, to pay little or no regard to any prophecy and to consider one who does pay heed, a relic from a dark age. Such an attitude is to some extent unreasonable as well as quite unchristian. Human reason teaches that God, and He alone, knows the future and that He can and may reveal it to His intelligent creatures. It is an article of faith, as well as historically established, that GM did make certain revelations about the future to man and that some of them have not yet been fulfilled. Scripture teaches that there is a gift of prophecy which the Creator may bestow and has bestowed on whomsoever He pleases. A time limit was set and is passed for public revelations but none exists for private. No man may refuse to study public oracles, and, while a reasonable person may shut his ears to any particular private prophecy, he may not deny the value of all.

There are certain characteristics of prophecy which it is well to know. For example, events are portrayed as it were in a deep mist. Thus a prophecy may be in process of fulfillment before one's eyes and he may not be aware of it. Christ's birth, life and death are clearly forecast in the Old Testament yet, in all Judea scarce a hundred of His contemporaries recognized Him.

Then, too, a prophecy often reminds one of an Egyptian picture. There is no perspective. Events centuries apart may be forecast in one vision with divine disregard for time. The reason for this is to be found in a certain nontemporal relationship of spiritual events. One that happened in one century may be the type of another to come a thousand years later, or again an earlier may be the sign of a subsequent one. Thus St. John the Baptist was both a type of Christ and a sign of His near approach, whereas the destruction of Jerusalem was a type of the destruction of the world. In this connection it must be remembered that one prophetic utterance can portray even several types of a great spiritual event, as well as the event itself. The prophecy in the Apocalypse concerning Babylon refers to ancient Rome, its emperors and its fall, but the text is not exhausted with this. For a certainty the civil government of Anti-Christ is also spoken of and

there is reason to believe that the words foretell the future of all cities or governments which substitute materialism for true Christianity.

This peculiarity of prophecy makes the oracle credible by virtue of reason, as well as by virtue of faith, for when the type or sign is verified it is reasonable to expect the main event.

On the other hand, one momentous event is often forecast by many separate prophecies, from various angles and often over many centuries. In these instances, as the generations go by and the individual utterances increase, man gradually gets a more recognizable picture. Yet even here the event may have come and gone before all of these separate references are recognized as facets of one majestic gem. This feature is best noted in the Old Testament prophecies concerning the Messiah.

Prophetic ideas are often conveyed in visions. The recipient may not understand the meaning of the picture which passes before his mind. Sometimes further divine aid enlightens his mind. This aid may come immediately after the vision, later on in his life or not to him at all but to some one else. The "someone else" may be a contemporary or may not come into being till hundreds or even thousands of years later. In some instances only the incomprehensible vision proceeds from God. Actual history, probably centuries later, gives the first inklings as to what the picture means. The seer may give his personal opinion as to the meaning of one of his visions but such remains merely his opinion. In scripture divine inspiration guarantees that the revelations and their interpretations, when given, are free from error. We have no such guarantees in the case of the private prophecies.

Prophecies are sometimes conditional. Such usually contain or imply "unless penance be done" such and such will follow. True prophets may be saints or sinners as is evident from the Old Testament. False prophecies are easiest detected by the false doctrine they contain or their failure to materialize. The devil and his votaries cannot forecast the contingent future, but some writers contend

that the devil can bring to pass sometimes one or other forecast of his servants. Such events, however, may be curious but must be unimportant. Propagandists, necromancers and astrologers are often authors of false prophecies, nor would God use them for truth without manifesting his presence as He did in the case of the Witch of Endor.

In this regard it must be remembered that the phenomena of the subconscious is sometimes truly remarkable and that this psychological character differs greatly in different individuals. It is almost certain that there are persons who by purely natural means, for example, mental telepathy, can know what others have in mind and therefore can foretell what will happen if those persons carry out their plan. Such persons also in their sub-conscious minds work on all the information they have and often not knowing whence their conclusions come, nevertheless draw them and find out in time they have been very accurate. These phenomena however are easily distinguished from genuine

prophecy, for the latter deals also with a future unknown to any human (even thus hypothetically) and must be accurate in all its parts. Phenomena of the sub-conscious are sometimes correct, more often incorrect, and always related to an unknown but actual present or future event which is already in the process of unfolding.

In cases of doubt one should presume that phenomena are to be explained rather by natural means than by the preternatural or supernatural.

All true prophecy is from God for His glory and the sake of the "elect." As it becomes fulfilled it establishes its own divine origin and the reliability of the documents which convey it. It is a consolation to the faithful for it warns them what to expect as individuals and members of society, and at the same time assures them of the means for their personal salvation, the perpetuation of their Church, and the ultimate triumph of Christian civilization. Then, too, it instills into the hearts of sinners a salutary fear of divine vengeance.

## WHAT WE MUST VERSUS WHAT WE MAY BELIEVE

One hesitates about printing a book like this; not because he has failed to make himself clear, but because despite the clarity many insist upon being so certain of the interpretation of oracles obscure in themselves that they work themselves into a depression of spirit. This is folly not only because they consider certain, and immediately before them, a danger they may never encounter, but also because God's revelations are intended for the comfort and strength of the good. So true is this that if a private revelation which supposedly comes from God terrifies and weakens a good man he must either dismiss his interpretation of it or if his interpretation be correct then he must dismiss the revelation. In the case of the sinner God's words are intended for his conversion. He need not

wonder then, if knowing he be in sin and chooses not to repent, should the words of God terrify him.

To be more certain that the reader will clearly realize the difference between what Christians should believe and what they may or may not believe, I recount here (based on Hermann: *Institutiones Theologiae*, Vol. II, pg. 812 ss.) what seems to be the common teaching of approved theologians concerning Anti-Christ and the end of the world as illustrative of what we should believe. Then I will give a summary containing also what it seems to me Christian saints and sages add to this common teaching. As for these additions, the Christian is free to accept any of them or reject all.

### A. THE COMMON TEACHING BY APPROVED THEOLOGIANS:

I. There shall be certain signs which precede the end of the world, of these we may consider some remote and others proximate:

(a) Remote signs:

1. The total abolition of the Roman Empire;

2. The coming of Anti-Christ (though before him there shall be other anti-christs)

3. The appearance on earth of two great prophets of the Lord;

4. The preaching of the gospel in the whole world;

5. The conversion of the Jews which would at least be begun by the two prophets;

6. A general apostasy from the faith.

The order in which these signs are to occur is not given.

**(b) Proximate signs:**

1. The sun, moon and stars shall be darkened;

2. Stars shall fall upon the earth;

3. There shall be other and grave commotions in the sky,

air, sea and earth.

**II.** There shall be the second coming of Christ, the resurrection of the body, and the universal judgment.

**III.** The world shall be reduced to ashes, or otherwise transformed by fire.

No one may dare assert as certain anything concerning the time for the consummation of the world and the second coming of Christ (Leo X in the 5th Lat. Council cf. Matt. 24:3; I Cor. 13 :13 ; I Tim. 6:14).<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Pastor Kerr: The History of the Popes, vol. VIII, pg. 404

## **B. THE ABOVE WITH MY CORRELATION OF THE IDEAS OF SAINTS AND SAGES ADDED:**

**I.** There have been and will be types of Anti-Christ.

**II.** The life of mankind on earth is, as it were, divided into ages, and the last age may be considered divided into two stages. The first stage is to end with the overthrow of Anti-Christ, and the second with the second coming of Christ, Universal Judgment, etc.

**III.** During succeeding generations evils would multiply with individuals and nations drifting even farther from God, and ever increasing numbers losing all faith. Certain scourges would afflict various countries such as wars, revolutions, tyrannical rulers, class struggles, persecutions and the like, but none of these would bring in its wake peace, unity or mass conversions.

**IV.** It is unlikely that the first stage of the last age commenced with the apparently irreparable loss of unity among Christians which was consummated in the 16th century.

**V.** Towards the end of this first stage there would be a preview to or an event particularly typical of the reign of Anti-Christ and his overthrow. It would take the form of three powerful but evil rulers who would cause a "flesh hewing course of warfare" and persecute Jews and Christians. They are to overcome their enemies. Two of them, however, seem destined to be overcome by the third and he is to fall before a good ruler aided visibly by God. This visible aid is to be in some way a type of three days darkness noted below.

**VI.** Peace and a notable return of Governments and individuals to God and Christian unity shall follow. A

great Pope and a great civil leader shall be responsible. This good sign, although a preview or type of what may be expected after Anti-Christ will be of short duration for the forces of evil will not have been vanquished but only momentarily upset. (Here ends the subject matter of this volume.)

**VII.** This peace is to be followed by the end of the first stage of the last age; namely, the three and one-half years of almost universal domination by Anti-Christ. The persecutions of that time will exceed in cruelty and extent anything that the world has seen and in no other time shall evil have so triumphed. Very few will remain faithful to God and live. It will seem as though the Church has ceased to exist. On the other hand, Henoah and Elias, the prophets of the Lord, by word and deed shall combat Anti-Christ and his diabolical hoards. The two prophets shall be martyred shortly before the end of the period. During the last terrible battle when all seems lost, will come three days darkness with the exterminating angels. When the darkness lifts there will not remain alive on earth an unconvertible evil man.

**VIII.** There follows at once a millennium in a less strict sense. It is the peace previewed before Anti-Christ and in turn a type of the true millennium. It would seem that Christ would appear in the skies or at least that there would be some happening typical of His Second Coming, and that it would be apparent that there was a preview of the Last Judgment. Would the Just martyred by Anti-Christ then rise from the dead, this being the first resurrection spoken of in the Apocalypse? Would an earthly reward symbolical of heavenly rewards be

bestowed upon the confessors who had escaped the beast? This seems not too clear but we are led to expect at least this, that there follows the fall of Anti-Christ an interval during which there will be universal peace and union in one faith under one shepherd with Christian life marvelously exemplified in the individual and in society. How long this symbol of a millennium will last is not clear but the common opinion of the Fathers was that it would not be long.

(Here ends the subject matter of the Second Volume.)

**IX.** Near the very end of this last stage of the last age the powers of Hell would again be loosed. Evil would rule but for a short time only. This time upheavals in nature would announce approaching doom, and in the end all men would perish from the earth. This final and universal destruction is certainly to be by fire. The real Second Coming of Christ seems to be connected with this time.

**X.** Then follow the resurrection of the dead, the universal judgment and the New Jerusalem or true millennium. (Here ends the subject matter of the third and last volume.)

## **APOLOGY FOR THIS BOOK**

Even if in one or other, or for that matter all instances, my tentative application of prophecy be not justified in the light of the future, it means merely that I am wrong. The private prophets may also have erred, but they may have had in mind other things than those which I have supposed. At any rate, it is the future alone that will praise or condemn both private commentators and private prophets. Some prophecies recorded here and applied by me to times before Anti-Christ may in whole or in part have been intended for his reign only.

We must also remember that many have, ever since the beginning, thought or professed to think that they saw signs of Anti-Christ and the rest in their generations. The future contradicted them. What the sincere ones noted were rather signs or types of Anti-Christ and the rest. Despite this, one seems to err not when, despite the errors

of the past, he tries in his day to understand, for in one generation or other, what true prophets have foretold must come to pass; and on the other hand, God tells us that certain of these things will come as thief in the night and that we must ever be prepared.

The only apology one might have for thinking that our age may be a critical one in Christian history is that in past Christian times evil organizations were either among non-Christians or Christians in circumscribed localities, whereas in our day the great anti-Christian forces and the anti-Christian philosophies of materialistic secret societies are already wide spread, well-armed and in the field for world-wide domination. On the other hand, their leaders and even the rank and file are for the most part Christians by baptism, and even natives of lands steeped in Christian traditions.

## **ESTIMATE OF THE PROPHECIES**

It will be noted by the reader that the private oracles recorded herein do not always agree. This could mean that one or other is not genuine, but it could also indicate that we err in relating them to the same event.<sup>1</sup>

It is also worthy of remark that frequently there is a relationship between Scripture and private prophecies in that the latter seem to make an effort at particularizing prophecies of the Sacred Text which are in themselves quite general. Not infrequently a private prophet assigns a

date often vaguely but now and again quite precisely. Some of these precise dates have passed but so far as we can see the event has not occurred. Unless, there be reason to suppose such oracles conditional it seems better to reject them.

A great number of statements seem to fit persons, events and conditions today but very often there are in the very same oracle ideas which do not fit. While this might mean that two events are considered without temporal perspective, it could also mean that the whole text despite its partial description of the present may refer to events

<sup>1</sup>Prophetic texts are sometimes changed in transmission and in translating

still far in the future.<sup>1</sup> As a matter of fact parts of many of these prophecies have in times past been referred to Napoleon or the French Republican disorders and one or other of them to the First World War.

This merely means that caution must be used about even the value of any particular private prophecy and that we should not be too hasty in interpreting beforehand even the oracles of Sacred Scripture.

Despite this there is true value for every generation in all genuine prophecy. The burden thereof is always the same, namely: Organized evil cannot truly harm the elect nor even bring them any sorrow but the sorrow of Christ which is joy; no human, natural or preternatural agency can destroy the Church or Christian civilization; when evil becomes unbearable to the individual who trusts God, or to society, God will work a miracle if necessary to overcome it; physical and mental suffering exists for the perfection of the good and the conversion or destruction of the wicked.

As has been evident to the reader, the prophecies of Sacred Scripture seem not to apply to our modern conflict any more than they do to any other in the past where the Christian cause has been involved.

<sup>1</sup>It is not improbable that in some instances contradictory sentences are interpolations.

With a bit of imagination on the other hand the private oracles can be marshalled into a fairly good description of the present war to date and then taking the unfulfilled portions we can make a forecast of the future which would seem quite logical in the circumstances. But we must remember, too, that without prophecies and with a history of the combat to date we can also make a fairly logical estimate of the future course of events. At any rate the author is no better equipped than is the reader. Wishful thinking often plays so great a part in the application of prophecy that it is sometimes better for one to keep his own interpretations to himself.

Whether this war be a particularly crucial one in Christian history or not makes little difference, for this much is certain: if a powerful anti-Christian force should emerge victor from this or any other conflict and its victory be anything like universal it may take one of two courses: Either it will throw off its anti-christian character, which is unlikely, or it will endeavor by force to destroy Christianity. In this latter event, we may lay aside all private prophecy and use just Scripture and Tradition. These tell us with infallible truth that when universal control means Christianity or Anti-Christianity the victor is Christianity, and this irrespective of what miracles may be needed or what blood may be shed. "I am with you all days, even to the consummation of the world." "Thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my Church and the gates of Hell shall not prevail against it."

*Come, Thou Holy Spirit, come,  
And from Thy celestial home  
Shed a ray of light divine.  
Come, Thou Father of the poor,  
Come, Thou Source of all our store,  
Come, within our bosoms shine.*

*Comforter art Thou the best,  
Thou the soul's most welcome guest,  
Sweet refreshment here below.  
In our labor rest most sweet,  
Grateful coolness in the heat,  
Solace in the midst of woe.*

# CHAPTER I

## EVILS OF THE LATTER DAYS

An important sign of the latter days is the prevalence of false teachings with the natural consequences: defections from religion, lack of faith even among Catholics and great moral degeneration.

Several prophecies written long before the time of Christ speak of an age when many Gentile nations would deny the existence of God, and their oppressive and unjust rulers unite against Christianity, while much of the populace would devise vain things instead of the truth.

Since it was the Gentiles who accepted Christ when the Jews rejected Him, any reference to the Gentiles as nations united against Christ would apply rather to the latter times than to any previous period in the history of the Christian world. It would seem that when the Jews begin to return to Palestine, which is the start of their return to God, that the time would have arrived when God begins to reject the Gentiles before accepting the returning Jews.

That the Gentiles have already begun to reject Christ is certainly evidenced in the recent events in Russia, Mexico, Germany, and for that matter in nearly every nation. Christ is rejected when ignored or spurned as well as when He is proscribed by law. In some countries God has been rejected entirely, while in others Christ has been made subservient to one or other form of nationalism or internationalism, which is merely another way of speaking. Both systems substitute the created for the Creator. Despite these modern evil symptoms, it would not be necessary to presume that the Church would not, in the ordinary course of events, be quite able, without miracles, to overcome them.

Some such rebellion against God and His Christ is to extend itself throughout the world shortly before the reign of Anti-Christ, with even Catholics in great numbers abandoning the true faith. Coincidental with this general indifference toward religion, in fact even actual hatred of it, there is to be the complete degeneration of the morals of the people, a degeneration similar to that which existed among the pagans before the dawn of Christianity and civilization as we have known it.

These signs of the approaching end have, of course, been true in varying degrees in earlier ages. The essential

difference, however, between former defections and those which presage the end, is to be found in the universality and sinister character of the latter apostasy. Men of the latter days are to set out, either to banish Christ from the memory of man, or in other instances to turn Christianity into a form of materialism and one to be used to gain unworthy objectives.

Several years before this general apostasy there were to be false teachers who would cause great confusion and darkness in the minds of the people, resulting in the loss of entire nations to the true faith. This would very effectually prepare the way for Anti-Christ. Some say that this has already been fairly well accomplished by the so-called Reformation with its consequent evils. Much more and far worse evils were to befall the world immediately before the reign of Anti-Christ.

We have also been warned against various prophets and those who claim to have had visions that foretold a sign or a wonder. Although those signs or wonders may actually occur as foretold, we will know the prophets are false because their doctrines are false. They will seem to make the people forget the True God even while claiming to be sent by Him, thus profaning His Holy Name. They will rob the poor, give and take bribes, and though preaching peace, will, if their greedy demands are not complied with, wage war. Thus they say: "Peace. Peace" ; yet there is no peace. However, their time will come to an end because God merely permits this to happen to try our faith and increase our love for and dependence on Him.

There will also be those who will indulge in fruitless discussions of so-called learned things, and by so doing will miss the real truth and the real faith because the things which engage their attention are based on false knowledge instead of the truth. The reason for this, primarily, is the education without religion which will exist in those days, for this education will not really educate but will have as its basis vain works and false ideals. This so-called education will be one of the most effective means used by Satan to prepare the world for Anti-Christ.

After the birth of Anti-Christ and shortly before the rise of the Great Monarch, the false doctrines were to multiply

and spread to such an extent that even Catholics would doubt many of the articles of faith, resulting in their perversion, this to apply not only to the laity but even to many priests and some of the hierarchy. The zeal of these latter will be greatly affected by this lack of faith. There will be dissensions among the clergy. Many will be proud, selfish, unjust, covetous, and even forgetful of vows made at ordination regarding chastity. Many will even offer Mass and confer the Sacraments sacrilegiously.

When the zeal of the clergy fails they will see the faithful leaving the churches and turning to the world. The House of God will be deserted, singing of hymns will cease, and the observance of festivals abandoned. The relics of saints will be considered powerless and any contributions the laity will make to the church will be made grudgingly.

In many religious houses humility and poverty will be forgotten, pride and desire for worldly luxuries will characterize the inmates instead of the spirit of simplicity which is the mark of a true religious.

Because of these defections Catholics will be severely punished, for only by chastisements can God bring back to the minds of His people, a realization of their dependence upon Him. As a consequence, widespread persecution of priests and people will come upon the Church in order that faith and love of God may be revived, for as surely as night follows day, so will civilization crumble and the world become steeped in the darkness of ignorance, hatred, misery and vice when God, who is the Light of the World, will no longer rule in the hearts of His people.

It is true that many people will seem to honor God but this will be chiefly lip service and not based on real faith and love. They will be unwilling to recognize evil because they will prefer to follow the easy path of pleasure. Truth will be deserted and in its stead false doctrines eagerly embraced, because it will seem the people even wish to be deluded. As the prophets say: "It will be a lying generation, given to covetousness, deceit and even blasphemy."

The wickedness of the people during these days will be multiplied. Iniquity will be so general throughout the world that scandalizers and betrayers will abound and hatred for one another will replace charity in the hearts of men. Every man will oppose his neighbor, the base man against the honorable, the few really good people will be opposed on all sides by the unrighteous, while the wicked alone will prosper. Laws will be ignored and personal

possessions will become the property of the strong, since force alone will rule. If the one who sows has not the strength to defend his possessions, he will see another reap the fruit of his toil.

Even family life will be completely disrupted. There in the heart of the family group, where, above all, there should abound genuine love and loyalty, will be found only bitterness and betrayal. Children, lacking respect for their elders, will rise against their parents, and even the parents in turn, will be without a natural love for their offspring, resulting in mutual mistrust.

The lowly among the people shall overtake those rightfully in power. Treaties will be broken with less compunction than if they were mere scraps of paper, the chief consideration being selfish advancement.

Family unity and fidelity we find glaringly absent in Communistic Russia and by no means satisfactory in other lands, our own being among the foremost offenders. Lack of respect for treaties we find almost daily exemplified, and when a true history of our times is written we will discover that many modern rulers have conveniently disregarded solemn promises. The dreaded "Secret Police" of some nations operates everywhere and for all one may know, relatives of his may be members sworn to betray even their own flesh and blood. Despite this, however, the prophets seem to suppose times more universally evil than ours today.

In the last days before Anti-Christ there are to appear many anti-christs. This is the sign by which we will know that the hour of the great evil is at hand. Of course at this time evil will abound more than at any other period in the history of the world. However, as mentioned above, we can expect a preview of this culmination of evil in the world. During the preview we will observe pride, greed, intemperance, immorality, hypocrisy, unjust laws, lack of natural affection and dissemination of false knowledge rampant in the world.

Another peculiar thing about some of the false teachers is that they will teach doctrines more severe even than those laid down by God, such as commanding abstinence from certain foods and drinks, and certain innocent pleasures, which God intended for our proper use. In these days fiction will be preferred to truth because the people of the world will wish to be seduced.

There will not be many who will be really wise, the

intelligent will be very few in number and even these will be in great part silent, because they know that they would be either not listened to, or laughed at. The prophets say also that evil and falsehood will increase as the world grows weaker with age.

We are told that in remote preparation for Anti-Christ there was to be the beginning of the loosing of devils upon the world, and that many more would be loosed shortly before his reign. During these days people were to become inhospitable toward each other, willing to betray either for honor or personal gain, the rich were to become poor and the poor rich, the land was to become less fruitful and the animals less prolific than of old. At this time there were to arise three oppressive rulers who would exceed in tyranny and injustice all who were before them. They would bring to a head, as it were, the wickedness of Satan. Secularization of church property was a sign to precede their reign, also the persecution of priests, especially on "trumped-up" charges. Many governments would strive to control the Church, however God will not abandon the Church entirely at this time, but will make use of the demons to whom these rulers have abandoned themselves.

Towards the end of the world the Jews are to commit some atrocious crime for which they will be gravely persecuted. Could the crime be a veering away of many Jews from the belief in a personal God and personal Messiah and all that such belief implies?

We have been warned in Holy Scripture against those who deceive with empty arguments. These are the platitudes so often heard in defense of evil and so willingly accepted everywhere today. They have for their premise presumption on God's mercy and an unwillingness to recognize the true nature of sin and its evil consequences. As a result, vice more often than not is made to appear as virtue.

Among other things to happen during these evil days is the changing of God's laws by unscrupulous leaders to suit their own convenience. This shall lead to universal sin and a gradual lack of obedience to all of God's commandments. The prophets here could well refer to the sanction of divorce by the various Protestant churches and

national legislatures, as well as the tacit or actual approval of the practice of artificial birth control. In this latter respect, even Catholics, as individuals, have become greatly contaminated in recent years. It is obvious that it is but one step from easy divorce and artificial birth control to widespread immorality.

As a result of these evils, great social disturbances were to appear on every side. With the family, which is the basis of society, breaking up, the fate of society itself must hang perilously in the balance. Only God's hand can stay it. Throughout the history of the world, whenever these evils have infected any nation, they have eventually caused the destruction of that nation. That they will spread disastrously before the rule of Anti-Christ into every strata of society over the entire world, causing the malignant growth of complete moral degeneration, is a warning given us by many prophets. There will be no standard by which morals will be regulated. Marriages will be solemnized without witnesses, and many young women will cohabit with men without marriage and this unblushingly and without secrecy. The various forms of immorality will become so widespread and habitual that only some terrible punishment will be able to eradicate them, for in these times men will live according to their own lusts and desires and not according to God's will and commandments.

Finally, it has been foretold that by the time Anti-Christ is twenty years old, most of the world will have become atheistic and be oppressed by its rulers.

In concluding this chapter, I shall quote from a recent statement of the present Pope to the Lithuanian minister, in which he said that as Supreme Pastor he could not close his eyes "When precisely for the salvation of souls arise new incommensurable dangers—when on the face of Europe, (Christian in all its fundamental lineaments) , the sinister shadow of thoughts and deeds of enemies of God casts itself closer and more threateningly every day. In such circumstances more than in any other period of its history, the preservation, care, and if necessary, the defense of the Christian patrimony acquires for the future destinies of Europe and the prosperity of its people, large or small, a decisive importance."

# CHAPTER II

## THE PERSECUTION OF CHRISTIANS

The persecution of Christians has always been a sign that the Catholic Church was the true church founded by Christ. However it is clearly stated in the prophecies that this persecution would be greatly intensified shortly before and during the reign of Anti-Christ. On this point we might, in passing, call the attention of our readers to the grave sufferings of Catholics during the last decade in Mexico, Spain, Germany, Russia and Poland. We would, however, expect to find more widespread persecution were it a sign of the latter ages.

We are told that in the latter days three kings will rule in the world. Their reigns will be notable especially for their oppression. The Church will suffer much and it would seem from the prophecies that a great deal of this persecution is to be instigated by members of secret societies. This is often interpreted as a reference to Freemasonry, but we would likely not err if we added secret agents similar to those of certain national and international modern movements.

During the days of the three kings the yoke of Christ's Church is cast aside and they will set up their own insignia instead of the cross, the sign of Christ. It is a strange coincidence that in our day such anti-christian movements as Communism, Nazism and the rest put up their symbols everywhere.

On all sides blood is destined to flow, churches will be closed or desecrated, the celebration of church festivals forbidden, and the clergy banished from many lands. The tyrants and other hostile people will attack with bitter venom those who have been consecrated to God, robbing them of their meager possessions and subjecting them to most inhuman treatment. However, because of these persecutions, the clergy and religious will be forced to lead an apostolic life. Indeed it has been said by some prophets that so many of the clergy will be martyred that the Pope, forced to flee from Rome with his cardinals to seek sanctuary elsewhere, will have to walk over the dead bodies of his priests, while one or other oracle ordains that the Pope is destined to suffer a cruel death in his exile. In the last year of his reign, it would seem, he is to be in exile, and apparently, for the last three months he will be subjected to cruel torture. Pope Pius X saw a successor of his, one bearing his name, as the Pope who would leave

the Vatican and go into exile, and, after about a year, suffer a cruel death.

Other prophecies concerning this point tell us many of the clergy will have lost their zeal for God's work and will have forgotten their divinely appointed mission of saving souls, thinking rather of their own selfish interests. By these chastisements God will eventually bring them back to the true realization of their sacred duties.

Regarding the great number of those who will give up their lives for Christ before the end of the world, there are references to a chalice half-filled with the blood of martyrs, which, before the end, will be filled to overflowing. Those holy souls who have already shed their blood for the Word of God must wait until the blood of their fellow martyrs has filled this chalice before they can rejoice in the resurrection of the body. To date there have been, it is estimated, over thirteen million martyrs for the faith of Christ, and it is the belief of some students of prophecy, that before the end of the world approximately the same number must suffer a like fate. In this regard, however, we may be pardoned for doubting that mathematics will be discernible.

In addition there are to be spiritual locusts who will burn and poison souls with false doctrines. These, however, will have no power to injure those who remain faithful to the graces received in Baptism and Confirmation. They will be permitted to harass and persecute without killing for a short time, but will be powerless to destroy the Church. At this time man will long for death, welcoming it as an escape from his many miseries, but death will be denied him.

An old Saxon prophecy foretold that Spain would be split asunder by civil war, while another prophesied her glorious triumph over the enemies of God. This, no doubt, has already at least begun to come to pass. In 1534 it was foretold that the Jesuits would be driven out of Spain like dogs, but at a later date would return like nobles. This has occurred twice, the second time in conjunction with the recent civil troubles.

Other oracles refer to a division of, the German empire and the persecution of the Church of Christ by a German ruler. A great war was prophesied for Europe, following

the secularization of Church property. The prophets also mention that the late Pope Pius XI was destined to suffer "terrible immolation from within and without"; from within, they no doubt meant, by excruciating physical sufferings, and from without, by the persecution of his many children in Mexico, Spain, Germany, etc.

Finally, a bloody revolution has been foretold as coming upon the world during which time the Church of Christ is to suffer grievously, and her servants and leaders mocked, tortured and martyred. This revolution for a time (three

months?) will triumph, but shortly thereafter a marvelous event will take place which will fill the world with astonishment, as well as save the faithful from further persecution. Likely this marvel will be darkness similar to the three days darkness often spoken of by the prophets. It would thus come first, at the conclusion of the world distress here noted, and as a sort of preview, then as a final occurrence at the end of the reign of Anti-Christ. However, the prophets foretell that this marvel will occur only after great changes in many kingdoms throughout the world.

# CHAPTER III

## THE LATTER DAY JEWS

It has been foretold very definitely that the Jews are destined to return to Palestine toward the end of the world. According to Scripture, God did not cast the Jews off forever, nor was their dispersal intended by God to be everlasting. He promised them that in the latter times of the world's history the children of Israel, scattered throughout the world, would return to Palestine, that the temple would be rebuilt, and that God would make a new and everlasting covenant with His people.

As early as 1860 the Universal Israelite Alliance was formed for the purpose of promoting the emancipation of the Jews, their mental and moral improvement, and especially to encourage the Jewish colonization of Palestine. Following 1878, the year of the Russo-Turkish war, the trek of the Jews to Palestine really began, and after the establishment of the British Protectorate in 1917 they flocked there in considerable numbers. In 1920 the flag of Judah once more flew from the Tower of David, a symbol, as it were, of the prophet's words.

In the days in which these prophecies were to be fulfilled, the land of Israel was destined to become once more fertile so that the number of the Jewish inhabitants would increase and multiply. For ages the scarcity of rain in Palestine had made it impossible to raise crops in their former fullness, but between the years 1860 and 1900 the rainfall in Palestine increased over fifty percent, so that the land which had been arid for centuries is now much more fertile.

The Jewish population throughout the world is rapidly increasing. In the past two hundred years their numbers have grown from around three million to approximately twenty-four million. They have a high birth and very low death rate.

According to prophecies, the migration of the Jewish people to Palestine was to be brought about through their being persecuted at the hands of the Gentiles, while their final return to God will be effected directly through the chastisements of God.

Throughout all the centuries following their unfaithfulness

to God, they have been reviled, persecuted, exiled, and dispersed, yet God has miraculously preserved them as a race for a purpose worthy of Himself. They were His chosen people originally, yet because of their sins, salvation came to the Gentiles—they became enemies of God, as it were, for the sake of the Gentiles.—However, because of the fidelity of their forefathers, they remain dear to God, and it was promised them that "in fulness of the times of the Gentiles" their blindness would be taken from them and that God's curse would be lifted.

The partial fulfillment of this prophecy has been in evidence for the past one hundred years or more during which time the Jews have been steadily rising out of the depths of debasement and subjection in which they had lain for centuries. One of the most remarkable occurrences in the history of our age is the civil emancipation of the Jews. However, the complete bursting of the bonds of the Gentiles will not occur until the final overthrow of the Turks. After this, the Jews will return to godliness in the last days because of their fear of the Lord. They shall once more become a nation after they have repented and sought the mercy of God, and only then shall they attain peace.

It is at that time that the Tabernacle, the Ark, and the Altar of Incense, shall be found, which have remained hidden since Jeremias placed them in a hollow cave. Jeremias had told the people that they would remain hidden until God should gather together a congregation of the people and bring it to mercy.

The present war is causing great misery to the Jewish people. Its eventual effect upon Jewish aspirations in the Holy Land cannot well be forecast, but if its outcome opens up to them their ancient heritage, and we see at long last a Jewish state there, it means that interesting events in the history of the world are probably not too distant. The prophets do not necessarily forecast a universal Jewish migration but certainly a Jewish Palestine.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Hilaire Belloc : The Jews (3rd Edition, 1937) will be found the most valuable book extant on the modern situation of Jewry. The Introductory Chapter treats the Zionist movement.

David Goldstein: The Jewish Panorama (1941 ) is also of interest, especially from the American point of view.

# CHAPTER IV

## DEVOTION TO THE SACRED HEART

There is evidence that it was the will of Our Divine Lord that Devotion to the Sacred Heart be reserved for the last ages of the world, so that in the last great struggle between Himself and Satan, the souls that He loves so dearly may be drawn to Him with renewed warmth, and thus strengthened against the final desperate attacks of the enemy.

In the times preceding the end of the world, Satan and his cohorts were to be loosed upon the earth in a mighty effort to draw as many souls as possible away from God, before the power of Hell would be remarkably restricted, if not completely broken. Satan's mission is one of hate. God wins souls through love. Our Blessed Savior knew that the hatred which would be rampant in those evil days could be best conquered by a devotion which would inspire love and charity in the hearts of men. It was to serve, as it were, as a magnet and a bulwark of strength by giving men a clearer knowledge of God's deep and abiding love and mercy. It would provide a harbor of peace and security in those days of confusion and anguish, when men's souls would be tried almost beyond endurance.

In all times of great distress or danger, God has provided men with the means of conquering evil, as evidenced by the history of the world, both before the time of Christ, but especially since the Redemption. To mention just one of the instances of Divine intervention when a special devotion was given to the world at a crucial period, let us consider the Rosary. In the 13th century when the Albigenses were preaching their vicious doctrines against marriage, and the spread of this heresy seriously endangered the morals of the people, St. Dominic began preaching against them. He had but little success until Our Blessed Lady appeared to him, and told him to encourage devotion to the Rosary. This was done and the heresy quickly disappeared.

St. Gertrude, in the 14th century, who often conversed with the Beloved Disciple St. John, on one occasion asked him why he, who loved our Blessed Lord so fervently, had never written anything about the love of the Sacred Heart of Jesus. He explained to her his mission was to expound the Doctrine of the Incarnation and that as for the Love of the Incarnate Word as exemplified by His Divine Heart, it was reserved for the last ages to make it known, "so that

the world, carried away by follies, may regain a little of the warmth of early Christian charity by learning of the love of the Sacred Heart."

It was on the feast of St. John the Evangelist, three centuries later in 1647, that Our Lord appeared to St. Margaret Mary Alacoque and made certain promises to those who had a special devotion to His Sacred Heart, which promises were destined to become the means of salvation to so many countless Christians. Regarding this vision, the Saint explained, "I understand that this devotion to the Sacred Heart was a last effort of His love towards Christians of these latter times, by proposing to them an object and a means so calculated to persuade them to love Him."

In 1815 Mother Maria Rafols wrote concerning her own visions at the urgent insistence of Our Blessed Lord, in the hope that many, after reading what He told her, would turn from their evil ways, and have recourse to His Merciful Heart.

Much of what she has written is prophetic, and concerns itself, in part, with the destiny of Spain. Referring to her own Mother House, at Saragoza, Spain, Mother Rafols wrote that the Sacred Heart would perform such wonders there as to win many sinners away from their corrupted lives. It is worthy of note that although the Communists laid siege to the city of Saragoza, it was never captured, as foretold by Mother Rafols.

Our Lord promised her that no matter what means men might invent to destroy the faith in Spain, they would be unsuccessful and that He would reign there until the end of time, because of the love of the just and chaste souls who would always live in Spain. This prophecy, only recently unearthed, must have been of great comfort to the good Christians during the trying days of the Civil War.

So forgotten would be the Word of God in the days to come, that men would even scandalize and pervert innocent children, and endeavor to obliterate His Blessed Name from their memory. This was true in Spain, and is true in many other countries today.

There would be such moral corruption, not only in Spain, but in the entire world, that God would be forced to

destroy\_ entire cities, should they fail to reform, after His call. This is already being fulfilled and no doubt vastly greater destruction will befall the world before God is appeased.

It was written that these things would be taking place when the documents would be found. They were found in 1931. Our Lord further told Mother Rafols that there is one thing that hurts His Sacred Heart still more, and that is to be forgotten, offended and despised by souls consecrated to Him. They sometimes forget how dearly He loves His chosen ones, how eagerly He waits in the Tabernacle for them to come to Him for inspiration and assistance in the great mission of saving souls. He wants them to be humble and chaste, and to practice true charity towards one another, and thus, avoid giving scandal. He desires that His priests be living models of Himself and that they propagate devotion to His Sacred Heart.

He wishes that all men have greater love for one another so that there can be peace on earth, and greater love for Him. The Sacred Heart was very sad because of the sacrilegious men would commit on account of their coldness toward Him. He said that many would not only not heed the commands of Holy Mother Church, but would actually persecute Her and seek to destroy Her. Priests and religious would be treated with great disrespect.

He desires that men perform acts of satisfaction to forestall the wrath of Divine Justice, and that the Feast of the Sacred Heart be made a Holy Day of Obligation, and that all the Faithful receive Holy Communion on that day. (It is a Holy Day of Obligation in Spain.)

To those who devoutly wear the image of His Sacred Heart, He promised great graces and special protection at the hour of their death. He said that in times to come, many souls would propagate the devotion to His Sacred Heart.

Since these three holy women connect this devotion with the latter days it seems significant that its spread is quite modern. It was not extended to the entire world until 1856 by Pope Pius IX; the whole human race was commended to the Sacred Heart by Leo XIII only in 1899; and a special act of consecration was prescribed by the late Pope Pius XI just fourteen years ago (1929) to be recited throughout the entire world on the Feast of Christ the King.

In conclusion we may note that the prayers ordered by Pope Leo XIII to be said after Low Mass, to "restrain" Satan, are followed by the threefold repetition of the ejaculation invoking the aid of the Sacred Heart for this purpose: "Most Sacred Heart of Jesus, have mercy on us!"

# CHAPTER V

## FAMINE, PEST, AND WAR

These signs have special importance. Even the seers of Sacred Scripture clearly treat of them. Of course there always have been wars, famines and the like, but the specific occurrences which herald the latter days are distinguishable in two or three ways. These catastrophes are to be more universal, disastrous, and deadly. They are to be easily traceable to widespread moral evils in personal, family, social, national and international life. They are to occur when the world says "peace and security" while neither exists; when man plans without God, when the lowly rise against the mighty, children against parents; in a word when materialism and utter selfishness reigns. Lastly at the same time, persecution of Jews and Catholics must be involved and the former must be returning to Palestine.

There are various other associated signs, a few of which we might mention here, for instance, the unnatural movement of heavenly bodies, the unseasonal flight of birds, vast numbers of fish being cast up by the sea, the rule of an unexpected person, war being carried on in the clouds, and finally, that after the birth of Anti-Christ, nation shall rise up against nation. Another enlightening point as already noted is that in these latter days there are to arise three great and evil rulers.

These various troubles were destined to begin with the revolt of the lower classes which, however, in the final analysis would lose the victory. The apparent order in which events are to occur at this time is more or less as follows: the people will be dissatisfied with the various conditions under which they live, revolutions will follow, together with various assassinations of those in high places, primarily because of various tyrannical laws.

Wars will break out in various countries begun primarily by Germany. Whole cities and even kingdoms will be destroyed, and these wars will spread to practically all countries of the world. As a sign of the approaching end of these wars there shall be much famine in the world through lack of rain, and a superabundance, in many places, of snow and ice. The famine shall be accompanied by earthquakes and various other terrors in nature. Finally, some pain causing plague will visit the earth. It would also seem that various meteors are to fall on the earth and a

great comet is to appear in the northern sky, presaging tidal waves throughout the world.

As a result of all these various punishments which God will send upon the world, heretical and political sects will be completely disorganized and vanish as factors to be dealt with, but the toll that mankind must pay for a purified world will be one-third of the race. The majority of the dead will be men. Europe, of course, will be the hardest hit, for there three-fourths of the population shall be wiped out. In Europe and elsewhere most of the priests shall die in defense of their faith, no doubt the majority of these towards the end and during a three months rule under a system described as we would describe Communism. According to Nostradamus this period in the world's history begins when "Spain is split asunder for want of government and when militaristic elements rule Germany and Pagan cults revive." The people of Germany will have been impoverished, freedom banished and various "alarms" (war of nerves?) created. Nostradamus also foretells the impotency of a line of forts and the destruction of Paris. He refers also to the flight of a great German captain to England and the division of France, adding that part of it would be ruled over for a time by an old man (Petain?) who would later be deprived of power by the "Conqueror."

As regards England, it is noted that many "castles on the Thames" will be destroyed and that in the same year there will be great fear over the entire world with many terrible battles among many kingdoms. These events, according to one prophecy, were to occur when "King George, the son of a King George, ruled England." (The present king of England is a George, as was his father.) One of the Irish seers dates England's troubles from the time a Saxon king would renounce the throne. These woes, according to another oracle, were to come especially from the sky and be caused by "an eagle" with a "headless cross." (The only modern symbol which might fit here is the swastika.) Another ancient prophecy gives us a more or less definite date for the accomplishment of these events, for it says "when Our Lord shall lie in Our Lady's lap (that is when a feast of Our Lady—no doubt the Annunciation, March 25th—shall fall on Good Friday) then England will meet with a strange mishap. (According to the calendar in use at

the time of this prediction, one such year would have been 1940.)

According to the prophecies, it would seem that Italy would be taken over by Germany, who in turn would relinquish it to Russia. Germany would be able to take over Italy through some sort of a ruse engendered especially by a deceptive speech delivered apparently at Milan. In this connection the Pope would have to flee Rome, and would die a cruel death in exile about a year later. (Some prophets say 90 days-others 200 days.) Whether or not this exile is forced or voluntary (so that he would be in a position to better rule the Catholic world) is not clear from the prophets. The time of his departure from Rome will come when Italy is without an "emperor" and France without a "ruler."

A schism of short duration is destined to break out, no doubt, because of the Pope's departure from Rome. An anti-pope, of German origin, is to be set up, and finally Rome itself will be destroyed, but rather from the inside through pillage, than from without. Words attributed to the late Holy Father speak of Italy being laid waste but Rome spared. This, of course, would not indicate the absence of pillage.

About the time of the Pope's flight, France and Spain would unite in opposition to Germany and would be fairly successful. It would be then that Russia coming from the north, and Japan and Mohammedans from the east, would cause no small damage in Europe. Japan would furnish the sea power, Turkey the infantry, and Russia the air force. The planes are to be so numerous as to obscure the sky and their damage so great as to leave behind them a solid mass of flame. The initial success of France and Spain would be nullified for a moment, but they would continue to battle for the Christian cause and would be in the field when, by a patent miracle, God would defeat the combined armies of atheism.

We will know that the "Conqueror" has reached the zenith of his power when the "hooked cross" glistens on the top of Church spires. At about this same time revolution will break out in England as well as in France. However, France's will be of rather short duration, and with her aid, England's internal strife will be terminated. The English King would seem destined to be assassinated.

If a prophecy of Saint Columbkille applies to this same time it would seem that Japan is to send an enormous battle fleet against the English, and, among other places,

will encounter and defeat them in the Mediterranean. However, this will not be accomplished before the English have put up a gallant fight against vastly superior forces. After this defeat, England will cease as a major power in the world. The prophet gives the reason: "they did not observe justice and rectitude." Three warning signs of England's approaching doom are given: first, the burning of the tower of the great kings; secondly, the burning of the English dockyards; and thirdly, the burning of the Treasury. The first two have of course occurred in this war, but in times past they have also occurred. The Bank of England has not been destroyed. I might note here, however, that the prophet may refer to the destruction of capitalism, especially as known in England, rather than the building itself. London is to be utterly destroyed, so much so that the capitol will be transferred to York, and the country will be governed by three joint rulers, apparently appointed by the Great Monarch. Between the destruction and the resurrection, England is destined to be battered by tidal waves. As a result of these sufferings, England will once more become a good and even great country. It will return to the Church. Conversions, however, shall be one by one. There is to be no mass swing to the Church.

The Russians and other atheists after breaking German resistance, will conquer everything before them until they are vanquished by internal revolts and external rebellion. At the height of their success they will unite with other atheists who rule Europe, possibly most of the world, and for a short time, probably three months, terrorize the vanquished. The Bible will be banished and burned, the war will eventually turn into a religious war in its fourth year, during which period there will be a terrible persecution of Christians of both sexes and all ages. We will know that peace is near when Russia divides Europe, and when the true Pope and a black (anti?) pope<sup>1</sup> die in the same night.

Before peace will once more come upon Europe, two factions will arise in France, the smaller, or Christian, will eventually win out, but terrible times will exist during this short civil war. Toward the end of this period there will appear the "Great Monarch." After the miraculous defeat of the atheistic hordes he will rule all Europe and likely, indirectly, the rest of the world.

The last decisive battle between the Christian and Anti-Christian forces will be fought near Essen, Germany. The

<sup>1</sup>The Superior General of the Jesuits is sometimes referred to as the "Black Pope."

southern or Christian forces will win. Their leader, the future Great Monarch of Europe, will wear a white coat and a cross on the front of it. This decisive battle will take place on a feast of Our Lady. Shortly before, atheism will begin to be overthrown in its center, apparently Russia. Russia and Japan in the end will be severely punished for the shedding of so much innocent blood, so much so that never again will they be powers to reckon with in the world. A terrible earthquake in the east, likely in Japan itself, will be a sign that the ruin of the Oriental power is at hand.

When everything seems hopeless for the Christian forces God will work a "wonderful miracle," or as some prophets refer to it, "a great event" or "a terrible event," in favor of His own. During this phenomenon the truly holy will not be harmed, and terrible though it will be, yet we may take consolation in the fact that it will mark the end of God's chastisements. It would seem that the event mentioned vaguely by so many seers, is that specified by others as three days of darkness with the sun and the moon, as it were, turning to blood. The air will be poisoned, thus killing off most of the enemies of Christ's Church. During these three days the only light available to men will be blessed candles, and one candle will burn the entire period. However, even blessed candles will not light in the houses of the godless, yet once the candle is lit by one in the state of grace, it will not burn out until the three day's darkness is over. This "great event" will usher in peace to the troubled world. It would be a sort of reenactment of the three hours of darkness "over the whole earth" at Christ's crucifixion, and a preview of that which will mark the end of the reign of Anti-Christ.

Madeleine Porzat refers to the time of the three days darkness in a similar manner. She speaks of a concurrence of feasts which also happen to occur in the year 1943. Nostradamus in a like way indicates the same year.

The Abbot Werdin says that the Pope will cross the sea in a year when the Feast of St. George (April 23rd) falls on Good Friday, and St. Mark's feast (April 25th) falls on Easter Sunday, and the feast of St. Anthony (June 13th) falls on Pentecost, and the feast of St. John the Baptist (June 24th) falls on Corpus Christi—all these concurrences will take place in the year 1943 and not again till 2038.

According to the St. Odile prophecy, the "German Conqueror" will reach the "apogee" eighteen months after

the war in question begins (war with Russia?) . From that point on will be noted what is spoken of as the "diminution of his power" which will last for approximately nine months. Toward the end of this latter period there will be a revolt of the women of his own country at seeing so many of their men mercilessly slaughtered. During this same period the various conquered countries will clamor for peace but this will avail them nothing. Then will follow what is spoken of as a "period of invasion" which will last less than nine months. This would be three years of war. Others speak of an end in the 4th year. Russia seems destined to be the nemesis and invader of both Germany and the various other countries that Germany had previously occupied. At about this time Japan will begin to show her real power, especially at sea, Germany will be pillaged, the German conqueror defeated. Finally the Great Monarch and the Christian forces reuniting and with the help of God "through an unknown and frightful illness" will overthrow the Russians, Japanese, Turks, and all other atheistic elements. (This would imply some secret alliance between Russia, Japan, and Turkey.)

Devotion to the Precious Blood and Five Wounds will promote peace but the sense here seems to be that the peace will be extended either in time or more widely and effectively over the earth by reason of these devotions. Also, about this time devotion to the Holy Ghost will greatly increase (see frontispiece) .

After the war, famines, earthquakes, darkness, etc., there will be left in the world several women to every man. The Dominicans, Franciscans, and the various nursing nuns, seem to be the only religious orders left to carry on the work of God. Secular priests, of course, will always minister in Christ's Church.

It would seem that there is nothing we can do to avert these various catastrophes. The prophets advise us to prepare ourselves and endeavor to the best of our ability to appease God's anger as much as possible. The only prayers that will be readily heard by God are those for dying sinners. The most effective prayers that can be said are the five sorrowful mysteries of the Rosary.

To sum up and considering all these prophecies as referring to one and the same great war, I would say that a German conqueror will continue his successes over a period of about two years (against Russia) . Then, from internal dissension and external "pressure" he will start his

inevitable decline, culminating in his death and the loss of all his gains. His conqueror would be Russia, and possibly Turkey and Japan. England would be involved but doomed because of her past injustices. Among other disasters to befall her would be the loss of her fleet and with it her possessions, yet she would seem destined to continue a small but good, and likely influential nation. France would resurrect, but not as such; Poland would emerge free with St. Andrew Bobola as Patron. Russia, Japan and Turkey would be permanently weakened; all small nations of Europe freed, and Germany a smaller but peaceful and happy nation.

Regarding the United States, I have encountered only contemporary prophesies. One of these says that the United States west of the Rockies will be ruled for a short time by the Japanese who are to succeed because, due to sabotage or other reasons, American defenders will have, as it were, only "sticks and stones" to fight with. The rest

of the United States would change its form of government as the result of a revolution, which would last only about three months. These events would occur concurrently with similar events in Europe. The United States is of course included in the countries of the world, all of which would be due for punishment during the short rule of evil.

In conclusion it is worthy of note that the miracle which brings peace will destroy organized evil and very many

evil individuals, but by no means all. At a future date there will be a reorganization of the diabolical remnant and others who have fallen from grace, but this new organization is not a revival of any destroyed on the fields of Westphalia.

Whether events unfolding themselves in the present world war fit in with these pictures or not, it is a little premature to say.



*Heal our wounds, our strength renew,  
On our dryness pour Thy dew,  
Wash the stains of guilt away.  
Bend the stubborn heart and will,  
Melt the frozen, warm the chill,  
Guide the steps that else would stray.*

*On the faithful, who adore  
And confess Thee evermore,  
In Thy sevenfold gifts descend.  
Give them virtue's sure reward,  
Give them Thy salvation, Lord,  
Give them joys that never end.*

# CHAPTER VI

## THE GREAT MONARCH AND THE ANGELIC PASTOR

### Peace and Spread of Catholicism

After the various wars and other disasters noted in the last chapter a good and great "lion monarch" will give the whole world peace and plenty. During his reign, which some say will last for approximately eight to ten years, the Church will make gains throughout the world. Christian fervor among both the clergy and the laity will be consoling. Priests will be esteemed as nobles. This great ruler will be called "a lion" because there will be a "rampant lion" on his shield (that is, a lion standing on bent hind legs with one foreleg raised above the other) . He will have the sign of the cross on his breast and his flag will be emblazoned with a white lily.

The Great Monarch will be of French descent (a Bourbon). He will have been an archduke. Some moderns would identify him with Archduke Otto of Hapsburg. The full name of the Archduke includes all the various names by which the Great Monarch has been called in private prophecy (Franz, Joseph, Otto, Antoine, Karl, Maximilian, Heinrich, Sixtus, Xavier, Felix, Renuus, Ludwig, Gaetan, Pius, Ignace, Prince of Hapsburg-Lorraine) . Besides this, Otto is a Bourbon, a Catholic, and not a German<sup>1</sup> as seems to be required by the seers. Such coincidents, while interesting, need not be taken seriously. They have been noted in others who are now in eternity.

Some say the Great Monarch will come from the east, others say from the west. This apparent discrepancy may readily be explained, for some apparently refer to his origin, others to the place of his exile previous to his assumption of power. I might note here that England in some way or other is to be instrumental in the original success of the Great Monarch.

This Lion Monarch is to be a descendant of Pepin, Constantine, St. Louis, Frances I (of France) and Charlemagne. He will be greater than Alexander and more successful than Cyrus. He will be acknowledged as Emperor across the sea from Europe. He will begin his mission in the Iberian Peninsula, coming into power during the last year of the war (referred to in the preceding

<sup>1</sup>There are not wanting critics who claim that the prophecies which insist that the great monarch will be French and not German have been tampered with by Frenchmen.

chapter). He will appear in the fourth year of the war. He, together with the Great Pope or Angelic Pastor, shall appear after socialism and a brief but terrible persecution of priests, but both of their reigns will cease before the reign of Anti-Christ.

The selection of the true Pope, according to the prophets, will be: a) almost miraculous; b) soon after the terrible war and revolutions; c) the selectors will assemble under many difficulties; d) some prophets foretell the intervention of Saints Peter and Paul and angels (hence his name?) ; e) some say he will have temporal power over Rome itself; ,f) some say he will be a French pope; g) the Pope of unity he will eradicate schisms and heresies.

During the reign of the Great Monarch and the Angelic Pastor the Catholic Church will spread throughout the world, conversions will be innumerable, even many Jews will become Christians. The Blessed Virgin will be the chief one in gaining victory over all heresy and schism because of her power over the demons in the last ages of the world will be especially great. This will be recognized by her enthronement as "Mistress and Queen of Men's Hearts." The Great Pope will reign for approximately four years and will be followed by three other popes rich in wisdom and virtue, who will continue his great work. The successor to the Pastor Angelicus, according to one prophet, will be a Sabinian. The prophets mentioned that although the war pope would suffer much, beginning with his successor, the Popes hereafter will not be oppressed. Even the Pope chosen to rule at the beginning of the reign of Anti-Christ will not suffer, since he would die a sudden death by assassination before his coronation.

The Great Pope, according to some, will be dressed in red. Whether the prophets refer to him as a cardinal before his election, or that he will change the papal garb from white to red, is not clear. (Note: this may symbolize his great devotion to the Holy Ghost.) In the former case it might be worthy to note that it has been only in comparatively recent years that the Pope is chosen from the ranks of cardinals, and the prophecy was written long before this rule was put into effect. This Angelic Pastor is called by the Monk of Padua, "Gregory XVII." The present Holy

Father, although crowned on the feast of St. Gregory, chose the name Pius. Yet if there be no gaps in St. Malachy's list, Pius XII is the Angelic Pastor. The Paduan commentary on St. Malachy makes the pope chosen at the beginning of the reign of Anti-Christ Pius XII. However, the seers seem to destine him for assassination immediately after his selection so that he is not to rule the Church. This need not discredit the monk for other prophecies indicate that the Pastor Angelicus is rather a succession of three, four, or even five pontiffs, one to die in exile just before the era of peace, another (who could be Gregory XVII) who would replace an Anti-Pope. Two glorious successors and then the fifth would be the man chosen pope at the advent of Anti-Christ but destined to

die before occupying his throne.

Toward the end of the reign of the Great Monarch, because of wonderful inventions, etc., Christians will be living in peace and plenty. They will have very little work to do and therefore have much free time. This freedom and living in luxury, unfortunately, will be to their detriment. They will become lax in religious matters, many even refusing to receive the Sacrament of Confirmation, saying "it is unnecessary." At this time the precursor of Anti-Christ will gather these lax Christians to his cause (most of those having received Confirmation will not apostatize). Then will follow the terrible reign of Anti-Christ.

*Blessed Spirit, one with God above,  
Thou Source of life and holy love.  
O cheer us with Thy sacred beams,  
Refresh us with Thy plenteous streams.*

*O may our lips confess Thy Name.  
Our holy lives Thy praise proclaim;  
With love divine our hearts inspire,  
And fill us with Thy holy fire.*

# PART II

## TOPICAL INDEX TO THE PROPHECIES

### CONTENTS

#### **I. The Evils Which Bring God's Vengeance:**

- A. The Time to expect them.**
- B. Their Universality.**
- C. Their Causes.**
- D. The specific evils in the individual, the family, and society generally.**

#### **II. Punishments Resulting Without a Special Divine Intervention:**

- A. Some General Principles.**
- B. Time for special chastisements.**
- C. Sufferings of a serious and prolonged, but minor nature.**
- D. A very particular War.**

#### **III. Punishments Resulting from Special Divine Intervention:**

- A. The Terrifying Events.**
- B. The Consoling Events.**

#### **IV. Great Personages of These Latter Days:**

- A. The Great Monarch.**
- B. The Angelic Pastor.**

#### **V. The Age of the Church's Triumph:**

- A. Church and State.**
- B. Things Spiritual.**

#### **VI. The Sixth Epoch of Time.**

#### **VII. The Jews and These Latter Times.**

#### **VIII. Notions Specifically Referring to This Generation**

*Holy Ghost, with light divine,  
Shine upon this heart of mine;  
Chase the shades of night away,  
Turn the blackness into day.*

*Let me see my Saviour's face,  
Let me all His beauties trace;  
Show these glorious truths to me  
Which are only known to Thee.*

## I. EVILS WHICH CAUSE TROUBLE AND GOD'S VENGEANCE

**A. Time:** In the latter or last days (8d, 27,<sup>1</sup> 28, 31, 33, 38, 41, 47, 69, 84, 105, 111, 160d, 200); after the birth of Anti-Christ (36, 84, 106c, 119, 132, 188) ; near the second coming of Christ (20, 23, 32); or more precisely after 1931 (147b); and when the Jews begin to return to God or to Palestine (53b).

**B. Extent:** Evil will so abound and be so widespread that it will appear insuppressible and provocative of God's wrath. It will be a case of evil increasing from age to age so that at this time the good will be very few. Christians, of course, offend like the rest (8d, 19c, 27a, b, 38, 48b, 58, 69, 70, 106c, 111, 114, 118, 132, 147, 153, 188).

**C. Causes:** False prophets,<sup>2</sup> false Christs, scandalizers and seducers abound and have many followers; hence false doctrines and fruitless discussions are numberless (5, 8d, 9b, f, h, 11, 16, 19d, 20, 26, 29, 30, 33, 53b, 58, 61, 111). These evil leaders seek to turn men from God with their shallow arguments (9c, 25, 141) ; nor is this difficult for men really prefer error, heresy and lies (4b, 27, 70, 89, 106c). Evil spirits play their part (24, 27, 61, 130, 135, 180, 185, 188b), and so does bad literature (44b, 70) and unholy enterprises (63). There is no human protection for wise men are few and silent since they would not be heeded (15, 41c, 70).

**D. Specific Vices: a) RATHER IN THE INDIVIDUAL:** Men will be uncharitable, unkind, inhospitable, hard-hearted and stingy (33, 70, 149) ; proud, selfish, conceited, arrogant, ungrateful, and treacherous (27, 31, 33, 38, 47d, 58, 60d, 69) ; envious, avaricious, covetous, thieving, and parasitical (5, 9, 15, 27, 31, 38, 60d, 70) ; liars, slanderers, perjurers, deceivers, and betrayers (5, 8d, f, 9, 19e, 24, 38, 44b, 48b, 69, 70) ; lazy, intemperate, degenerate, drunken (31, 36, 58, 60d, 149) ; murderers, pleasure mad materialists, bribers (5, 15, 38, 58, 63, 89). Most people will possess something stolen (38).

**b) AS AFFECTING THE FAMILY:** People will be shamelessly immoral. even the women. Concubinage will flourish publicly and marriage be defiled (5, 19b, 38, 69, 70). Natural affections shall grow cold with innumerable

<sup>1</sup>When no letter follows the number appearing in this index, the letter "a" is meant if more than one oracle bears the number.

<sup>2</sup>Even if men work miracles or correctly forecast the future, they are false prophets if they seek to turn man from God, so test them (2b, 19d, 29)

family quarrels, betrayals, and even murders (19, 20d, 33, 41e, 53, 69, 70, 89). Apart from the notes on murders already given, abortion and birth control may be intended in (5, 69a).

**c) IN MATTERS RELIGIOUS:** People will be impious, blasphemous, murmurers against God, Godless, and many even Anti-God (8d, 20, 27, 31, 36, 37, 38, 44, 47, 60d, 70, 89, 119, 147b, 188). Christians will be hypocrites, disrespectful to relics, adverse to feast days and Sunday observance (4c, 27, 60d, 70, 183). Children will be scandalized and grow up ignorant of religion (15b, 47, 58, 147, 173). Many Catholics will doubt some of the Church's teachings (84, 105). People will mock and ridicule honesty, humility, and other virtues (28, 70). The pious will be few, churches empty, neglected and even defiled. Priests and religion will not be respected The defection from the church will be general (37, 60d, 73, 105, 132, 147, 149). Priests and religious will quarrel among themselves, lack zeal and be worldly, un-just, covetous, immoral.<sup>1</sup> They will err from their reading and some will be tyrannical (9, 37, 38, 60d, 69, 70, 93b, 132, 147).

### **d) IN MATTERS GOVERNMENTAL AND SOCIAL GENERALLY:**

**1. Governments will be evil and Godless;** they will scheme against other governments and oppress their own subjects (38, 47e, 84c, 171, 189). Rulers, becoming all powerful, commit murders, outrage justice themselves, and permit underlings to do like-wise. They persecute, rob, and seek to overthrow the Church. They blaspheme, lie, have no respect for treaties, and provoke their subjects to hate and war against their neighbors (8e, 15, 41c, d, 70, 78, 89, 95, 104, 106c, 147b, 159, 200).<sup>2</sup>

**2. Society is confused.** There will be no standard to judge morals by, so laws are evil, changed by whim, and despised, as is also order and discipline. People will do and say what they please<sup>3</sup> (5, 8c, 27, 28, 31, 38, 41c, 58, 60d, 63, 68, 70, 78, 106c, 110, 112, 189) .

<sup>1</sup>It may be that this wide-spread evil among priests and religious describes conditions immediately before Anti-Christ, that is after the great monarch (q. v.)

<sup>2</sup>Anti-God symbols (4c) ; Secret Societies (147, 153)

<sup>3</sup>This refers, also, to the attempts of religious sects to legislate.

The common people will envy their betters; kings, nobles, and the wealthy will be overthrown; there will be many poor, much revolt and class hatred. Rulers will be befuddled (8b, 41, 47e, 60b, 70, 74, 89, 98, 116, 129, 147,

149, 159). Lies make the just mourn and strengthen the wicked, while the violent possess all things and the good smart under the lash (5, 8f, 11b, 19a, c, 20e, 21, 27b, 32, 38, 44, 63, 70, 147b). And worst of all, the people will call these evils and ignorances, peace (5, 8d, 9, 16, 23).

## II PUNISHMENTS WHICH MAN INFLICTS ON HIMSELF,

i.e., which result without special divine intervention-

**A. *Some General Principles:*** False prophets preach peace but wage war if they don't get their way (16). Darkness and destruction is the lot of sinners. While God proves the good with trials, he judges therewith the wicked. Falsehood and its consequences fall and ill-gotten goods vanish under God's lash (5, 9h, 15, 16, 25, 45, 59b, 61, 70). When a land, but especially when the nations generally rise up against God, he visits them in his anger with famine, war, and pestilence on man and beast (4, 11 c, 57, 150).

**B. *Time for special chastisement:*** Same as above in **IA**, with the additional note that it will be in the 3rd age and before the comet (3, 4, 9h, 11c, 14a, c, 20c, 38, 41, 45, 47c, d, 57, 59, 60, 65, 70, 84b, c, 95, 116, 159).

**C. *Sufferings to occur over some period of time and in various places:*** There will be affliction, terror, tumult, confusion, commotion, rumor, and carnage. Man will cause wars, revolutions, persecutions, and upsets in rulers and governments; and God will add earthquake, flood, drought, fire, bad seasons and consequent famine, pestilence and disease (3, 5, 19, 20, 32, 34, 38, 41, 45, 47, 57, 59, 60, 63, 65, 69, 70, 72, 81, 84, 92, 95, 98, 111, 116, 122, 129, 138, 153, 155, 157, 168). There will be discord even in the Church (173).

### **D. *A very particular war or series of wars:***

**a. *Time:*** Same as above in **II B**, with these changes and additions: After the Comet, (some time after 1800, in the 20th century) , specifically, after 1938 (84c, 98, 112, 147, 155) ; after the invention of moving pictures, submarine, airplane, telegraph, etc. (85, 122b, 126) ; after an English King resigns and George son of George rules, more than 700 years after England takes Ireland, and when various English buildings are destroyed and British power wanes (69b, 82, 85b, 70d, 137).

**b. *Preliminaries to the conflict:*** One war ends in a false peace (75, 86, 115, 149). The Kaiser leaves Germany;

troubled peace follows; a low born leader replaces royalty, makes Germany strong, persecutes Jews and Christians and starts the war (76, 88). The conflict in Europe starts in Poland (81b, 123a, b) but has come out of Asia (200, 201). When France has been ravaged by one five year's war (1914-1918) she still has two blood purges to endure (102, 122c, 163, 167, 173).

**c. *General notions and extent:*** This conflict is described as Universal or nearly so; as a combination of war, revolution and persecution; as an era of no peace on earth, no trust or security with nation against nation, person against person; confusion, misery, terrible taxes, a despoiled earth is seen on all sides and war is kindled on war (3, 8, 11, 14, 20, 23, 33, 38, 41, 47, 49, 57, 59, 60, 65, 88, 95, 98, 101, 122, 126, 137, 149, 150, 153, 159, 168c).

**d. *Duration:*** Five years (32b, 86, 102, 168, a, e) .

### **e. *Some particular features:***

**1.** The South and West is against the North and East. Jews are involved and loose. The North is victor, but on dividing the South it is decisively defeated. The last battle continues three days; two armies of the North-East are wiped out, the third flies to the far east (12b, 89, 98, 122c, 133, 139, 162, 173, 174). Yellow and Red warriors are against Europe (184).

**2.** Of three evil rulers who oppress the earth, one dies in bed, a second is killed by the third, and the third falls by the sword. They who raise the armies perish with them. A whole eastern nation fights for an evil man. Ten kings are involved. These nations have mighty fleets (9i, 41c, 47f, 60b, 92, 126, 155).

**3.** The battlefield is half the earth. Death from the sky, poison gas, cities evacuated, cities and even whole provinces and nations destroyed; a northern nation has great air power; great battles on sea and in the air; blockades, injured food resources, etc. All are featured in

this conflict. The Godless governments of Europe tear each other and the continent to pieces (59, 65, 85a, b, 86c, 88b, 92, 98, 116, 157, 171, 176).

4. In 70d is what appears to be a description of a modern fleet and combined sea and air bombardment. This is a war where the weak must be strong (14c). Emblems and atmosphere are described thus: a headless, disgraced or hooked cross (85b, 175, 184) ; a hammer, red destroyers of the wealthy, yellow warriors (146, 168, 175, 184). It is a war of falsehood and enforced caution of speech (60b, 86, 102).

**f. Various nations involved:**

1. The German leader is at first victorious, then for half as long, while twenty nations clash, he holds his own, but in far less time, having been weakened in the East, his country is invaded, completely defeated, and the ruler crushed. Soldiers of seven nations are in the last battle which is in Westphalia. Russia seems to fall at the same time. It will take seven generations for Russia and Prussia to recoup the losses (65, 71, 76, 89b, 104, 108, 125, 140, 155, 162, 167, 175).

2. England in alliance with France is helped by a nation and fleet from the west but defeated at sea by a fleet from the east (this may refer to a later date). London is destroyed. France will aid when revolt breaks in England. Many lords and the king perish. The English casualties will be nearly as great as the Prussian. In Europe England pays the piper."<sup>1</sup> (69b, 70d, 84c, 85, 86c, 87, 98, 122, 128, 129, 137, 155, 201).

3. France falls as a result of her alliance with England. She will have a triple blood purge (two wars and a revolt?) (87, 98, 122, 137, 173). Her leader will be destroyed (98). Paris, Marseilles, and many other cities will be destroyed, but the good will escape death in Paris. There will be civil war in which the communists control three-fourths of France. The result, however, is quelled, and France aids England suppress a similar uprising there (65, 67b, 100, 102, 112, 137, 144, 156b, 163, 167, 173, 176, 201). Paris will be oppressed for a little more than three years (158) (This may refer to time of Anti-Christ) . It is France that will have started all this anti-religion trouble (141).

4. Italy suffers terribly, chiefly during the persecution noted below. Many cities are ruined in northern Italy, but

<sup>1</sup>Tidal waves real or typical are spoken of as one of England's punishments.

also Naples and Palermo. Her islands are evacuated. Lombardy is laid waste. Armies of the North, West, and East fight there. Rome is probably pillaged but not destroyed (65, 93b, 111, 123i, 139, 168e, 173, 184).

5. Russia outrages and murders nobles, wealthy, and the clergy (157, 188). She seems to be on the side of Prussia in the Battle of Westphalia with France, Spain, Poland, Italy, and apparently Austria on the opposite side (104b, 106, 163, 167, 175). She causes many exiles and fugitives (149).

6. Greece will not be secure till she returns to Christian Unity (106b). Spain survives civil war and trouble from the Godless (85, 87, 147, 184). Vienna is destroyed (157).

**g. The Persecution:**<sup>1</sup>

1. In the fourth year of the war it becomes a religious conflict, with men and women fighting for the faith. The church will lack a protector for 25 months but the actual persecution lasts 400 days (85b, 100, 101, 123h, 140, 173) (This may refer to time of Anti-Christ) . The persecution will be terrible and directed chiefly against priests and religious. Many priests die not only for the faith but also for the country (19, 59b, 72, 84, 97, 111, 129, 134, 147a, b, 157b, 161, 164, 169b, 170).

2. The persecution will be widespread. In France it is connected with civil war. In Italy it is especially severe and Russia and Prussia are responsible. The martyrs there are numerous (65, 111, 159, 168e), but the terror will spread even to where it is thought impossible (141). While a few Catholics, even some bishops, fall away, the clergy on the whole stand firm. Church and other Catholic property will be confiscated (67b, 139, 141, 153, 159).

3. Because of three powers the pope will have to leave Rome. He will depart with four Cardinals, suffer much, and die in exile (65, 88, 100, 101, 104, 124, 139, 142, 143, 147, 153, 156c, 164). He will leave Rome 200 days after the persecution starts (173b) . Confusion and schism result (100, 124, 153), with German, Italian, and Greek Anti-popes (65, 72, 139).

4. This persecution rather becomes acute and starts in the fourth year of the war. It started long before in France and is stepped up in 1931 (141, 147b). The pest foretold for Russia, Italy, Spain, Prussia, and Westphalia may mean a persecution (172 and cf. 173a for communism).

<sup>1</sup>This is often equivalent to civil war (147b, 157, 159, 165, 170).

**h. Evils concomitant with the War:** drought, floods, tidal

waves, famine, and plague with terrible mortality (41a, e, 59, 76, 84c, 128, 138, 167, 168e).

### III. PUNISHMENTS ADDED BY GOD OR THE DIVINE INTERVENTION TO END THE WAR AND EVIL.

#### **A. The Terrifying Event:**

**a. Time:** When War and confusion reign supreme, when disorder and confusion is at its height in France, when Rome is about to fall to the enemies of religion; after famine, pestilence, war, fraud, and communism have left Italy in anarchy; when the humiliation of Sion (the Church and/or the Jews) is complete; when in France, at least, public prayer ceases and the churches close for 24 hours; when the white and the black (true and false?) pope die the same night (47c, g, 93, 144, 158, 165, 168e, 173). Further, it will be at the end of a terrible war, after one awful night in the midst of persecution in France, in the age which precedes the universal preaching of the Gospel, at the beginning of the third period of time and more precisely in or near a year when Easter falls on April 25th (19a, 106b, 113, 123h, 144, 168b, d).

**b. Surprise:** The Day the Lord comes as a thief in the night, when they (the forces of evil) say peace and security, then suddenly comes destruction upon them (23, 161, 174) ; when all appears lost for the Church, just then all is saved (118, 137, 138, 141, 144, 147b, 151, 152, 163, 168c, 169b, 173, 183) .

**c. Purpose:** God will cleanse the world and return it to its ancient state (34, 44a, 149, 164, 166, 191). It will be a case of Him adding to the destruction of man (65, 156). It is His Judgment on the Nations (8a, c, 24, 41b, 122), the time for the mountain of the Kingdom of God to destroy all kingdoms and establish itself (12a). All that precedes has not made man repent (32c).

**d. General description of the event:** a great, terrible, and most certainly and evidently miraculous happening (70b, 76, 129, 137, 144, 150, 152, 153, 158, 160, 168b, d, 169b, 171, 173, 194). Nothing like it before or after (14a, 161). It will be worldwide but probably more severe in Europe (84b, 130, 137, 146, 150, 161, 174). A sorry event for those not truly holy (70b, 153). Fear, the snare, and the pit consume man (8c, 41f).

#### **e. More specific descriptions:**

**1.** A whirlwind of God's fierce anger scatters and destroys

high and low (8a, c, 9d, 14, 24, 41b, 122); hurricanes (70a, 150, 173) ; winds, strong winds or storms (12a, 32, 63b, 65, 84c, 150, 155, 194).

**2.** A darkness (14a, c, 32, 45, 60b, 63b, 72b, 86b, 98, 162, 173b, 176) as the sign of Jonas (19b) will last three days and three nights (154, 156, 159, 162, 165, 170, 174). The heavens will be moved with frightful clouds, lightning and thunder. There will be earthquakes and tidal waves. (14a,c, 63b, 150, 174). A yellow fog, dust, flame, and smoke from the north (14c, 41c, 63c, 84c, 92, 184). Pest in the air, an unknown and frightful illness (76, 156). Demons infest the air and are visible (65, 88b, 150, 153, 156, 161, 165, 174, 177).

**3.** A numberless, strong, irresistible force described as an army of beings before whom all is a garden, behind whom all is desert (14a, 32c, 41e). Also God comes to judge the wicked with thou-sands of his saints (31).

#### **f. Results of this event coupled with those of the war, persecution, and upheavals in nature:**

**1.** Apparently a three months' period is involved in a special way (152, 161). A famine or plague seems to follow the darkness (174, 182) and likewise exploits of the Great Monarch and his forces (q. v.).

**2.** Whereas the vengeance of God is direct-ed against the army of evil (92), which completely defeated, flies to the Far East (162, 174) ; many men will lose their lives. In other words, the enemies of religion chiefly, but not exclusively, shall perish, yet even some of those enemies will be spared, become converted and be other St. Pauls (144, 147b, 150, 152, 154, 156, 174). But even so, the faithful shall have special protection, especially during the darkness (45a, 150, cf. g below).

**3.** The casualties shall be appalling: There will be few men left (8c, 161, 173b). Seven or even twelve women to every man (84c, 92), this apparently because there are more faithful women than men (168, 185) : innumerable deaths (41c, 60b, 65, 85b, 98, 104b, 112) ; the earth covered with the slain (9d, 32d, 154, 174; individuals, whole families, property, cities destroyed (150). One third,

one half, three-fourths of mankind destroyed (32c, 157, 170, 174) . Afterwards Europe will be too large for its people (184).

**g. *Spiritual helps for the good during the evil times:*** Stay where God has put you, hope in Him, pray and do penance (65, 88b, 137, 183). Communions of reparation, prayers for dying sinners offered through Our Lady to the Sacred Heart (147). For Spain, prayers to our Lady of the Pilar should be said (147). Our Lady has obtained a mitigation of the evils (168c) and she will protect the church (173b). Saints Peter and Paul will protect the faithful during the darkness; only blessed wax candles will then give light, one burns the three days; stay where you are, say the rosary, and don't look out or go out of the house through curiosity (147, 150, 156, 165, 174, 184). Devotion to the Precious Blood and Five Wounds is also recommended (178, 186).

**B. *The Consoling Events or Event: Fire cleanses from below, love from above*** (168b):

1. Immediately after the Darkness there will be a great light as the sun shining with a special brilliance (86b, 150, 173). This may be on a Feast of Our Lady (163).

2. The demons will be collected and bound through the agency of Saints Peter and Paul, and St. Peter may designate the person to be chosen as the new pope (150, 156).

3. It would seem that now begins the third period of time. Our Lady under the titles of Immaculate Conception, Queen of Men's Hearts, Queen of Heaven and Earth, but especially Queen of the Angels would have been responsible for saving France and Spain, and mitigating generally, God's Anger. She had been given especial power over hell for the latter times. She may appear in the heavens with angels and saints (130, 135, 158a, b, 168, 169, 173, 184, 185, 189, 193, 197b, 198) (cf. concerning the coming of the Son of Man 14a, 20b, 130).

4. The Kingship of Christ and the Sacred Heart are devotions which will flourish towards the end (102b, 128b, 147, 177).

5. In the times before Christ God the Father, as it were, ruled. In the second period God the Son. In the third period it shall be God the Holy Ghost, the Spirit of Love (114, 141, 168b, 177) . This reign of the Holy Ghost begins with the defeat of Germany (104c, 117) .

#### IV. GREAT PERSONAGES OF THE LATTER DAYS:

These are the Great Pope and the Great Ruler. The two appear frequently in prophetic writings. Their respective qualities and accomplishments are not always kept distinct, and many results which in one place are attributed directly to heaven, in others are attributed to either of these figures or both. This does not necessitate contradictions, for both work together and each is but a divine agent.

**A. *The Great Monarch:***

**a. *referred to as:*** The Orient or from the East (17b, 60c, 63, 78, 85b) ; from the West (83); from the North (68, 72b, 95, 106, 131) ; a prince, knight, Emperor, King (60c, 67, 68, 72b, 83, 86, 90, 97, 100, 117, 129) ; a Lion or an Eagle (63, 72, 81, 85, 93, 112, 124, 168) ; a Bourbon, Lily or white flower (64, 87, 94) ; a star (96) ; a duke (138) ; of Spanish origin (106) ; great Celt but not Irish (123m. 201) ; a scion of Charlemagne, Pepin, Clovis, etc., of the French Kings (67, 90, 91, 97, 102, 112, 114, 121, 129, 137, 139, 145) ; a great warrior (68, 70c) ; an exile or captive in his youth (67, 100, 102; his features noted (71,

127) ; he will be a Catholic (88, 157) ; not a German (129, 157b).

**b. *Time:*** near the end of time (77, 87, 91). In the third incursion of time (113, 168b), during (155), and after a terrible war (96), as a result of which the world in general, but especially France, and in France the provinces of the North and East are in terrible misery (67) , and also as a result of which Germany is decisively defeated (or wholly converted) (104c, 117, 167). He will come into power at the moment that the Anti-Christian forces are on the point of Victory (40) , and will succeed as ruler of Germany an elected ruler of humble birth (140). All this will be after 1840 (121), and item 123m could mean that he would begin his rule in 1944 and reach the zenith of his power in 1951.

**c. *First achievements:*** The great monarch is helped into France by England (94, 175), probably despite the unwillingness of America (175). The French are not expecting him (72b). He comes from north to west (106). There will be with him two aids (78, 87). He will turn out

to be a great conqueror (92) and reformer (as noted below) but this because he has the very special aid of God (102, 106, 112, 117, 131, 141). It is he who puts down the revolt in France (168). He is in charge of the army of the south in the Battle of Westphalia (89) where he defeats the Prussians and Russians (76). He defeats the nation that for three years ravages in the north and the Emperor of the north who is the mystic Anti-Christ (76, 81b, 139). Spain and Poland aid him in some special way (86c, 96, 104c, 106). It seems to be after this phase of the war that women must do the farm work for one year (89b, 122a).

**d. His Army:** Whether this army is organized before or after Westphalia is not clear. It is composed of soldiers of various nations (64, 72b, 139). It is called "The Army of the Church" (114, 139) or "of the Holy Ghost" because in that period of time the Holy Ghost dominates all things (114, 141) , "of the Cross bearers" because in that sign it conquers (106, 114, 189c).

It is rather a religious congregation whose members are the earth's greatest soldiers, scientists, and saints. They are divided into three orders: military knights, contemplative monks, and active religious. The angels fight on its side; it upholds discipline both temporal and spiritual universally after it has cleansed the world of evil. It lasts till the end of time. Every ruler is a member of this militia (114) .

**e. His achievements, apparently after Westphalia:** He is made king of France (67, 72, 79, 84d, 87, 96, 97, 100, 112, 125, 144, 159, 162, 168) by the Pope (156) but eventually dominates Europe as its Emperor (90, 91, 145). Various countries, e. g. England (64, 72b, 73b, 85b, 96, 122a), Germany (76, 88, 106, 167, 157), Poland (86c, 104c) , Italy (64, 83, 96), Greece (64), Ireland (68, 71), etc. He rules apparently through allied monarchs and after either conquering or relieving them of revolt. It would seem that he unites Germany, Spain, and France first, and only after much blood, the rest. His dominion eventually extends to the bounds of the Ancient Roman Empire (40, 66, 79, 129, 139). But apart from this he dominates the world (67, 100), and reforms it (111), that is, he restores order to Church, state, and family (133), and aids workmen (144). All other world forces he either destroys or enters into agreement with (63a, 64, 71, 78). In this process it is likely that Russia, China (168) , several European governments, (131) , Japan (100) , other Eastern leaders (64, 72b, 122c, 144), the Arabs (78, 86), and for a certainty the Turkish Empire and other Mohammedan countries shall feel the force of his arms to bring them into

line (64, 104c, 106, 114, 122c, 131, 132, 138, 167). At any rate he relieves every land (63, 111, 112, 139) , destroys evil laws (63c, 94, 102, 144), destroys all tyrants (111, 114), makes it possible for all exiles, fugitives and captives to return home (140, 158b, 160), and ends war (63c, 94, 97, 101, 104d). It is no wonder then that the people gladly accept his rule (78, 160). His reform is apparently a gradual process (64, 134).

**f. His reign:** Under him Peace reigns in all the earth (40, 84d, 85b, 86b, 87, 89b, 100, 102, 104c, 106, 117, 125, 131, 141, 163, 165). Justice likewise (86b, 129), happiness (77, 140), and abundance (60c, 85b, 86b, 97, 104c, 106, 117, 151, 163). Iron is used only for tools (84a). New cities are founded (106). No taxes for twelve years! (78).

**g. Religion under the Great Monarch:** His place in the divine scheme is to crush the enemies of Christ (40, 114, 132, 140), and to promote, and in cooperation with the Pope, achieve not only Christian Unity but also the conversion of all Mohammedans (106, 132) or Pagans, as well as many, if not all, Jews (64, 106). His good example is his chief weapon (151). Since this accomplishment results from the miraculous events and the Great Pope, as well as the Great Monarch, more details are given below. Suffice it to remark here that he restores the true Pope and church property (72, 138) and changes many kingdoms to strengthen the faith (129).

**h. The length of his reign is quite uncertain but at some time during it, probably after his defeat of the Turks and Arabs, he establishes the Kingdom of Jerusalem** (72b, 91, 97, 106, 125). He abdicates his throne in Jerusalem (64, 77, 79, 83, 85b, 96) . Thus ends the Roman Empire and apparently the kingdoms of France and of England (77, 79) . At any rate He is said to be the last and greatest French King and Roman Emperor and the last King of England, but on the other hand it is said that France will exist till the end of time (66) and that there will be men of the stock of the Great Monarch also till the end of time (113).

**B. The Great Pope (or Popes):** This divine agent is usually referred to as the Angelic Pastor (e. g., 82, 113b, 136). He will be born before the end of the 19th century (112). He is said to come from the North ( 113b ) to be French (125) , Galician (168c) , or a Sabine (124) . Some think he will be a Franciscan (131, 142) . All agree that he will be a holy man (81, 99, 104, 109, 129). The Paduan Prophecy calls him Gregory (136). He is to be protected

by the angels and to be a Prophet, a miracle worker (83, 97).

He will come after Pius XI (136) when the world is war-torn and the Church persecuted (81b, 83, 96, 97, 112, 123, 125), also after the wicked have been or while they are being chastised (83, 97, 112), at the same time as the Great Monarch (101, etc.).

It seems that here there is the question of a succession of popes who should rather be called the Angelic Pastors (97). The number would probably be five (95) who would

all together rule 17 years (123q). In another light, however, the number might be considered only four (81). Looked at this way the pope who ruled when the Great Monarch appeared would form one with his predecessor, i.e., his times, policies, and even name might be identical, so that it could be said the pope died and lived again (173c, 190). This pope would be the one who dies in exile, during the persecution. His successor (being the first of a series of four great men) would be chosen by divine intervention and probably by a method laid down by the exile (100, 139, 150, 173). This succession would last till the time of Anti-Christ (129).

## V. THE AGE OF THE CHURCH'S TRIUMPH.

**A. Church and State:** When the Great Monarch has achieved total victory there shall be on earth only One Emperor and twelve monarchs. The Emperor shall be supreme in things temporal, the pope in things spiritual (67, 81, 97, 104d, 114, 129).

### **B. Things spiritual:**

1. When God has ended the confusion a new world begins similar to its first state (34, 54, 65), a world dominated by the Kingdom of God (12, 28). Satan is bound many years (54, 129, 141).

2. The Church is reorganized (91, 93b, 97, 99, 113, 114, 150), Apostolic discipline is restored (113), and religious orders are reestablished and flourish, as do vocations, chiefly among the workers and poor (113, 150, 167, 173b), penance and good works abound (67, 140, 151). At first the state helps finance worship but apparently the Pope puts the church on a freewill offering basis, for the most part (97, 139).

3. It then falls to the lot of the Holy See and the Church to rebuild society (64, 104, 112, 160). Accordingly the Pope will lead the bishops in a crusade of instruction (144, 173). Some speak of twelve apostles of the new age and other marvelous things connected with a campaign of this nature (139, 156, 168b, 172, 184). It will be realized that failure to preach God's word previously had resulted in the punishments (173). Thus the Gospel will be preached in all lands (97). This is the age of the triumph of the Church, happy those who live to see it. The people will be like the primitive Christians and unbelievers seeing the Church's glory will flock into her (100, 107, 137, 144, 145, 149, 150, 161, 163, 164, 172). Heresy will disappear at least in

so far as it is organized, also schism; certainly they will lose government support. In some instances whole nations will become Catholic. (67, 83, 84d, 102, 104c, 114, 117, 129, 130, 138, 156, 166, 169). Many heathen also will be converted (84d). (It would seem, however, that many, but not all Jews - q. v. - would join the church).

4. Concerning specific nations then are the following items: Arabs or Asiatics or both make an attempt against Europe. Poland is in the fray. They fail and one army is driven into the far east while the other (Mohammedan) retires into North Africa. The Moslems become Christian, also the Chinese (Tartars) and other heathens (89, 99, 123d, e, 129, 130, 135, 156, 157, 184). The Greeks and the Russians return to the Church (99, 156). England loses her Eastern colonies and ceases to be a great power but she returns to the Church which again flourishes there. Ireland is in some way instrumental in this (70disarmed80, 82b, 84c, 122, 128, 129, 156, 163). After Germany is defeated, disarmed, and dismembered, she returns to Christian unity and monarchy (103, 104b, 129). A four-nation Slav Federation with the Capitol at Warsaw and with St. Andrew Bobola as patron plays an important role against Asiatics and Moslems, and in the new Christian world (148, 157, 173c, 175, 182). Belgium, Spain, France (despite her sins), and other Catholic nations, laid waste in war and persecution, regain their sovereignty and something more (66, 69b, 74, 76, 147a, 173c), but nations which have irreparably lost the true faith disappear (147c).

So, as the reign of the Great Monarch progresses Christian Unity is achieved, apparently even to the point where it can be said that there is but one Flock and one Shepherd (8, 16b, 17b, 40c, 60b, c, 67, 72b, 81, 87, 90, 92, 93b, 97,

99, 100, 101, 104d, 109, 114, 125, 138, 139, 146, 168, 169).

## VI. THE SIXTH EPOCH OF TIME.

After this period in which all nations submit to the Church, especially after the Turks submit (87, 156), the sixth epoch draws to a close (129). Christians will not appreciate the graces of the sixth epoch of time. Fervor

grows cold; darkness, crime, and revolt gradually increase till evil is worse than before (40, 67, 78). God releases Lucifer and Hell (40). The False Prophet, precursor of Anti-Christ, appears. The people will have been especially lax concerning Confirmation (sacrament of the Holy Ghost who dominates the sixth period of time) and it will be especially the unconfirmed who fall into the snares of the False Prophet (111). Then comes the Anti-Christ (29, 38, 67, 79, 101, 111, 129).

## VII. JEWS AND THE LATTER TIMES.

**A. Causes:** By reason of God's promises to the fathers (1, 2, 22, 41g, 48, 56), and for a purpose worthy of God Himself (9g, 39, 183), the Jews shall not be entirely cast off or destroyed (1, 2, 22, 39).

### B. Time:

**a.** Jerusalem shall be dntrodden (20f); and the Jews shall live under alien God-willed rule (9e, 1 la, 49, 50), without King or priesthood, many days, indeed (13), so long that they will have forgotten their lands, tribes, and tongue (56).

**b.** But in the fullness of the time of the Gentiles (22), also called the time of the nations (20f, 22) and the latter days, times, or ages (2, 172), but more often the last days or end of the world (4, 13, 35, 43, 51), or more precisely when the following conditions are fulfilled:

1. When there is no peace on earth (3)
2. When Jews, having abandoned farms (43), do evil in general (43, 49, 54) or some very great and particular evil<sup>1</sup> (12b, 103)
3. and are being or have been severely punished as a result (9g, 12b, 47c)
4. When in Germany there are few (16c, 88a), if indeed any Jews (140), but apparently many in England (122c).
5. When the power of the Turk is broken (62, 72)
6. When there are many false Christs (53b)
7. And on the other hand, when the Jews have begun to return to God and to serve Him (2, 10, 13, 45, 46, 50, 52)

<sup>1</sup>The studies of Belloc in "The Jews" might explain this, read Chapters III and VIII.

and to cry again to Him for liberation from captivity or persecution in a strange land (46).

### C. Salvation:

**1.** This time God will not turn a deaf ear (7, 18, 42, 102). A (large) remnant of the Jews (9g, 18, 22), meaning either all God-fearing Jews (6), or all surviving Jews (22, 42, 44c, 45), shall be gathered from the north country, the east and the west, many if not all lands, yes, even from the ends of the earth (9g, 11d, 17, 181), back into their own land, the land of Abraham, now called Palestine (6, 9g, 10, 11d, 15, 140, 142, 172, 181). This return is facilitated by the Great Monarch (q. v.) (55).

**2.** The Great Monarch or the Great Pope (q.v.) (72, 97) shall reestablish the Kingdom of Jerusalem (11d, 72) and give it to the Jews as the rightful owners (10, 42). They may again have a king as of old (11d, 13, 15, 157). Jerusalem will be rebuilt (42, 43); also the Temple or House of the Lord (6, 15, 46), but it will not be like the former one (42, 44c); yet the Ark, Tabernacle, and Altar of Incense will be found (18). This nation of the Jews will be mighty (16c).

**3.** God will make a new covenant with His people (10, 57). They will acknowledge the Messiah and His rule (13, 35, 62). Under the Great Pope they, enjoying tranquility (97), will become Christians<sup>1</sup> (8, 16b, 44c, 49, 100, 106, 168b, 172), but as Christians they will not lose the distinction of being Jews (122c). At this time Satan (the

<sup>1</sup>Prophecy 139 says that the conversion of the Jews is reserved till the end of time. It is probable that, whereas many Jews will become Christians under the Great Monarch and Great Pope (prophecy 34d), the conversion of the Jewish nation will take place only after it has been fooled by Anti-Christ whom at first it will consider the Messiah. Prophecy 19a may mean that the Son of Man comes (q. v.) before all Jews are converted.

Chief Cause of Evil) will be bound in all the world (54) (This to occur after Anti-Christ).

4. Thereafter till the end of time the Jews will serve God very well (2, 6, 11d, 46, 53).

They will be happy and enjoy peace (9g, 14b, 52), and material prosperity (9g, 14b, 46). They will henceforth neither be persecuted in the nations (97, 122c), nor disturbed in the possession of their own land (10, 15, 16, 42).

### VIII. NOTIONS SPECIFICALLY REFERRING TO THIS GENERATION.

1. People in our times (especially those who need them) pay no heed to divine warnings. There are few devout souls (183, 187). God's wrath is about to strike in the form of great suffering, including war, plague, flames, famine, and especially a "yellow fog" over Europe. Men and beasts will perish (183, 184, 186, 187, 191, 194, 195). Prayer will no longer delay divine Justice (186, 187, 195) but it will aid dying sinners (187), help individuals in their sufferings (186), and bring trouble to a quicker end (183, 189b, 197b). The devotions recommended for these things are: To the Precious Blood (186), Rosary (184), Queen of the Angels (185, 189), Immaculate Heart (179c), Perpetual Adoration (197a, b).

2. The war begins under Pius XI (179c). The war will involve persecution of the Church (179c). The persecution is connected with a hooked cross or hook and cross which can mean either the swastika of the Nazi or the hook (sickle) and cross (hammer shaped like the tau cross) of the Communists (184). The reigning pope dies in exile (195). The Immaculate Conception saves France and Italy

from the worst (184). For other countries involved see 178b, 193, 198. The Time is design designated as beginning already before 1936 (183, 184). Germany is marked for defeat by Russia in 1943 (193, 196). When the land of the great fleet enters the Mediterranean it is the time to expect great suffering in Europe (184) (1943). The war ends with a miracle (194, 197b, 198). As a result of all this Europe will be too large for the survivors (183). In fact there will be few men on earth (184).

3. The Pope will gather the remnant, among them many saints. The Dominicans and Franciscans will preach and turn the world back to Christ (184). There will be many Crusader volunteers of a new and Christian society. It will take about a generation to instruct in the new order (183, 184, 189c, 193). The era of the peace of Christ begins in the United States. It will be a time of Christianity and the heart. Men will be like the early Christians. Then will be a great return to the land. The powerful industrial organizations will collapse. Monasteries and convents will flourish as never before (183, 194b). Mary will triumph and peace will reign (179c).

# PART III

## THE PROPHETIC TEXTS

	Numbers
Old Testament.....	1 to 18
New Testament.....	19 to 32
The Fathers of the Church.....	33 to 40
Apocrypha of the Old Testament.....	41 to 56
Apocrypha of the New Testament.....	57 to 61
The Talmud and the Sybil.....	62 and 63
Oracles from the Middle Ages.....	64 to 119
The Prophets of the 16th and 17th centuries.....	120 to 132
Predictions in the 18th century.....	133 to 144
Early 19th Century Prophecies.....	145 to 161
Late 19th Century Seers.....	162 to 176
Published works from the 20th century.....	177 to 189
Two Prophetic Interpretations.....	190 and 191
Examples of Contemporary American Oracles (not previously published)...	192 to 199
Two Unidentified Prophecies.....	200 and 201

*Holy Ghost, with power divine,  
Cleanse this guilty heart of mine;  
In Thy mercy pity me,  
From sin's bondage set me free.*

*Holy Ghost, with joy divine,  
Cheer this saddened heart of mine:  
Yield a sacred, settled peace;  
Let it grow and still increase.*

# PROPHECIES FROM SACRED SCRIPTURES

## OLD TESTAMENT

**1.** "And yet for all that when they (the Jews) were in the land of their enemies, I did not cast them off altogether, neither did I so despise them that they should be quite consumed, and I should make void my covenant with them. For I am the Lord their God" (Lev. 26:44).

**2a.** "After all the things aforesaid shall find thee, in the latter time thou shalt return to the Lord thy God, and shalt hear his voice. Because the Lord thy God is a merciful God: He will not leave thee, nor altogether destroy thee, nor forget the covenant, by which he swore to thy Fathers" (Deut. 4:30-31).

**2b.** "If there rise in the midst of thee a prophet or one that saith he hath dreamed a dream, and he foretell a sign and a wonder, and that come to pass which he spoke, and he say to thee: Let us go and follow strange gods, which thou knowest not, and let us serve them: Thou shalt not hear the words of that prophet or dreamer: for the Lord your God trieth you, that it may appear whether you love him with all your heart, and with all your soul, or not" (Deut. 13:1-3).

**3.** "At that time (return of Jews), there shall be no peace to him that goeth out cometh in, but terrors on every side among all the inhabitants of the earth. For nation shall fight against nation, and city against city, for the Lord will trouble them with all distress" (2 Par. 15:5-6).

**4a.** "Why have the Gentiles raged, and the people devised vain things? The kings of the earth stood up, and the princes met together, against the Lord, and against his Christ. Let us break their bonds asunder: and let us cast away their yoke from us. He that dwelleth in heaven shall laugh at them; and the Lord shall deride them. Then shall he speak to them in his anger, and trouble them in his rage" (Ps. 2:1-5).

**4b.** "O ye sons of men, how long will you be dull of heart? Why do you love vanity, and seek after lying?" (Ps. 4:3).

**4c.** "O God, why has thou cast us off unto the end: why is thy wrath enkindled against the sheep of thy pasture? Remember thy congregation, which thou hast possessed from the beginning. The sceptre of thy inheritance which thou hast redeemed: Mount Sion in which thou hast dwelt. Lift up thy hands against their pride unto the end; see what

things the enemy hath done wickedly in the sanctuary. And they that hate thee have made their boasts, in the midst of thy solemnity. They have set up their ensigns for signs, and they knew not both in the going out and on the highest top. As with axes in a wood of trees, they have cut down at once the gates thereof, with axe and hatchet they have brought it down. They have set fire to thy sanctuary: they have defiled the dwelling place of thy name on the earth. They said in their heart, the whole kindred of them together: Let us abolish all the festival days of God from the land" (Ps. 73:1-8).

**5.** "It was not enough for them to err about the knowledge of God, but whereas they lived in a great war of ignorance, they call so many and so great evils peace. For either they sacrifice their own children, or use hidden sacrifices, or keep watches full of madness. So that now they neither keep life, nor marriage undefiled, but one killeth another through envy, or grieveth him by adultery. And all things are mingled together, blood, tumults and perjury, disquieting of the good, forgetfulness of God, defiling of souls, changing of nature, disorder in marriage, and the irregularity of adultery and uncleanness. For the worship of abominable idols is the cause, and the beginning and end of all evil. For either they are mad when they are merry: or they prophesy lies, or they live unjustly, or easily foreswear themselves. For whilst they trust in idols which are without life, though they swear amiss, they look not to be hurt. But for two things they shall be justly punished, because they have thought not well of God, giving heed to idols, and have sworn unjustly, in guile despising justice. For it is not the power of them, by whom they swear, but the just vengeance of sinners always punisheth the transgression of the unjust" (Wis. 14: 22-31).

**6.** "And our brethren, that are scattered abroad from the land of Israel, shall return to it. And all the land thereof that is desert shall be filled with people, and the house of God which is burnt in it, shall again be rebuilt: and all that fear God shall return thither" (Tob. 14:6, 7).

**7.** "Who art registered in the judgments of times to appease the wrath of the Lord, to reconcile the heart of the father to the son, and to restore the tribes of Jacob" (Ecclus. 48:10).

**8a.** "In the last days the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be prepared, on the top of mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go, and say: Come and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob, and he will teach us his ways, and we shall walk in his paths: for the law shall come from Sion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And he shall judge the Gentiles, and rebuke many people: and they shall turn their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into sickles: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they be exercised any more to war' (Is. 2:2-4).

**8b.** "And the people shall rush one upon another, and every man against his neighbour: the child shall make a tumult against the ancient, and the base against the honourable" (Is. 3:5).

**8c.** "Behold the Lord shall lay waste the earth, and shall strip it, and shall afflict the face thereof, and scatter abroad the inhabitants thereof. And it shall be as with the people, so with his master as with the handmaid, so with her mistress: as with the buyers, so with the seller: as with the lender, so with the borrower: as with him that calleth for his money, so with him that oweth. With desolation shall the earth be laid waste, and it shall be utterly spoiled: for the Lord hath spoken this word. The earth mourned, and faded away, and is weakened: the world faded away, the height of the people of the earth is weakened. And the earth is infected by the inhabitants thereof: because they have transgressed the laws, they have changed the ordinance, they have broken the everlasting covenant. Therefore shall a curse devour the earth, and the inhabitants thereof shall sin: and therefore they that dwell therein shall be mad, and few men shall be left. The vintage hath mourned, the vine hath languished away, all the merry hearted have sighed. The mirth of timbrels hath ceased, the noise of them that rejoice is ended, the melody of the harp is silent.

"They shall not drink wine with a song: the drink shall be bitter to them that drink it. The city of vanity is broken down, every house is shut up, no man cometh in. There shall be a crying for wine in the streets: all mirth is forsaken: the joy of the earth is gone away. Desolation is left in the city, and calamity shall oppress the gates. For it shall be thus in the midst of the earth, in the midst of the people, as if a few olives, that remain, should be shaken out of the olive tree: or grapes, when the vintage is ended.

Fear, and the pit, and the snare are upon thee, O thou inhabitant of the earth (Is. 24:1ff).

**8d.** "In the latter days . . . it is a people that provoketh to wrath, and lying children, children that will not hear the law of God. Who say to the seers: See not: and to them that behold: Behold not for us those things that are right: speak unto us pleasant things, see errors for us. Take away from me the way, turn away the path from me, let the Holy One of Israel cease from before us . . . You have rejected this word, and have trusted in oppression and tumult" (Is. 30:8 ff) .

**8e.** "And now what have I here, saith the Lord: for my people is taken away gratis. They that rule over them treat them unjustly, saith the Lord, and my name is continually blasphemed all the day long" (Is. 52:5).

**8f.** "In sinning and lying against the Lord: and we have turned away so they went not after our God, but spoke calumny and transgression: we have conceived, and uttered from the heart, words of falsehood. And judgment is turned away back-ward and justice hath stood far off: because truth hath fallen down in the street, and equity could not come in. And truth hath been forgotten: and he that departed from evil, lay open to be a prey: and the Lord saw, and it appeared evil in his eyes, because there is no judgment" (Is. 59: 13-15).

**9a.** "From the least of them even to the greatest, all are given to covetousness: and from the prophet even to the priest, all are given to deceit. And they healed the breach of the daughter of my people disgracefully, saying: Peace, peace: and there was no peace" (Jer. 6:13-14) .

**9b.** "And the Lord said to me: The prophets prophesy falsely in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, nor have I spoken to them: they prophesy unto you a lying vision, and divination and deceit, and the seduction of their own heart" (Jer. 14:14).

**9c.** "I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, and say: I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies, and that prophesy the delusions of their own heart? Who seek to make my people forget my name through their dreams, which they tell every man to his neighbour: as their fathers forgot my name for Baal" (Jer. 23:25-28).

**9d.** "Thus saith the Lord of hosts: Behold evil shall go

forth from nation to nation: and a great whirlwind shall go forth from the ends of the earth. And the slain of the Lord shall be at that day from one end of the earth even to the other end thereof: they shall not be lamented, and they shall not be gathered up, nor buried: they shall lie as dung upon the face of the earth. Howl, ye shepherds, and cry: and sprinkle yourselves with ashes, ye leaders of the flock: for the days of your slaughter and your dispersion are accomplished, and you shall fall like precious vessels. And the shepherds shall have no way to flee, nor the leaders of the flock to save themselves. A voice of the cry of the shepherds, and a howling of the principal of the flock: because the Lord hath wasted their pastures. And the fields of peace have been silent because of the fierce anger of the Lord. He hath forsaken his covert as the lion, for the land is laid waste because of the \*nth of the dove, and because of the fierce anger of the Lord" (Jer. 25 :32-38) .

**9e.** "Harken not to the words of the prophets that say to you: You shall not serve the King of Babylon: for they tell you a lie. For I have not sent them, saith the Lord: and they prophesy in my name falsely: to drive you out, and that you may perish, both you, and the prophets that prophesy to you" (Jer. 27:14-15).

**9f.** "For thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel: Let not your prophets that are in the midst of you, and your diviners deceive you: and give no heed to your dreams which you dream: for they prophesy falsely to you in my name: and I have not sent them, saith the Lord" (Jer. 29:8-9).

**9g.** "For there shall be a day, in which the watchmen on mount Ephraim, shall cry: Arise, and let us go up to Sion to the Lord our God, For thus saith the Lord: Rejoice ye in the joy of Jacob, and neigh before the head of the Gentiles: shout ye, and sing, and say: Save, O Lord, thy people, the remnant of Israel. Behold I will bring them from the north country and will gather them from the ends of the earth: and among them shall be the blind, and the lame, the woman with child, and she that is bringing forth, together, a great company of them returning hither. They shall come with weeping: and I will bring them back in mercy: and I will bring them through the torrents of waters in a right way, and they shall not stumble in it: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my first born. Hear the word of the Lord, O ye nations, and declare it in the islands that are afar off, and say: He that scattered Israel will gather him: and he will keep him as the shepherd doth his

flock. For the Lord hath redeemed Jacob, and delivered him out of the hand of one that was mightier than he. And they shall come, and shall give praise in Mount Sion: and they shall flow together to the good things of the Lord, for the corn, and wine, and oil, and the increase of cattle and herbs, and their soul shall be as a watered garden, and they shall be hungry no more. Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, the young men and old men together: and I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them joyful after their sorrow. And I will fill the soul of the priests with fatness: and my people shall be filled with my good things, saith the Lord" (Jer. 31:6-14).

**9h.** "Every man is become foolish by his knowledge: (the so-called 'learned men' of our day are here artly portrayed) every founder is confounded by his idol, for what he bath cast is a lie, and there is no breath in them. They are vain works, and worthy to be laughed at, in the time of their visitation they shall perish" (Jer. 5 1:17- 18).

**9i.** "Thou dashest together for me the weapons of war, and with thee I will dash nations together, and with thee I will destroy kingdoms: And with thee I will break in pieces the horse, and his rider, and with thee I will break in pieces the chariot, and him that getteth up into it: and with thee I will break in pieces man and woman and with thee I will break in pieces the old man and the child, and with thee I will break in pieces the young man and the virgin: And with thee I will break in pieces the shepherd and his flock, and with thee I will break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen, and with thee I will break in pieces captains and rulers. Behold I come against thee, thou destroying mountain, saith the Lord, which corruptest the whole earth; and I will stretch out my hand upon thee, and will roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain" (Jer. 51:20-23, 25).

**10.** "And they shall turn away themselves from their stiff neck, and from their wicked deeds: for they shall remember the way of their fathers, that sinned against me. And I will bring them back again into the land which I promised with an oath to their fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and they shall be masters thereof: and I will multiply them, and they shall not be diminished. And I will make with them another covenant that shall be everlasting, to be their God, and 'they shall be my people: and I will no more remove my people, the Children of Israel, out of the land that I have given them" (Bar. 2: 33-35).

**11a.** "And I scattered them among the nations, and they are dispersed through the countries: I have judged them according to their ways, and their devices. And when they entered among the nations whither they went, they profaned My holy name, when it was said of them: This is the people of the Lord, and they are come forth out of his land (Ez. 36:19-20).

**11b.** "Thus saith the Lord God: Woe to the foolish prophets that follow their own spirit, and see nothing. They see vain things, and they foretell lies, saying: The Lord saith: whereas the Lord hath not sent them: and they have persisted to confirm what they have said. Because they have deceived my people (Jews), saying: Peace and there is no peace: and the people built up a wall, and they daubed it with dirt without straw. And they violated me among my people, for a handful of ley, and a piece of bread, to kill souls which should not die, and to save souls alive which should not live, telling lies to my people that believe lies. Because with lies you have made the heart of the just to mourn, whom I have not made sorrowful: and have strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his evil way, and live" (Ez. 13:3, 6, 10, 19, 22).

**11c.** "Son of man, when a land shall sin against me, so as to transgress grievously, I will stretch forth my hand upon it and will break the staff of the bread thereof: and I will send famine upon it, and will destroy man and beast out of it. And if I shall bring mischievous beasts also upon the land to waste it, and it be desolate, so that there is none than can pass because of the beasts. . . . I bring the sword upon that land, and say to the sword: Pass through the land: and I destroy man and beast- out of it . . . I also send the pestilence upon that land, and pour out my indignation upon it in blood, to cut off from it man and beast" (Ez. 14:13, 15, 17, 19).

**11d.** "And thou shalt say to them: Thus saith the Lord God: Behold I will take the children of Israel from the midst of the nations whither they are gone: and I will gather them on every side, and will bring them to their own land. And I will make them one nation in the land on the mountains of Israel, and one king shall be king over them all: and they shall no more be two nations, neither shall they be divided any more into two kingdoms. Nor shall they be defiled any more with their idols, nor with their abominations, nor with all their iniquities: and I will save them out of all the places in which they have sinned,

and I will cleanse them: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God" (Ez. 37:21-23).

**12a.** "Thus thou sawest, till a stone was cut out of a mountain without hands: and it struck the statue upon the feet thereof that were of iron and of clay, and broke them in pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of a summer's thrashing floor, and they were carried away by the wind, and there was no place found for them: but the stone that struck the statue, became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth. . . . But in the days of those kingdoms the God of heaven will set up a kingdom that shall never be destroyed, and his kingdom shall not be delivered up to another people, and it shall break in pieces, and shall consume all these kingdoms, and itself shall stand forever. According as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and broke in pieces, the clay, and the iron, and the brass, and the silver, and the gold, the great God hath shewn the king what shall come to pass hereafter, and the dream is true, and the interpretation thereof is faithful" (Dan. 2:34-35; 44-45).

**12b.** "The king of the south being provoked shall go forth, and shall fight against the king of the north, and shall prepare an exceeding great multitude, and a multitude shall be given into his hand. And he shall take a multitude, and his heart shall be lifted up, and he shall cast down many thousands: but he shall not prevail. For the king of the north shall return and shall prepare a multitude 'much greater than before; and in the end of times and years, he shall come in haste with a great army, and much riches. And in those times many shall rise up against the king of the south, and the children of prevaricators of thy people shall lift up themselves to fulfill the vision, and they shall fall. And the king of the north shall come, and shall cast up a mount, and shall take the best fenced cities: and the arms of the south shall not withstand, and his chosen ones shall rise up to resist, and they shall not have strength. And he shall come upon him and do, according to his pleasure, and there shall be none to stand against his face: and he shall stand in the glorious land, and it shall be consumed by his hand. And he shall set his face to come to possess all his kingdom, and he shall make upright conditions with him, and he shall give him a daughter of women, to overthrow it; and she shall not stand, neither shall she be for him. And he shall turn his face to the islands, and shall take many: and he shall cause the prince of his reproach to cease, and his reproach shall be turned

upon him. And he shall turn his face to the empire of his own land and he shall stumble, and fall, and shall not be found" (Dan. 11 :11-19) .

**13.** "For the children of Israel shall sit many days without king, and without prince, and without sacrifice, and without altar, and without ephod, and without theraphim. And after this the children of Israel shall return, and shall seek the Lord their God, and David their king: and they shall fear the Lord, and his goodness in the last days" (Osee 3:4-5).

**14a.** "The day of the Lord cometh, because it is nigh at hand. A day of darkness, and of gloominess, a day of clouds and whirlwinds: a numerous and strong people as the morning spread upon the mountains: the like to it hath not been from the beginning, nor shall be after it even to the years of generation and generation. Before the face thereof a devouring fire, and behind it a burning flame: the land is like a garden of pleasure before it, and behind it a desolate wilderness, neither is there any one that can escape it. The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses, and they shall run like horsemen. They shall leap like the noise of chariots upon the tops of mountains, like the noise of a flame of fire devouring the stubble, as a strong people prepared to battle. At their presence the people shall be in grievous pains: all faces shall be made like a kettle. They shall run like valiant men: like men of war they shall scale the wall: the men shall march every one on his way, and they shall not turn aside from their ranks. No one shall press upon his brother: they shall walk every one in his path: yea, and they shall fall through the windows and shall take no harm. They shall enter into the city: they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up the houses, they shall come in at the windows as a thief. At their presence the earth hath trembled, the heavens are moved: the sun and moon are darkened, and the stars have withdrawn their shining. And the Lord hath uttered his voice before the face of his army: for his armies are exceeding great, for they are strong and execute his word: for the day of the Lord is great and very terrible: and who can stand it?" (Joel 2:1b-11) .

**14b.** "And you O children of Sion rejoice, and be joyful in the Lord your God: because he hath given you a teacher of justice, and he will make the early and the latter rain to come down to you as in the beginning. And the floors shall be filled with wheat, and the presses shall overflow with wine and oil. And I will restore to you the ears which the locust, and the bruchus, and the mildew, and the

palmerworm have eaten; my great host which I sent upon you. And you shall eat in plenty, and shall be filled: and you shall praise the name of the Lord your God, who hath done wonders with you, and my people shall not be confounded for ever" (Joel 2:23-26).

**14c.** "And I will show wonders in heaven; and in earth, blood, and fire, and vapor of smoke. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood: before the great and dreadful day of the Lord doth come. Proclaim ye this among the nations: prepare war, rouse up the strong: let them come, let all the men of war come up. Cut your ploughshares into swords, and your spades into spears. Let the weak say: I am strong" (Joel 2:30-31; 3:9-10).

**15a.** "Therefore because you robbed the poor, and took the choice prey from him: you shall build houses with square stone, and shall not dwell in them: you shall plant most delightful vineyards, and shall not drink the wine of them. Because I know your manifold crimes, and your grievous sins: enemies of the just, taking bribes, and oppressing the poor in the gate. Therefore the prudent shall keep silence at that time, for it is an evil time" (Amos 5:11-13) .

**15b.** "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, and I will send forth a famine into the land: not a famine of bread, nor a thirst of water, but of hearing the word of the Lord. And they shall move from sea to sea, and from the north to the east: they shall go about seeking the word of the Lord, and shall not find it. In that day the fair virgins, and the young men shall faint for thirst" (Amos 8:11-13).

**15c.** "In that day I will raise up the tabernacle of David, that is fallen: and I will close up the breaches of the walls thereof, and repair what was fallen: and I will rebuild it as in the days of old. That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and all nations, because my name is invoked upon them: saith the Lord that doth these things. Behold the days come, saith the Lord, when the ploughman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed: and the mountains shall drop sweetness, and every hill shall be tilled. And I will bring back the captivity of my people Israel: and they shall build the abandoned cities, and inhabit them: and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine of them: and shall make gardens, and eat the fruits of them. And I will plant them upon their own land: and I will no more pluck them out of their land which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God" (Amos 9:11-14).

**16a.** "Then shall they cry to the Lord, and he will not hear

them: and he will hide his face from them at that time, as they have behaved wickedly in their devices. Thus saith the Lord concerning the prophets that make my people err: that bite with their teeth, and preach peace: and if a man give not something into their mouth, they prepare war against him. Therefore night shall be to you instead of vision, and darkness to you instead of divination; and the sun shall go down upon the prophets, and the day shall be darkened over them. And they shall be confounded that see visions, and the diviners shall be confounded: and they shall all cover their faces, because there is no answer of God" (Mich. 3:4-7).

**16b.** "And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be prepared in the top of the mountains, and high above the hills: and people shall flow to it" (Mich. 4:1).

**16c.** "In that day, saith the Lord, I will gather up her that halted): and her that I had cast out, I will gather up; and her whom I had afflicted. And I will make her that halted a remnant: and her that hath been afflicted, a mighty nation: and the Lord will reign over them in mount Sion,

from this time now and for ever" (Mich. 4:6-7) .

**17a.** "Thus saith the Lord of hosts: Behold I will save my people from the land of the east, and from the land of the going down of the sun. And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God in truth and in justice" (Zach. 8:7-8).

**17b.** "Behold a man, the Orient is his name: and under him shall he spring up, and shall build a temple to the Lord. Yea, he shall build a temple to the Lord: and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit, and rule upon his throne: and he shall be a priest upon his throne, and the counsel of peace shall be between them both" (Zach. 6:12-13) .

**18.** "And when Jeremias came hither he found a hollow cave: and he carried in thither the tabernacle, and the ark, and the altar of incense, and so stopped the door. Then some of them that followed him, came up to mark the place: but they could not find it. And when Jeremias perceived it, he blamed them, saying: The place shall be unknown, till God gather together the congregation of the people, and receive them to mercy" (2 Mac. 2:5-7).

## NEW TESTAMENT

**19a.** "And you shall be brought before governors, and before kings for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles: But when they shall deliver you up, take no thought how or what to speak, for it shall be given you in that hour what to speak. For it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you. The brother also shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the son, and the children shall rise up against their parents, and shall put them to death. And you shall be hated by all men for my name's sake: but he that shall persevere unto the end, he shall be saved. And when they shall persecute you in this city, flee into another. Amen, I say to you, you shall not finish all the cities of Israel, till the Son of man come" (Mat. 10:18-23).

**19b.** "(Christ) answering said to them: An evil and adulterous generation seeketh a sign: and a sign shall not be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet" (Mat. 12:39).

**19c.** "Amen, I say to you, all these things shall come upon this generation" (Mat. 23:36) .

**19d.** "Take care that no one misleads you. For many will come in My Name, asserting, 'I am the Christ,' and will lead many astray . . . Then if anyone should say to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or, 'There!' do not believe it. For false christs and false prophets shall rise and exhibit great signs and portents, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect. Lo, I have forewarned you. If, therefore, they tell you, 'Look, he is in the desert!' do not go out; 'Look, he is in the private chamber!' do not believe it. (Mat. 24:4ff).

**19e.** "Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted and shall put you to death: and you shall be hated by all nations for my name's sake. And then many shall fall away, and shall betray one another: and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall lead many astray. And because iniquity hath abounded, the charity of many shall grow cold" (Mat. 24:9-12).

**20a.** "When the Son of Man comes, will He find, do you think, faith on the earth?" (Lk. 18:8).

**20b.** "And they will say to you: See here, and see there.

Go ye not after, nor follow them: For as the lightning that lighteneth from under heaven, shineth unto the parts that are under heaven, so shall the Son of man be in His day" (Lk. 17:23-24).

**20c.** "And they asked Him, 'Master, when shall this be? and what shall be the sign when this is about to occur?' Take care not to be misled,' was His reply: 'For many will come in My Name, asserting, 'I am the One,' and The time is at hand;' do not go after them. And when you). hear of wars and insurrections do not be terrified; these events must occur, but the end will not come immediately. Nation shall rise against nation, and empire against empire, and there shall be great earthquakes, and pestilences and famines will various places" (Lk. 21:7-11).

**20d.** "Henceforth there will be five divided in one house, three against two, and two against three. They shall be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter and daughter against mother; mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law" (Lk. 12:52-53).

**20e.** "But before all these things they will lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and into prisons, dragging you before kings and governors, for my name's sake" (Lk. 21:12) .

**20f.** "Jerusalem shall be trodden down by the Gentiles till the times of the nations be fulfilled" (Lk. 21:24b).

**21.** "They will put you out of the synagogues; yea, the hour cometh that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth a service to God. And these things will they do to you; because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things I have told you, that when the hour shall come, you remember that I told you of them" (John 16:2-4).

**22.** "I say then: Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God hath not cast away his people, which he foreknew. Know you not what the scripture saith of Elias; how he called on God against Israel, Lord, they have slain thy prophets, they have dug down thy altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. But what saith the divine answer to him? I have left me seven thousand men, that have not bowed their knees to Baal. Even so then at this present time also, there is a remnant saved according to the election of grace. And if by grace, it is not now by works: otherwise grace is no

more grace. What then? That which Israel sought, he hath not obtained: but the election hath obtained it; and the rest have been blinded. As it is written: God hath given them the spirit of insensibility; eyes that they should not see; and ears that they should not hear, until this present day. And David saith: Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompense unto them. Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see: and bow down their back always. I say then, have they so stumbled, that they should fall? God forbid. But by their offence, salvation is come to the Gentiles, that they may be emulous of them. Now if the offence of them be the riches of the world, and the diminution of them, the riches of the Gentiles; how much more the fullness of them? For I say to you, Gentiles: as long indeed as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I will honor my ministry. If, by any .means, I may provoke to emulation them who are my flesh, and may save some of them. For if the loss of them (Jews) be the reconciliation of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead? For if the first fruit be holy, so is the lump also: and if the root be holy, so are the branches. And if some of the branches be broken, and thou, being a wild olive, art engrafted in them, and art made partaker of the root, and of the fatness of the olive tree, boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. Thou wilt say then: The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. Well: because of unbelief they were broken off. But thou standest by faith: be not highminded, but fear. For if God hath not spared the natural branches, fear lest perhaps he also spare not thee. See then the goodness and the severity of God: towards them indeed that are fallen, the severity; but towards thee, the goodness of God, if thou abide in goodness, otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again. For if thou were cut out of the wild olive tree, which is natural to thee; and contrary to nature, were grafted into the good olive tree; how much more shall they that are the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? For I would not have you ignorant, brethren, of this mystery (lest you should be wise in your own conceits), that blindness in part has happened in Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles should come in. And so all Israel should be saved, as it is written: There shall come out of Sion, he that shall deliver, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob. And this is to them my covenant: when I shall take away their sins. As concerning the gospel, indeed, they are enemies for your sake, but as touching the election, they are most dear for

the sake of the fathers. For the gifts and the calling of God are without repentance. For as you also in times past did not believe God, but now have obtained mercy, through their unbelief; so these also now have not believed, for your mercy, that they also may obtain mercy. For God hath concluded all in unbelief, that he may have mercy on all" (Rom. 11: 1-32).

**23.** "Of the times and moments, brethren, you need not, that we should write to you; For yourselves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall so come, as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, peace and security: then shall sudden destruction come upon them, as the pains upon her that is with child and they shall not escape" (1 Thes. 5:1-3).

**24.** "For the mystery of iniquity already worketh; only that he who now holdeth, do hold, (St. Michael?) until he be taken out of the way. And then the wicked one shall be revealed . . . and his coming is according to the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all wicked deception to those who are perishing. For they have not received the love of truth that they might be saved. Therefore God shall send them the operation of error, to believe lying: That all may be judged who have not believed the truth, but have consented to iniquity" (2 Thes. 2:7-12)

**25.** "Let no one deceive you with empty arguments; for on account of these things the wrath of God is coming upon the sons of disobedience" (Eph. 5:6).

26. "Let no man seduce you, willing in humility, and religion of angels, walking in the things which he hath not seen, in vain puffed up by the sense of his flesh" (Col. 2:18).

**27a.** "The Spirit expressly says that in the last times some will depart from the faith, giving assent to seducing spirits and to doctrines of demons through the hypocrisy of men who speak lies, whose consciences are seared, who forbid marriage, and command abstinence from foods which God created to be partaken of with thanksgiving (1 Tim. 4:1-4) . . . O Timothy? guard the deposit! Avoid the profane and fruitless discussions and disputations of knowledge falsely so styled. By professing it some have missed the mark as regards the faith (1 Tim. 6:20-21) . . . "There shall come a time when people will not endure the sound doctrine; but having itching ears they will, in accordance with their own desires, accumulate teachers for themselves, and will turn

away their ears from the truth, and stray off after fictions (2 Tim. 4:3-4) . . . In the last days there shall come terrible times. For men shall be lovers of self, fond of money, pretentious, arrogant, railers, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, impious, without natural affection, implacable, slanderers; profligates, untamed, hostile to good, traitors, headstrong, befogged with conceit; lovers of pleasure instead of lovers of God, holding a semblance of religion after having denied its power (2 Tim. 3:1-5) . . . Among such are those who creep into families, and capture silly women crushed with sins and led by various impulses" (2 Tim. 3:6).

**27b.** "And 'all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution. But evil men and seducers shall grow worse and worse: erring, and driving into error" (2 Tim. 3:12-13).

**28.** "It is important that you should know this: that in the last days scoffers will come with mockery, men living in accordance with their own lusts" (2 Pet. 3:3).

**29a.** "Little children, it is the last hour and as you have heard that Anti-Christ cometh, even now there are become many Anti-Christ: whereby we know that it is the last hour" (1 Jn. 2:18).

**29b.** "Dearly beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits if they be of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world" (1 Jn. 4:1).

**30.** "For many seducers are gone out into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh: this is a seducer and an Anti-Christ" (2 Jn. 7).

**31.** "Now of these Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied, saying: Behold, the Lord cometh with thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to prove all the ungodly for all the works of their ungodliness, whereby they have done ungodly, and of all the hard things which ungodly sinners have spoken against God. These are murmurers, full of complaints, walking according to their own desires, and their mouth speaketh proud things, admiring persons for gain's sake. But you, my dearly beloved, be mindful of the words which have been spoken before the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who told you, that in the last time there should come mockers, walking according to their own desires in ungodlinesses. These are they, who separate themselves, sensual men, having not the spirit" (Ju. 14-19).

**32a.** "And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying: How long O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and revenge our blood on them that dwell on earth? And white robes were given to every one of them one; and it was said to them, that they should rest for a little time, till their fellow servants, and their brethren, who are to be slain, even as they, should be filled up"<sup>1</sup>

"I saw when He opened the sixth seal; for there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as haircloth, and the whole moon became like blood; and the stars of the sky fell upon the earth, as a fig tree casts its belated figs when it is shaken by a strong wind" <sup>2</sup> (Apoc. 6:9-13).

**32b.** "They were commanded not to injure the grass of the earth, nor any verdure, nor any tree; but only such men as have not the seal of God upon their foreheads. And it was granted them, not to kill, but to torment for five months (Communitistic rule?); and their torture was like the torture of a scorpion when it stings a man. And during those days men will seek death and shall by no means find it, and shall long to die, and death shall fly from them. And the shapes of the locusts were like horses prepared for war;" and on their heads they wore as it were, crowns like gold; and their faces were like the faces of men; and they had tresses of women; while their teeth were like the teeth of lions. And they had breastplates of iron; and the roar of their wings was like the roar of chariots of many horses charging to battle. And they have tails such as scorpions have and sting; and in their tails is their power to hurt mankind for five months. They have over them a king—the Angel of the Fathomless Pit. His name in Hebrew is Abaddon; and in the Greek he has the name Apollyon"<sup>3</sup>

"The first Woe hath passed<sup>4</sup>; behold,—hereafter two Woes are still to come. And the sixth angel sounded his trumpet, and I heard a single voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God; and it said to the sixth angel who had the trumpet: 'Loose the four angels who are bound on the great river Euphrates.' Then were loosed the four angels who had been held ready for the hour and day and month and year, in order that you should kill the third part of men. And the number of the troops of the cavalry

<sup>1</sup>For Berry's Commentary see No. 180a.

<sup>2</sup>For Berry's Commentary see No. 180b.

<sup>3</sup>For Berry's Commentary see No. 180c

<sup>4</sup>For Berry's Commentary see No. 180d

was twenty thousand times ten thousand; I heard the number thereof. And this is the manner after which the horses and they that sat upon them appeared in my vision: they wore breastplates the colour of fire, and of hyacinth and of sulphur; and the heads of the horses were as heads of lions, and out of their mouths issue fire and smoke and sulphur. By these three plagues were killed the third part of men, by the fire, by the smoke, and by sulphur issuing from their mouths. For the power of the horses is in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents, with heads, and by means of them they do harm. And the other men, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, and cease adoring the devils and idols of gold and silver and bronze and stone and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk; and they did not repent of their murders, nor of their enchantments, nor of their impurity, nor of their thefts" (Apoc. 9:4-21).

**32c.** "Then I saw another mighty Angel descending out of heaven robed in a cloud; and the rainbow was upon his head; and his countenance was like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; and he held in his hand a small open book. And he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left upon the land. And he cried with a great voice as a lion roars; and when he cried the seven thunders uttered their voices.<sup>1</sup> And when the seven thunders uttered their voices I was about to write; but I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, 'Seal up the things the seven thunders have uttered, and write them not.' Then the Angel whom I saw standing upon the sea and upon the land lifted up his right hand to heaven, and swore by Him who lives in the eternities of the eternities, who created the heaven and the things therein, that there shall be no more delay, but that in the days of the voice of the seventh Angel, when he is about to sound, then shall the mystery of God achieve its full perfection, as He declared to his servants the prophets.

"Then the voice which I had heard from heaven again spoke to me, saying, 'Go, take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel who stands on the sea and on the land.' So I went to the Angel, telling him to give me the Little Book. And he said to me, 'Take it and devour it; and it shall embitter thy stomach, but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey.' So I took the little book out of the Angel's hand and devoured it; and it was in my mouth as sweet as honey, but when I had eaten it my stomach was embittered" (Apoc. 10:1-10).

<sup>1</sup>For Berry's Commentary see No. 180e; for Holzhauser's, No. 129c.

**32d.** "Then I looked, and saw a white cloud; and upon the cloud one like a Son of Man sitting, wearing a golden crown upon His head and holding a sharp sickle in His hand. And another Angel came out of the temple calling with a great voice to the One sitting upon the cloud, 'Thrust in thy sickle and reap; for the harvest-time to reap is come, for the harvest of the earth is overripe.' And the One sitting upon the cloud swung His sickle over the earth; and the earth was reaped.

"Then another Angel came out of the temple which is in

heaven, and he too had a sharp sickle. And another Angel came from the altar—he that has power over fire—and called with a great voice to the one who had the sharp sickle, saying, 'Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and strip off the clusters of the vine of the earth; for its grapes are ripe.' And the Angel swung his sickle over the earth, and cast the vintage into the great wine press of wrath of God. And the wine press was trodden outside the city; and blood issued from the wine press up to the horses' bridles as far as two hundred miles"<sup>1</sup> (Apoc. 14:14-20).

<sup>1</sup>For Berry's Commentary See No. 180f; for Holzhauser's No. 129d.

## PROPHECIES FROM FATHERS OF THE CHURCH

### **33. *Didache and Apostolic Constitutions (90-100)***

"In the last days false prophets shall be multiplied, and such as corrupt the word, and the sheep shall be changed into wolves, and love into hatred: for through the abounding of iniquity the love of many shall wax cold. For men shall bate, and persecute, and betray one another."

### **34. *Pastor Hermes (2nd century)***

"When these things thus come to pass then He who is Lord, looking upon what is done and opposing His own will to the disorder, He cleanses the wickedness, partly by inundating the world with much water, and partly burning it with most rapid fire, and sometimes pressing it with wars and pestilences, He will bring His world to its ancient state."

### **34a. *Hippolytus (d. 235)***

"The Great French Monarch, who shall subject all the East, shall come around the end of the world."

### **35. *St. Augustine (d. 430)***

"Jacob was also called Israel, which name his progeny bore after him. This name the Angel that wrestled with him as he returned from Mesopotamia gave, him being an evident type of Christ; for whereas Jacob prevailed against him by his own consent, to form the mystery, is signified the passion of Christ wherein the Jews seemed to prevail against Him. And yet Jacob obtained a blessing from him whom he had overcome; and the changing of his name was that blessing; for Israel is as much as 'seeing God' which shall come to pass in the end of the world."

### **36. *St. Chrysostom***

"The world will be faithless and degenerate after the birth of Anti-Christ."

### **37. *St. Gregory the Great***

"After the birth of Anti-Christ most of mankind will be such as corrupt the word; and the sheep shall be changed into godless or fallen into heresy. Churches will be empty and dilapidated, priests will have little zeal for souls and pious people will be few. Most people will be given up to all imaginable vices."

### **38. *Lactantius***

"As the end of this world approaches, the condition of human affairs must undergo a change, and through the prevalence of wickedness, become worse. After the birth of Anti-Christ most people will possess something that they stole, they will be greedy, godless, selfish, hard-hearted. Justice will have disappeared from the earth, man will neither know law, order nor discipline. Murderers and robbers will fill the whole world. Priests will act like wolves, care little for spiritual things and live with women. Impiouness, lust and lasciviousness will rule the world. For righteousness will so decrease, and impiety, avarice, desire, and lust will so greatly increase, that if there shall then happen to be any good men, they will be a prey to the wicked, and will be harassed on all sides by the unrighteous; while the wicked alone will be in opulence, and the good will be afflicted in all calumnies and want. All justice will be confounded and the laws will be destroyed. No one will then have anything except that which has been gained or defended by the hand: boldness

and violence will possess all things. There will be no faith among men, nor peace, nor kindness, nor shame, nor truth; and thus also there will be neither security, nor government nor any rest from evils. For all the earth will be in a state of tumult. The time of 'nation fighting against nation' will occur after the birth of Anti-Christ, (and then) the world shall be despoiled of beauty through the destruction of men.

"When the close of the times draws nigh, a great prophet (Henoah or Elias?) shall be sent from God to turn men to the knowledge of God, and he shall receive the power of doing wonderful things. Wherever men shall not hear him, he will shut up the heaven and cause it to withhold its rains; he will turn their water into blood, and torment them with thirst and hunger; and if any one shall endeavor to injure him, fire shall come forth out of his mouth, and shall burn that man. By these prodigies and powers he shall turn many to the worship of God: and when his works shall be accomplished, another king shall arise out of Syria, born from an evil spirit, the overthrower and destroyer of the human race" (Anti-Christ) .

#### **39. St. Jerome**

"The destruction of the Holy City, the ruin of the House of God, the dispersion of the chosen people into all the kingdoms of the earth, and their continued existence as a nation, notwithstanding every attempt to exterminate them, or to compel them to forsake those ordinances which distinguish them to this very day from all other nations is emphatically one of the strongest evidences we can have of the truth of the Bible and of our religion. Jerusalem was indeed once a great city, and the Temple

magnificent; but the Jews themselves were greater than either; hence, while the two former have been given over to spoliation, the latter having been wonderfully (miraculously) preserved. The annals of the world do not contain anything so remarkable in human experience, so greatly surpassing human power and human prescience. Exiled and dispersed, reviled and persecuted, oppressed and suffering, often denied the commonest rights of humanity, and still more often made the victim of ruthless fanaticism and bigoted prejudice, the Jews are divinely preserved for a purpose worthy of a God."

#### **40. St. Methodius (385)**

"A time will come when the enemies of Christ will boast: 'We have subjected the earth and all its inhabitants, and the Christians cannot escape our hands.' Then a Roman emperor will rise in great fury against them . . . Drawing his sword, he will fall upon the foes of Christianity and crush them. Then peace and quiet will reign on earth, and the priests will be relieved of all their anxieties.

"In the last period Christians will not appreciate the great grace of God who provided a Great Monarch, a long duration of peace, a splendid fertility of the earth. They will be very ungrateful, lead a sinful life, in pride, vanity, unchastity, frivolity, hatred, avarice, gluttony and many other vices that the sins of men will stink more than a pestilence before God. Many men will doubt whether the Catholic faith is the true and only saving one and whether the Jews are perhaps correct when they still expect the Messiah. Many will be the false teachings and resultant bewilderment. The just God will in consequence give Lucifer and all his devils power to come on earth and tempt his godless creatures."

## **PRIVATE PROPHECIES**

### **APOCRYPHAL SCRIPTURES - JEWISH TRADITION**

**41a.** "God answered and said unto me: 'Into twelve parts is the end divided, and each one of them is reserved for that which is appointed for it. In the first part there shall be the beginning of commotions. And in the second part there shall be slayings of the great ones. And in the third part the fall of many by death. And in the fourth part the sending of the sword. And in the fifth part famine and the withholding of rain. And in the sixth part earthquakes and terrors" (Bar. 27:1-7).

**41b.** "For that time shall arise which brings affliction; for it shall come and pass by with quick vehemence, and it shall be turbulent coming in the heat of indignation. And it shall come to pass in those days that all the inhabitants of the earth shall be moved one against another, because they know not that My judgment has drawn nigh.

**41c.** "For there shall not be found many wise at that time, and the intelligent shall be but a few: Moreover, even those who know shall most of all be silent. And there shall

be many rumours and tidings not a few, and the doings of phantasmata shall be manifest, and promises not a few be recounted, some of them shall prove idle, and some of them shall be confirmed. And honour shall be turned into shame, and strength humiliated into contempt, and probity destroyed, and beauty shall become ugliness. And many shall say to many at that time: 'Where hath the multitude of intelligence hidden itself, and whither hath the multitude of wisdom removed itself?' And whilst they are meditating these things, then envy shall arise in those who had not thought aught of themselves and passion shall seize him that is peaceful, and many shall be stirred up in anger to injure many, and they shall rouse up armies in order to shed blood, and in the end they shall perish together with them. And it shall come to pass at the self-same time, that a change of times shall manifestly appear to every man, because in all those times they polluted themselves and they practiced oppression, and walked every man in his own works, and remembered not the law of the Mighty One. Therefore a fire shall consume their thoughts, and in flame shall the meditations of their reins be tried: for the Judge shall come and will not tarry. Because each of the inhabitants of the earth knew when he was transgressing. But My law they knew not by reason of their pride. But many shall then assuredly weep, Yea, over the living more than over the dead.' And I answered and said: 'O Adam, what hast thou done to all those who are born from thee?' And what will be said to the first Eve who hearkened to the serpent? For all this multitude are going to corruption, nor is there any numbering of those whom the fire devours." (Bar. 48:31-43).

**41d.** "Behold! the days come, and it shall be when the time of the age has ripened, and the harvest of its evil and good seeds has come, that the Mighty One will bring upon the earth and its inhabitants and upon its rulers perturbation of spirit and stupor of heart. And they shall hate one another, and provoke one another to fight" (Bar. 70:2-3).

**41e.** "And when those things which were predicted have come to pass, then shall confusion fall upon all men, and some of them shall fall in battle, and some of them shall perish in anguish, and some of them shall be destroyed by their own. Then the Most High will reveal those peoples whom He has prepared before, and they shall come and make war with the leaders that shall then be left. And it shall come to pass that whosoever gets safe out of the war shall die in the earthquake, and whosoever gets safe out of the earthquake shall be burned by the fire, and whosoever

gets safe out of the fire shall be destroyed by famine" (Bar. 70:6-8).

**41f.** "For all the earth shall devour its inhabitants" (Bar. 70:10).

**41g.** "If ye so do these things, He will continually remember you, He who always promised on our behalf to those who were more excellent than we, that He will never forget or forsake us, but with much mercy will gather together again those who were dispersed" (Bar. 78:7).

**42.** "God will again have mercy on them (Jews) and God will bring them back into the land of Israel, and they will again build the house, but not like the first, until the time when the time of the seasons be fulfilled; and afterward they will return, all of them, from their captivity, and build up Jerusalem with honour, and the house of God shall be builded in her, even as the prophets of Israel spake concerning her. And they shall bless the everlasting God in righteousness. All the children of Israel that are delivered in those days, remembering God in truth, shall be gathered together and come to Jerusalem and shall dwell for ever in the land of Abraham with security, and it shall be given over to them" (Tobit 14:5, 7).

**43.** "In the last times your sons will forsake singleness and will cleave unto insatiable desires; and leaving guilelessness will draw near to malice; and forsaking the commandments of the Lord they will cleave unto beliar (Satan) ; and leaving husbandry they will follow after their own wicked devices" (Test. Is. 6:1 ss).

**44a.** "When sin and righteousness, blasphemy and violence and all kinds of deeds increase, an apostasy in transgression and uncleanness increase, a great chastisement shall come from heaven" (Enoch 91: 7).

**44b.** "Sinners will alter and pervert the words of righteousness in many ways, and will speak wicked words, and lie, and practice great deceits, and write books concerning their words" (Enoch 104: 10).

**44c.** "I saw till the Lord of the sheep brought a new house greater and loftier than that first, and set it up in the place of the first which had been folded up: all its pillars were new, and its ornaments were new and larger than those of the first, the old one which He had taken away, and all the sheep were within it" (Enoch 90:29) .

**45a.** "The flame of fire and the wrath against the unrighteous shall not touch him, when it goeth forth from

the face of the Lord against sinners, to destroy all the substance of sinners, for the mark of God is upon the righteous that they may be saved. Famine and sword and pestilence shall be far from the righteous, for they shall flee away from the pious as men pursued in war; but they shall pursue sinners and overtake them, and they that do lawlessness shall not escape the judgment of God; as by enemies experienced in war shall they be overtaken, for the mark of destruction is upon their forehead. And the inheritance of sinners is destruction and darkness. And their iniquities shall pursue them unto Sheol beneath. Their inheritance shall not be found of their children, for sins shall lay waste the houses of sinners, and sinners shall perish forever in the day of the Lord's judgment, when God visited the earth with His judgment" (Ps. Sol. 15:6-12) .

**45b.** "May God cleanse Israel against the day of mercy and blessing, against the day of choice when He bringeth back anointed. Blessed shall they be that shall be in those days, in that they shall see the goodness of the Lord which He shall perform for the generation that is to come, under the rod of chastening of the Lord's anointed in the fear of his God, in the spirit of wisdom and righteousness and strength; that he may 'direct every man in the works of righteousness by the fear of God, that he may establish them all before the Lord, a good generation living in the fear of God in the days of mercy" (Ps. Sol. 18:6-10).

**46.** "After this they will turn to Me from amongst the Gentiles with all their heart and with all their soul. I will disclose to them abounding peace with righteousness, and I will plant them in this land of uprightness, with all My heart and with all My soul, and they shall be for a blessing and not for a curse, and they shall be the head and not the tail. And I will build My sanctuary in their midst and I will dwell with them, and I will be their God and they shall be My people in truth and righteousness. And I will not forsake them nor fail them; for I am the Lord their God. I know their contrariness and their thoughts and their stiffneckedness, and they will not be obedient till they confess their own sin and the sin of their fathers. And after this they will turn to Me in all uprightness and with all their heart and with all their soul, and I will circumcise the foreskin of their heart and the foreskin of the heart of their seed, and I will create in them a holy spirit, 'and I will cleanse them so that they shall not turn away from Me from that day unto eternity. And their souls will cleave to Me and to all My commandments, and they will fulfill My commandments, and I will be their Father and they shall

be My children. And they all shall be called children of the living God, and every angel and every spirit shall know that I am their Father in uprightness and righteousness, and that I love them. . . . The Lord will appear to the eyes of all, and all shall know that I am the God of Israel and the Father of all the children of Jacob, and King on Mount Zion for all eternity. And Zion and Jerusalem shall be holy.' And the angel of the presence who went before the camp of Israel took the tables of the divisions of the years—from the time of the creation—of the law and of the testimony of the weeks of the jubilees, according to the individual years, according to all the number of the jubilees from the day of the new creation when the heavens and the earth shall be renewed and all their creation according to the powers of heaven, and according to all the creation of the earth, until the sanctuary of the Lord shall be made in Jerusalem on Mount Zion, and all the luminaries be renewed for healing and for peace and for blessing for all the elect of Israel, and that thus it may be from that day and unto all the days of the earth" (Jubilees 1:15-29) .

**47a.** "Behold, the days come when the inhabitants of earth shall be seized with great panic, and the way of truth shall be hidden, and the land be barren of faith. And iniquity shall be increased above that which thou thyself now seest or that thou hast heard of long ago" (Ez. 5:1-3) .

**47b.** "Then shall the sun suddenly shine forth by night and the moon by day; and blood shall trickle forth from wood, and the stone utter its voice: The people shall be in commotion, the outgoings of the stars shall change. And one whom the dwellers of earth do not look for shall wield sovereignty, and the birds shall take to general flight, and the sea shall cast forth its fish. And one whom the many do not know will make his voice heard by night; and all shall hear his voice. And the earth o'er wide regions shall open, and fire burst forth for a long period: The wild beasts shall desert their haunts" (Ez. 5:4-6).

**47c.** "Behold the days come, and it shall be, when I am about to draw nigh to visit the dwellers upon earth, and—when I require from the doers of iniquity the penalty of their iniquity, and when the humiliation of Sion shall be complete, and when the Age which is about to pass away shall be sealed, then will I show these signs: the books shall be opened before the face of the firmament, and all see together. And one-year-old children shall speak with their voices; pregnant women shall bring forth untimely births at three or four months, and these shall live and

dance. And suddenly shall the sown places appear unsown, and the full storehouses shall suddenly be found empty; and the trumpet shall sound aloud, at which all men, when they hear it, shall be struck with sudden fear. And at that time friends shall war against friends like enemies, the earth shall be stricken with fear together with the dwellers thereon, and the springs of the fountains shall stand still so that for three hours they shall not run" (Ez. 6:18-24).

**47d.** "For with many afflictions shall they be afflicted that inhabit the world in the last times, because they have walked in great pride" (Ez. 8:50).

**47e.** "When in the world there shall appear quakings of places, tumult of peoples, schemings of nations, confusion of leaders, disquietude of princes, then shalt thou understand that it is of these things the Most High has spoken since the days that were aforetime from the beginning (Ez. 9:3-4).

**47f.** "In the last days thereof the Most High will raise up three kings and they shall renew (change) many things therein, and shall exercise lordship over the earth and over the dwellers therein with much oppression, above all those that were before them. Therefore are they called the heads of the eagle: for these are they that shall bring to a head his wickedness, and consummate his end. And whereas thou didst see that the great head disappeared—one of them shall die upon his bed, but yet with pain; but as for the two who remain, the sword shall devour them. For the sword of the one shall devour him that was with him; nevertheless this one also shall fall by the sword in the last days" (Ez. 12:23-28).

**47g.** "Behold, the days come when the Most High is about to deliver them that are upon the earth. And there shall come astonishment of mind upon the dwellers on earth: and they shall plan to war one against another, city against city, place against place, people against people, and kingdom against kingdom" (Ez. 13:29-31).

**48a.** "With Abraham thou didst make an everlasting covenant, and didst promise him that thou wouldst never forsake his seed. And thou gayest him Isaac, and to Isaac thou gayest Jacob and Esau. And thou didst set apart Jacob for thyself, but Esau thou didst hate; and Jacob became a great host" (4 Ezra 3:15-16).

**48b.** "The weaker the world grows through age, so much the more shall evils increase upon the dwellers of the

earth. Truth shall withdraw further and falsehood be near at hand" (4 Ezra 4 :16-17) .

**49.** "Ye shall have no place that is clean; but ye shall be among the Gentiles a curse and a dispersion until He shall again visit you, and in pity shall receive you through faith and water" (Levi 16:5) .

**50.** "Until the Lord visit you, when with perfect heart ye repent and walk in all His commandments, and He bring you up from captivity among the Gentiles" (Judah 23:5).

**51.** "Again, through the wickedness of your works, shall ye provoke Him to anger, and ye shall be cast away by Him unto the time of consummation" (Zabulin 9:9).

**52.** "So when ye return to the Lord ye shall obtain mercy, and He shall bring you into His sanctuary, and He shall give you peace" (Dan. 5:9).

**53.** "The saints shall rest in Eden, and in the New Jerusalem shall the righteous rejoice, and it shall be unto the glory of God for ever. And no longer shall Jerusalem endure desolation, nor Israel be led captive; for the Lord shall be in the midst of it living amongst men and the Holy One of Israel shall reign over it" (Dan. 5:12-13).

**54.** "For he (Satan) knoweth that upon the day on which Israel shall repent the kingdom of the enemy shall be brought to an end. For the very angel of peace shall strengthen Israel, that it fall not into the extremity of evil. And it shall be in the time of the lawlessness of Israel, that the Lord will not depart from them, but will transform them into a nation that doeth His will for none of the angels will be equal unto him. And His name shall be in every place in Israel, and among the Gentiles" (Dan 6:4-7).

**55.** "The Lord shall scatter them upon the face of the earth, until the compassion of the Lord shall come, a man working righteousness and working mercy unto all them that are afar off, and to them that are near" (Naphthali 4:5).

**56.** "Therefore do ye also, my children, tell these things to your children, that they disobey Him not. For I have known that ye shall assuredly be disobedient, and assuredly act ungodly, not giving heed to the law of God, but to the commandments of men, being corrupted through wickedness. And therefore shall ye be scattered as Gad and Dan my brethren, and ye shall know not your lands, tribe and tongue. But the Lord will gather you

together in faith through His tender mercy, and for the

sake of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob" (Asher 7:4-7).

## CHRISTIAN APOCRYPHA

**57a.** "God said: 'First I will make an earthquake for the fall of four-footed beasts and of men; and when you see that brother gives up brother to death, and that children shall rise up against their parents, and that a woman forsakes her own husband, and when nation shall rise up against nation in war, then you will know that the end is near. For then neither brother pities brother, nor man wife, nor children parents, nor friends friends, nor a slave his master, for he who is the adversary of men shall come up from Tartarus (Hell) , and shall show men many things" (Revelation of Esdras).

**57b.** "Take heed that no man deceive you, and that ye be not doubters and serve other gods. Many shall come in My name, saying: I am the Christ. Believe them not, neither draw near unto them. . . . Verily I say unto thee, when the twigs of the fig tree have sprouted forth in the last days (the fig tree is the House of Israel) then shall feigned Christs awake expectations, saying: I am the Christ that am now come into the world" (Ethiopic Text of Ep. of Apos.)

**58.** "In the last days the kinsman shall show no favor to his kinsman, nor any man to his neighbor. And they that were overthrown shall rise up and behold them that overthrew them; and men shall take from one and give to another. . . . But they that are deceivers in the world and enemies of righteousness, upon them shall come the fulfillment of the prophecy of David, who said: Their feet are swift to shed blood, their tongue uttereth slander, adders' poison is under their lips. I behold thee accompanying with thieves, and partaking with adulterers, thou continuest speaking against thy brother and puttest stumbling-blocks before thine own mother's son. . . . And there shall be many that believe on my name and yet follow after evil and spread vain doctrine. And men shall follow after them and their riches, and be subject unto their pride, and lust for drink, and bribery, and there shall be respect of persons among them. . . . There shall come forth another doctrine, and because they shall strive after their own advancement, they shall bring forth an unprofitable doctrine. And therein shall be a deadly corruption (of uncleanness) , and they shall teach it, and shall turn away them from eternal life. But woe unto them that falsify this, my word and commandment, and draw

away them that hearken to the commandment of life; for together with them they shall come into everlasting judgment" (Epistle of the Apostles).

**59a.** "There shall be wonders and strange appearances in heaven and on earth before the end of the world come. 'Tell us now, how shall we perceive it?' And he answered us: 'I will teach it to you; and not that which believe, as well as them who shall hear that man and believe in me. In those years and days shall it come to pass.'

"The sun and the moon fighting one with the other, a continual rolling and noise of thunders and lightnings, thunder and earthquake; cities falling and men perishing in their over-throw, a continual dearth for lack of rain, a terrible pestilence and great mortality, mighty and untimely, so they that die lack burial: and the bearing forth of brethren and sisters and kinsfolk shall be upon one bier. The kinsman shall show no favour to his kinsman, nor any man to his neighbour. And they that were overthrown shall rise up and behold them that overthrew them, that they lack burial, for the pestilence shall be full of hatred and pain and envy: and man shall take from one and give to another, and thereafter shall it wax yet worse than before. Then shall my Father be wroth at the wickedness of men, for many are their transgressions and the abominations of their uncleanness weigheth heavy upon them in the corruption of their life"

**59b.** "Lord will not then the nations say: 'Where is their God?' And he answered and said unto us: 'Thereby shall the elect be known, that they, being plagued with such afflictions, come forth.' We said: 'Will then their departure out of the world be by a pestilence which giveth them pain?' He answered us: 'Nay, but if they suffer such affliction, it will be a proving of them.'

"In those years and days shall war be kindled upon war, the four ends of the earth shall be in commotion and fight against each other. Thereafter shall be quakings of clouds, darkness, and dearth, and persecutions of them that believe in me and against the elect. Thereupon shall come doubt and strife and transgressions against one another" (Ep. of James).

**60a.** "Hear thou, Thomas, the things which must come to

pass in the last times: there shall be famine and war and earth-quakes in divers' places snow and ice and great drought shall there be, and many dissensions among the peoples."

**60b.** "At that time shall be very great rising of the sea, (common people?) so that no man shall tell news to any man. The kings of the earth and the princes and the captains shall be troubled, and no man shall speak freely. Grey hairs shall be seen upon boys, and the young shall not give place unto the aged. After that shall arise another king, a crafty man, who shall hold rule for a short space: in those days there shall be all manner of evils, even the death of the race of men from the east even unto Babylon. And thereafter death and famine and sword in the land of Chanaan even unto Rome. Then shall all the fountains of waters and wells boil over and be turned into dust and blood. The heaven shall be moved, the stars shall fall upon the earth, the sun shall be cut in half like the moon, and the moon shall not give her light.

"On the fourth day at the first hour, the earth of the east shall speak, the abyss shall roar: then shall all the earth be moved by the strength of an earthquake. In that day shall all the idols of the heathen fall, and all the buildings of the earth. These are the signs of the fourth day. And on the fifth day, at the sixth hour, there shall be great thunderings suddenly in the heaven, and the powers of light and the wheel of the sun shall be caught away, and there shall be great darkness over the world until evening, and the stars shall be turned away from their ministry. In that day all nations shall hate the world and despise the life of this world. These are the signs of the fifth day."

**60c.** "After a little space there shall arise a king out of the east, a lover of the law, who shall cause all good things and necessary to abound in the house of the Lord: he shall show mercy unto the widows and to the needy, and

command a royal gift to be given unto the priests: in his days shall be abundance of all things" (Apoc. of Thomas).

**60d.** "In the last times there shall be . . . many dissensions among the peoples, blasphemy, iniquity, envy, and villainy, indolence, pride and intemperance, so that every man shall speak that which pleaseth him. And my priests shall not have peace among themselves, but shall sacrifice unto me with deceitful minds: therefore will I not look upon them. Then shall the priest behold the people parting from the House of the Lord and turning unto the world, as well as transgressing in the House of God . . . The House of the Lord shall be desolate and her altars be abhorred . . . The place of holiness shall be corrupted, the priesthood polluted, distress shall increase, virtues shall be overcome (i.e., vices made to appear as virtues?) , joy perish, and gladness depart (i.e., without holiness there can be no peace—without peace no real happiness) . . . In those days evils shall abound: there shall be respecters of persons, hymns shall cease out of the House of the Lord, truth shall be no more, covetousness shall abound among the priests; an upright man shall not be found" (Apoc. of Thomas) .

**61.** "Many of them shall be false prophets, and shall teach ways and diverse doctrines of perdition. And they shall become sons of perdition. And then shall God come unto my faithful ones that hunger and thirst and are afflicted and prove their souls in this life, and shall judge the sons of iniquity. Take heed that no man deceive you, and you be not doubters and servers of other gods. Many shall come in My name, saying:

I am the Christ: believe them not, neither draw near unto them . . . In the last days shall feigned Christs come and awake expectation, saying: I am the Christ, now come into the world" (Apoc. of Peter).

## OTHER ANCIENT ORACLES

### **62. *Sephr Haggadah of the Talmud***

A kid my father bought for two pieces of money.  
Then came the cat and ate the kid.  
Then came the dog and ate the cat that ate the kid.  
Then came the staff that beat the dog, etc.  
Then came the fire that burned the staff, etc.  
Then came the water that quenched the fire, etc.  
Then came the ox and drank the water, etc.

Then came the butcher and slew the ox, etc.

Then came the Angel of Death and killed the butcher, etc.

Then came the Holy One, blessed be He, and killed the Angel of Death who killed the butcher, who slew the ox, that drank the water, that quenched the fire, that burned the staff, that beat the dog, that bit the cat, that ate the kid, that my father bought for two pieces of money.

It is interpreted (as of 1731) as a summary of Israel's history, past, present, and future, thus:

1. The kid, as a ceremonially clean animal, represents the Hebrew race. The Father is God. The two pieces of money are Moses and Aaron.
2. The cat represents the Assyrians who led Israel into captivity.
3. The dog is the Babylonians who conquered the Assyrians and the Jews, and took the Jews captive.
4. The staff is the Medes and Persians who conquered Babylon.
5. The fire is the Grecian Empire that conquered Persia under Alexander the Great.
6. The water is the Romans who conquered the Grecian Empire, including Palestine.
7. The ox is the Saracens who subdued Palestine and drove out both Jews and Romans.
8. The butcher is the Crusaders who fought the Saracens.
9. The angel of death is the Turkish power.
10. The Holy One is Christ who will take vengeance on the Turks, after whose overthrow the Jews will be restored and will shortly live under the government of the Messiah.

### **63a. *Sibylline Oracle***

"The destruction of the world will occur when faith in godliness shall perish from men, and justice is hidden away in the world, and men become renegades and, living on unholy enterprises, commit deeds of shame, and acts,

dastardly and evil; and no man takes account of the godly, but even in their senselessness, fond fools, they destroy themselves, rejoicing in acts of violence, turning their hands to deeds of bloodshed."

**63b.** "Now I will tell thee a very evident sign, that thou mayst understand when the end of all things is coming on the earth. When swords in the starlit heaven appear by night towards dusk and towards dawn, and straightway dust is carried from heaven to earth, and all the brightness of the sun fails at midday from the heavens, and the moon's rays shine forth and come back to earth, and a sign comes from the rock with dripping streams of blood; and in a cloud ye shall see a battle of foot and horse, as a hunt of wild beasts, like unto misty clouds, this is the consummation of war which God, whose dwelling is in heaven, is bringing to pass. From the sunrise God shall send a king who shall give every land relief from the bane of war: some he shall slay and to others he shall consecrate faithful vows. Nor shall he do all these things by his own will, but in obedience to the good ordinances of the mighty God. And again the people of the mighty God shall be laden with excellent wealth, with gold and silver and purple adornment. The land shall bear her increase, and the sea shall be full of good things. And kings shall begin to be weary of repelling evil one against another with wrath. Envy is no good thing for miserable mortals."

**63c.** "The Lion Monarch shall be made famous unto all and shall subvert kingdoms, peoples and nations. Then God shall send a King from the sun, who shall cause all the earth to cease from disastrous war. He will take away the intolerable yoke of slavery which is placed on our neck, and he will do away with impious laws and violent chains. When He shall come there shall be fire and darkness in the midst of the black night."

## **THE WORDS OF SAINTS AND SAGES**

### **PROPHECIES FROM THE MIDDLE AGES:**

#### **64. *St. Cataldus of Tarentino (cir. 500)***

"The Great Monarch will be in war till he is 40 years of age; a King of the House of Lily, he will assemble great armies and expel tyrants from his empire. He will conquer England and other island empires. Greece he will invade and be made king thereof. Clochis, Cyprus, the Turks and barbarians he will subdue and have all men to worship the

Crucified One. He will at length lay down his crown in Jerusalem."

#### **65. *Prophecy of Premol (496)***

"Is such a sacrifice not enough to appease your wrath, O Lord? But no, what then is this noise of arms? these cries of war and fear? What do the four winds bring? Ah! the

dragon has appeared in all countries and has brought terrible confusion everywhere. There is war everywhere. Men and people have risen up one against the other. War, war, war—civil war and foreign war. What frightening onsets. Everything is mourning and death; famine reigns in the fields.

"The general revolution has followed. In these future happenings will Paris be destroyed? Jerusalem! Jerusalem! (Paris) save yourself from the fire of Sodom and Gomorrah, and from the sack of Babylon. Why Lord, do you not stop all this with Your Arm? Is the fury of men not enough without flaming ruins? Must the elements still serve Your wrath? Stop, Lord, stop! Towns are ruined. The elements are let loose. Cities are destroyed by earthquakes. Mercy and grace for Zion (Rome?) ; but You are deaf to our cries, and the Mount of Zion tumbles down with a crash. And here it is that the King of Zion (Pope?) along with his cross, with his sceptre and his triple crown, shaking off, on the ruins, the dust of his shoes, hastens to flee towards other shores. And is it not so, O Lord, that Your Church is rent asunder by her own children?

"The sons of Zion are divided into two camps—one faithful to the fugitive Pontiff, and the other inclined or disposed to the government of Zion respecting the Sceptre, but breaking it in pieces the triple crown.

'But my spirit wanders and my eyes become obscured at the sight of this terrible cataclysm. But the Spirit said to me, that the man who hopes in God does penance, because the all-powerful and merciful God will draw the world out of confusion and a new world will commence. Then the Spirit said to me: 'Here is the beginning of the end of Time which begins!' And I awoke terrified."

#### **66. *St. Remigius* (d. 535)**

"The kingdom of France is predestined by God for the defense of the Roman Church, which is the only true Church of Christ. This kingdom shall one day be great among the kingdoms of the earth, and shall embrace all the limits of the Roman Empire, and shall submit all other kingdoms to its own sceptre. It shall last until the end of time. It shall be victorious and prosperous as long as it will remain faithful to the Holy Roman See, and will not be guilty of any of those crimes which ruin nations; but it shall be rudely punished every time that it will become unfaithful to its vocation."

#### **67a. *St. Caesar of Arles* (469-543)**

"When the entire world, and in a special manner France, and in France more particularly the provinces of the North, of the east, and above all, that of Lorraine and Champagne, shall have been a prey to the greatest miseries and trials, then the provinces shall be succored by A prince who had been exiled in his youth, and who shall recover the crown of the lilies.

"This prince shall extend his dominion over the entire universe. At the same time there will be a great Pope, who will be most eminent in sanctity and most perfect in every quality. This Pope shall have with him, the Great Monarch, a most virtuous man, who shall be a scion of the holy race of the French kings. This Great Monarch will assist the Pope in the reformation of the whole earth. Many princes and nations that are living in error and impiety shall be converted, and an admirable peace shall reign among men during many years, because the wrath of God shall be appeased through their repentance, penance, and good works. There will be one common law, one only faith, one baptism, one religion. All nations shall recognize the Holy See of Rome, and shall pay homage to the Pope. But after some considerable time fervor shall cool, iniquity shall abound, and moral corruption shall become worse than ever, which shall bring upon mankind the last and worse persecution of Anti-Christ, and the end of the world."

**67b.** "There shall be a great carnage and as great an effusion of blood as in the time of the Gentiles: the Universal Church and the whole world shall deplore the ruin and capture of that most celebrated city, the capital and mistress of France: the altars and temples shall be destroyed; the holy virgins after experiences many outrages, shall fly from their monasteries: the pastors of the Church shall abandon their pulpits and the Church itself be despoiled of all temporalities."

#### **68. *St. Bearcan* (d. 544)**

"After the man whose cognomen will be Ruadh (Red) , a spirit of fire will come from the north; he will march towards Dublin ;—there will be but one Lord over all Ireland. It is he that will bring affliction on the Gauls (non-Celts), by which their savage hordes shall suffer; until he will sail across the azure sea to Rome he will be a great king renowned for feats of arms."

#### **69a. *St. Senanus* (d. 560)**

"Impart to me, O Senanus, information concerning the

latter ages of the world; what shall be the condition of the race of people who will not observe rectitude in their judgments, who will entertain false and treacherous intentions; shall any individual of them be admitted into the regal mansions of heaven? Falsehood will characterize that class of men who will sit in judgment to pass sentence according to law:—between the father and his own son, litigations will subsist. The clergy of the holy church will be addicted to pride and injustice; the advantages they will aim at shall be the possession of worldly substance. Women will abandon feelings of delicacy, and cohabit with men out of wedlock; they will follow those practices without secrecy, and such habits will become almost insuppressible. All will rush into iniquity against the will of the Son of the Blessed Virgin Mary. The earth will not produce its fruits for the race of people to whom I allude; full mansions will be deserted, and unpleasant will be the tidings concerning them. Dreadful plagues will come upon all the race of Adam.

**69b.** "They (English) themselves will betray each other; in consequence of which their sovereignty will be broken; they will stain their swords and battle-axes with blood;—they will be a selfish race devoid of benignity. The son of the King of Saxon will come to join them across the sea; he will part with the sovereignty of the English in the country whence he will come. The English and the Irish of Ireland will unite in one confederation against the forces of the Saxons, their confederacy cannot be dissolved. The king of the Saxon's son will come at the head of his forces; in consequence of the protection he will extend to them, Ireland shall be freed from her fears. One monarch will rule in Ireland, over the English and the pure Irish; from the reign of that man, the people shall suffer no destitution."

**70a. *St. Columbkille (d. 597)***

"Hearken, thou, Until I relate things that shall come to pass in the latter ages of the world. Great carnage shall be made, justice shall be outraged, multitudinous evils, great suffering shall prevail, and many unjust laws will be administered. The time shall come when they will not perform charitable acts, and truth shall not remain in them. They will plunder the property of the church, they will be continually sneering at each other, they will employ themselves at reading and writing. They will scoff at acts of humanity, and at irreproachable humility; there shall come times of dark affliction, of scarcity, of sorrow, and of wailing; in the latter ages of the world's existence, and

monarchs will be addicted to falsehood. Neither justice nor covenant will be observed by any one people of the race of Adam; they will become hard-hearted and penurious, and will be devoid of piety. The clergy will become fosterers, in consequence of the tidings of wretchedness, (that will reach them) ; churches shall be held in bondage, (i.e., become private property) , by the all-powerful men of the day. Judges will administer injustice, under the sanction of powerful, outrageous kings; the common people will adopt false principles, oh, how lamentable shall be their position! Doctors of science shall have cause to murmur, they will become niggardly in spirit; the aged will mourn in deep sorrow, on account of the woeful times that shall prevail. Cemeteries shall become all red (dug up) , in consequence of the wrath that will follow sinners; wars and contentions shall rage in the bosom of every family. Excellent men shall be steeped in poverty, the people will become inhospitable to their guests, the voice of the parasite will be more agreeable to them than the melody of the harp touched by the sage's finger. In consequence of the general prevalence of sinful practices, humility shall produce no fruit. The professors of science shall not be rewarded, amiability shall not characterize the people; prosperity and hospitality shall not exist, but niggardliness and destitution will assume their place. The changes of seasons shall produce only half their verdure, the regular festivals of the Church will not be observed; all classes of men shall be filled with hatred and enmity towards each other. The people will not associate affectionately with each other during the great festivals of the seasons; they will live devoid of justice and rectitude, up from the youth of tender age to the aged. The clergy shall be led into error by the misinterpretation of their reading; the relics of the saints will be considered powerless, every race of mankind will become wicked! Young women will become unblushing, and aged people will be of irascible temper; the kine will seldom be productive, as of old; lords will become murderers. Young people will decline in vigour, they will despise those who shall have hoary hair; there shall be no standard by which morals may be regulated, and marriages will be solemnized without witnesses. Troublous shall be the latter ages of the world, the dispositions of the generality of men I will point out, from the time they shall abandon hospitable habits—with the view of winning honour for themselves, they will hold each other as objects for ridicule. The possessors of abundance shall fall through the multiplicity of their falsehoods; covetousness shall take possession of every glutton, and when satiated their

arrogance will know no bounds. Between the mother and daughter anger and bitter sarcasms shall continually exist; neighbors will become treacherous, cold, and false-hearted towards each other. The gentry will become grudgeful, with respect to their trifling donations; and blood relations will become cool towards each other; Church livings shall become lay property. Such is the description of the people who shall live in the ages to come; more unjust and iniquitous shall be every succeeding race of men. The trees shall not bear the usual quantity of fruit, fisheries shall become unproductive and the earth shall not yield its usual abundance. Inclement weather and famine shall come and fishes shall forsake the rivers. The people oppressed for want of food, shall pine to death. Dreadful storms and hurricanes shall afflict them. Numberless diseases shall then prevail. Fortifications shall be built narrow during those times of dreadful danger."

**70b.** "Then a great event shall happen. I fail not to notice it: rectitude shall be its specious motive, and if ye be not truly holy, a more sorrowful event could not possibly happen."

**70c.** "I cannot observe after the death of Conn, aught but a sameness among his kindred clans—until the son of Ruadh from the glen appear, the span of the kingly reign shall be but brief. After the blameless son of Ruadh, Cathbarr from Cruachin shall assume the sovereign power, though many fraudulent acts will be committed during his reign, he will be upon the whole a friend to the church."

**70d.** "After the conclusion of a long and bloody rule of Ireland by England 'the garment of death will descend and the rowing wheels will arrive. Ten hundred compartments shall be in the fleet, and each compartment shall contain ten hundred men. The armament will spread its forces over sea and land and rear up mounds with mangled bones. They will inflict on their enemies a severe, flesh-hewing course of warfare to such a degree that scarce a man of them shall escape. The fleet of rowing wheels will remain two short years and a half.'

"This fleet that will come across the sea shall consist of ten ships, ten hundred fairy barks (planes?) , ten hundred boats, ten hundred cock-boats and ten hundred spacious skiffs. The principal seaport belonging to the country abroad shall look to the west. Such a large assemblage of men never before met in the east or west; and never again shall such a muster congregate while Ireland is a seagirt island.

"The nobility shall sink into humble life before the great war; that war that will be proclaimed against them from beyond the seas, by means of which the frantically-proud race shall be subdued. The enemies of the English shall be aroused into activity—they who reside in the eastern and western parts of the world—so that they will engage in a battle on the circumscribed sea (Mediterranean?) , in consequence of which the English shall be defeated.

"A fleet belonging to a foreign country will come hither, manned by the descendants of Golimh of the gold-embroidered garments, they shall lay prostrate the Galls of the ships, and liberate the people who have been held in bondage. This fleet that will arrive here from the east, cannot be impeded on the mighty ocean; through the impetuosity of its noisy breathing, its strange appearance shall be marked by flaming mouths.<sup>1</sup> They will engage in a furious conflict, it shall be a wonder that it will not be a mutual slaughter, the conflict of those who will come hither to sever the intricate knot.

"After the English shall be defeated in this battle, they shall be harassed from every quarter; like a fawn surrounded by a pack of voracious hounds, shall be the position of the English amidst their enemies. The English afterwards shall dwindle down into a disreputable people, and every obstacle shall be opposed to their future prosperity: Because they did not (rather: so long as they do not) observe justice and rectitude, they shall be forever after deprived of power! Three warnings will be given them before their final fall, the burning of the Tower of the great kings; the conflagration of the dockyard of the English, and the burning of the Treasury where gold is deposited."

#### **71. *St. Ultan* (d. 656)**

"Then the Ruadh will proceed to the south, he will offer much opposition to the English; my confidence is in the Redhead for valour—he will free Eire from her difficulties. In a month after that hard-fought battle, another king will come from the north; I assure you, without the least deception, that three battles will be broken in one day. The battle shall continue during a whole week, it will be fought by the sons of a sovereign prince; it is at the termination of a week; after that, the aliens shall be dispersed. Wednesday will be the day of the battle, by which the aliens shall be driven from their

<sup>1</sup>This description of a battleship may be based on Job 40: 20ff, where the "Leviathan" is spoken of. See Ressehc: The Leviathan.

strongholds; none of them shall remain after that but what birds would be able to carry off in their claws!"

#### **72a. Merlin (7th century)**

"There will come a German Anti-Pope. Italy and Germany will be sorely troubled. A French King will restore the true Pope."

**72b.** After destruction of England by seven kings there "shall come a dreadful dead man, and with him a Royal Great Monarch of the best blood in the world and he shall set England on the right way and put out all heresies. He shall be the last King over England.

"When the tail of Virgo shall enter Leo, and Scorpio shall ascend the back of Sagittarius, the northern kingdoms shall be wasted by reapers; the southern principalities shall end in lust; and the powers of the Island Monarchies shall be harnessed.

"Cruel wars shall be scattered by the wind--whose beginning were by a staff; their growth and continuance by bastards—and gulled by a revengeful hail.

"The sun itself shall play on the tinterell, clad with a vermilion coat, and the moon with dun-buskins (brown—symbol of tragedy) shall amble to the fair.

"Those on whom these things shall come, for grief and sorrow shall pine away. A prince of royal stock shall come forth, crowned from the northern parts—to his own people unexpected, but desired by foreigners—who, because he shall bear a 'rampant lion' shall therefore be called a Lion. He shall advance his conquering armies against his enemies and by woeful successes shall harass the territories of neighbor Princes. He shall exceed Alexander the Great in virtue and Cyrus in success. He shall cross the sea and be saluted Emperor by many kings. A certain ancient city he shall lay level with the ground.

"In the meanwhile a powerful Prince out of the East shall provoke him to battle. Against whom the Lion shall march with all his forces and pitching his camp on this side (west) of the Euphrates, shall await him. If the Prince shall come over the river the Lion shall be overcome; but he (Lion) shall cross the river with his army and give his enemy a bloody defeat and be master of all the East.

"Whilst these things are happening, divers petty kings from India shall break into Syria with mighty armies. Provided for battle, they shall wait for the Lion about the

Valley of Jehosaphat, where they shall, by him, be all wholly cut off. Not long afterwards the Lion himself will die in eminent piety, after having established the Kingdom of the Fugitives ('transfugarum'—Jews?).

#### **73a. Old Welsh Prophecy**

"Ovens shall be esteemed as much as churches; as one sows, another shall reap. Death shall be better than wretched life; charity shall be with few men."

**73b.** "After that time (of irreligion) there shall come through the south with the Sun, on horse of tree, and upon all waves of the sea, the chicken of/the Eagle (soldiers of the Great Monarch?) sailing into Britain."

#### **74. St. Maeltamlacht (7th century)**

"In the latter ages destitution will fall upon many people, and whenever the English will commit great evils against the children of Eire, then the English will be expelled and Eire become the property of her rightful owners."

#### **75. Old Irish**

"A peace shall be dissembled, that peace may well be trembled; that peace shall false be proved, all peace shall be removed; Why? A most grievous fight shall rise upright."

#### **76. St. Odile (d. 740)**

"Listen, listen oh my brother, for I have seen the terror of the forests and of the mountains. Fear has seized the people because never in any region of the universe has one given testimony of such trouble. The time has come when Germany will be called the most belligerent nation of the world. The period has arrived when out of her bosom will come the terrible warrior who will undertake to spread war in the world: The men in arms will call him the Anti-Christ. He will be cursed by mothers by thousands who will lament like Rachel over the fate of their children, and who will refuse consolation because they will no longer be of this world and all will be devastated in their homes.

"The conqueror will come from the banks of the Danube. He will be a remarkable chief among men. The war that he will make will be the most terrifying that men have ever undertaken. His arm will be flamboyant and the helmets of his soldiers will bear points darting flashlights, while their hands will carry lighted torches. It will be impossible to calculate the number of cruelties committed. He will be

victorious on land, sea, and even in the air because one will see winged warriors, in these unbelievable attacks, mounting to the heavens to seize the stars and throw them on the cities from one end of the universe to the other in order to start gigantic fires. The nations will be astonished and will say: 'whence comes this force?' How is he able to undertake such a war?' The earth will tremble at the shock of the fighting. The rivers will run red with blood and sea monsters will disperse with terror to the top of the oceans, while black storms will spread desolation everywhere. Future generations will be astonished to see that his powerful and numerous enemies will not have been capable of stopping the march of his victories.

"And the war will be long. The conqueror will have attained the apogee of his triumphs towards the middle of the sixth month of the second year of hostilities. This will be the end of the first period of bloody victories. He will say 'accept the yoke of my domination,' while continuing his victories. But his enemies will not submit and the war will continue and he will cry out: 'Misfortune will make them fall because I am the conqueror.'

"The second part of the war will be equal in length to half of the first part. They will call it the period of 'diminution.' It will be full of surprises which will make the earth tremble when twenty belligerent nations will clash. Towards the middle of this period the little nations submissive to the conqueror will cry out: 'Give us peace.' But there will not be peace for these nations. This will not be the end of these wars but the beginning of the end and the combats of body against body will take place in the citadel of citadels. Then will see a revolt among the women of his own country who will wish to stone him. But one will also see prodigies in the Orient.

"The third period will be the shortest of all and the conqueror will have lost confidence in his warriors. This period will be called the 'period of invasion' because by just retribution the soil of the conqueror by reason of his injustice and his atheism, will be invaded in all parts and pillaged. Around the mountains torrents of blood will flow. This will be then the last battle.

"The nations will sing hymns of gratitude in the temples of God and will thank the Most High for their deliverance because then will have appeared the warrior (Great Monarch?) who will disperse the troops of the conqueror, the armies of which will be annihilated by an unknown and frightful illness. This evil will discourage his soldiers,

while the nations will say: 'The finger of God is there. It is a just chastisement.'

"Because God is just—while sometimes allowing cruelty and depredations—all the spoliated people, who will have believed Him, will recover what they have lost and something additional as a reward on earth."

#### **77. *Bl. Rabanus Maurus* (d. 856)**

"Our principal doctors agree in announcing to us, that towards the end of time one of the descendants of the kings of France shall reign over all the Roman Empire; and that he shall be the greatest of the Empire; and that he shall be the greatest of the French monarchs, and the last of his race.

"After having most happily governed his kingdom, he will go to Jerusalem, and depose on Mount Olivet his sceptre and crown. This shall be the end and conclusion of the Roman and Christian Empire."

#### **78. *Leo the Philosopher* (d. 911)**

"There will arise an imperial deliverer—an oriental Frederick—who will save the kingdom and the people. He will come from the Mohammedans over whom he will rule—adorned with all virtue—poor but needing nothing—two angels in the form of eunuchs will accompany him—mankind will accept him as their ruler. He will conquer the Arabs—no taxes after twelve years. Immediately after, there will set in a period of darkness, crime and revolution."

#### **79. *Monk Adso* (d. 992)**

"Some of our teachers say that a King of the Franks will possess the entire Roman Empire. This King will be the greatest and last of all monarchs, and after having prosperously governed his kingdom, he will come in the end to Jerusalem and he will lay down his sceptre and his crown upon the Mount of Olives. This will be the end and consummation of the Empire of Rome, and immediately afterwards Anti-Christ will come."

#### **80. *Saint Edward* (d. 1066)**

"The extreme corruption and wickedness of the English nation has provoked the just anger of God. When malice shall have reached the fullness of its measure, God will, in His wrath, send to the English people wicked spirits, who will punish and afflict them with great severity, by

separating the green tree from its parent stem the length of three furlongs. But at last this same tree, through the compassionate mercy of God, and without any national assistance, shall return to its original root, reflourish, and bear abundant fruit." (Concerns the English departure from and return to Christian unity.)

**81a. *Monk Hilarion* (d. 1476)**

"Before the Christian churches are renovated and united, God will send the Eagle (Great Monarch) who will travel to Rome and bring much happiness and good. The Holy Man (Angelic Pastor?) will bring peace between the clergy and the Eagle and his reign will last for four years. Then after his death God will send three men who are rich in wisdom and virtue. These men will administer the laws of the Holy Man and spread Christianity everywhere. Then there will be one flock, one shepherd, one faith, one law, one life and one baptism throughout the world."

**81b.** "The people of the Peninsula of Europe (Italy?) will suffer by unnecessary wars until the Holy Man comes. The people of Pannonia (Austria: Hitler?) will be the cause of a great war, overcome a neighbor and become an independent nation. Then will a Scourge of God come and chastise them, a Lion, which will reign a long time over the nation. That Lion will come from a high mountain in the enlightened nation. Then will the people of the Half-Moon of the Tribe of Agar overrun many nations toward midnight (North) and commit many depredations. Three years will they reign destroying all. Yet in the third year will one of the unconquerable Eagles, who reign over the Enlightened Nation between the Rhine and the North Sea, with a great army meet them by the mouth of the River Rhine and in a fearful battle almost entirely annihilate them." (see also no. 115 below).

**82a. *St. Malachy* (d. 1148)**

"Religio Depopulata" (Religion without people: Benedict XV, 1914-1922—was designated by this verse).

"Fides Intrepida" (Fearless faith: Pius XI, 1922-1939 —is aptly described by these words).

"Pastor Angelicus (Angelic shepherd: This would be Pius XII, 1939- —but probably his two successors also).  
"Pastor et Nauta" (Shepherd and sailor) .

"Flos Florum" (Flower of flowers).

"De Labore Solis" (from, by or of the work of the sun) .

"De Gloria Olivae" (from, by or of the glory of the olive tree).

"During the last persecution of the Holy Roman Church, there will sit upon the throne, Peter the Roman, who will feed the sheep amid great tribulations, and when these are passed, the City of the Seven Hills (Rome) will be utterly destroyed, and the awful Judge will then judge the people." (see no. 113b and 136).

**82b.** "Ireland will undergo English oppression for a week of centuries but will preserve her fidelity to God and His Church. At the end of this time Ireland will be delivered and the English in turn must suffer severe chastisements. Ireland, however, will be instrumental in bringing back the English to the unity of faith."

**83. *Thos. a' Becket* (d. 1170)**

"A knight shall come from the West—he shall capture Milan, Lombardy, and the three crowns, and then sail to Famagoste and Cyprus and land at Jaffa and reach Christ's grave, where he will fight. War and wonders later shall befall till the people believe in Christ—toward the end of the world."

**84a. *St. Hildegard* (d. 1179)**

"The time is coming when princes and people will renounce the authority of the Pope. Individual countries will prefer their own Church rulers to the Pope. The German Empire will be divided. Church property will be secularized. Priests will be persecuted. After the birth of Anti-Christ heretics will preach their false doctrines undisturbed, resulting in 'Christians having doubts about their holy Catholic faith.' "(See 82a "Religio Depopulata".)

**84b.** "Toward the end of the world, mankind will be purified through sufferings. This will be true especially of the clergy, who will be robbed of all property. . . . When the clergy has adopted a simple manner of living, conditions will improve."

**84c.** "A powerful wind will rise in the North carrying heavy fog and the densest dust (darkness?) by divine command and it will fill their throats and eyes so they will cease their savagery and be stricken with a great fear. So after that there will be so few men left that seven women will fight for one man, that they will say to the

man: 'marry me to take the disgrace from me,' for in those days it will be a disgrace for a woman to be without child, as it was by the Jews in the Old Testament."

"Before the Comet comes, many nations, the good excepted, will be scourged with want and famine. The great nation in the ocean that is inhabited by people of different tribes and descent by an earthquake, storm and tidal waves will be devastated. It will be divided, and in great part be sub-merged. That nation will also have many misfortunes at sea, and lose its colonies in the East through a Tiger and a Lion (two other nations?) . The Comet by its tremendous pressure, will force much out of the ocean and flood many countries, causing much want and many plagues. All sea coast cities will be fearful-and many of them will be destroyed by tidal waves, and most living creatures will be killed and even those who ,escape will die from a horrible disease. For in none of those cities does a person live according to the laws of God."

**84d.** "Peace will return to Europe when the white flower (Bourbon: Great Monarch) again takes possession of the throne of France. During this time of peace the people will be forbidden to carry weapons and iron will be used only for making agricultural implements and tools. Also during this period the soil will be very productive and many Jews, heathens and heretics will join the Church."

### **85a. *Old English Prophecies***

"When pictures look alive, with movements free; when ships like fishes swim beneath the sea; when men, outstripping birds, can soar the sky; then half the world, deep drenched in blood, shall die." (From a tombstone at Kirby Cemetery, Essex, England) .

"Nation shall rise with nation, and make confederation. That 'all English' situation shall be taught by operation, to read upon the Passion."

"In Germany begins a dance, which passeth through Italy, Spain and France, but England shall pay the piper."

"When Our Lord shall lie in Our Lady's lap, then England will meet with a strange mishap." (Good Friday on Mar. 25?).

"The Lily (France) shall be moved against the feet of the Lion (England) and he shall stand on one side amongst the thorns (revolt?) of his own Kingdom and country."

**85b.** "There shall come a time when a George, the son of George shall come to the throne of England. And then, at that time, an eagle shall drink the blood of princes from a headless cross. And at that time death shall fall from the sky and an army of sleeping horsemen (fifth columnists?) from beneath the earth, shall come forth and drive the enemy from the land."

**85c.** In the last year (of war) there shall come an Eagle (Great Monarch) , out of the East, and his wings spread with the beams of the Son of Man. And that year shall be destroyed castles upon the Thames, and there shall be great fear over the whole world, and in a part of the land there shall be great battles amongst many kingdoms: that day shall see the "bloody field" and the Lily shall lose his crown, and therewith shall be crowned the Son of Man."

"In the fourth year many battles shall be fought for the faith and most of the world shall be stoopen: but the Son of Man with the Eagle shall be preferred—and there shall be universal peace over the whole world. Then shall the Son of Man receive a marvelous token, and there shall be great plenty of all manner of fruit and then shall he go to the Land of the Cross (Palestine)."

### **86a. *Old Scotch***

"Falsehood shall rule five years, a peace shall be tried out but not last and punishment shall soon come."

**86b.** "The untrue shall tremble—but when venom is banished and right rules, we shall have peace and plenty. The sun and moon shall no longer be dark (implies a period of darkness). The dead shall rise and live to comfort a knight (Great Monarch?) whom fortune chooses. He shall fight in Syria and win the Holy Cross. The Lion and the Lioness shall reign as Bannister, Ambrose, Merlin, Wigythinton and Thomas say."

**86c.** "When the Cock of the north (Russia?) bids birds to fly (planes?), the Lion (England?) shall be loose and a Dragon (United States?) shall help him. A Leonard (Great Monarch?) shall rise in the South.

"A battle shall be fought on a broad moor (Westphalia?).

The Wolf (Poland?) shall be true to the Lion, and from Bamborough shall the Leopard with the Fleur-De-Lis sail.

"That winter shall many lords perish, when Tarburt Crags fall into the sea—Bede and Banister say so."

### **87. Old Saxon**

"The seven-headed city, now more brave than Jerusalem, shall be a place more desolate than Jerusalem. This Dog (that entered Germany a loss) shall afterwards forsake his Master and choose him a New Man, whereby the Scriptures shall be fulfilled. This dog shall signify the Turk, which shall forsake his Mahomet and choose unto him the name Christian, which is a sign the day of Doom is at hand, when all the earth is subject unto God, or that all people acknowledge one only God.

"England and France shall live long at variance, but at length agree.

"The bowels of Spain shall be split asunder, and divided for want of Government.

"The 'Fleur-de-Lis' (Bourbon emblem) and France shall live long at variance, but at length agree. Then shall the clear Word spring forth and flourish through the world, which never shall be taken away.

"After this shall a milk white Dove be lifted up to honor with two Golden Lions and receive a Crown of Gold; but after all these things the end of the world shall approach, and there shall be heavy and pitiful days, with much wars and other altercations in the world and not long after universal peace."

### **88a. Old German (12th century)**

"A great war will come, after which the Kaiser will leave the country. Troubled times will follow, although the land is at peace. Then a man of lowly birth will come into power and win many successes so that Germany will become 'Great Germany.' There will be few Jews in the country. When at the height of his power this man will do something to cause another world war, resulting in Germany's downfall. Germany will become small again, but, under a Catholic monarch, will regain power and prestige. At that time a Pope will reign who has not long occupied the throne of Peter and who, through pressure of circumstances, will leave Rome."

**88b.** "Munster will be destroyed from the air. The atmosphere will become so pestiferous that no one will dare open a window. Then a Catholic Kaiser will enter the city on horseback, have his steed shod by a one-eyed smith, remount on the wrong side and then cease to reign. Despite this, prayer will avert much misery. In these years many people will wear red shoes."

### **89a. Birch-Tree Prophecy (Old German)**

"When the world becomes Godless: revolutions will break out against kings; fathers will be against sons and sons against fathers; dogma will be perverted; men will try to overthrow the Catholic Church; mankind will be lovers of pleasure. A terrible war will find the north fighting the south. The south will be led by a Prince wearing a white coat with a cross on the front; he will be lame afoot. He will gather his forces at Bremen for Mass. Then he will lead them into battle beyond Werl near the birch-tree country (Westphalia) . After a terrible battle at a brook running west to east near Berdberg and Sondern the south will be victorious."

### **89b. Another Version of the "Birch-Tree Prophecy"—Peter Schlinkert)**

"Near the birch-tree (Westphalia) the army of the West will fight a terrible battle against the army of the East, and after many bloody sacrifices be victorious. The soldiers of the East will retreat over the Haar, and when the villagers see Rune on the Werler and Haar on fire, they must quickly flee into Armsberger Wood. Another battle will be fought near the Ruhr Bridge by Obeneimer, but here only with artillery.

A few days later will be fought the last great battle on German soil and that by the village Schmerleck on the so-called Lusebrinke. The army of the East will be almost entirely annihilated and only a very few will be left to bring the news home. After these days of mishap and misery happiness and peace will return to Germany, though in the first year the women will have to do the farm work."

### **90. Chronicle of Madgeburg**

"Of the blood of the Emperor Charles the Great and of the King of France shall arise an Emperor named Charles, who shall rule imperially in Europe, by whom the decayed estate of the Church shall be reformed and the ancient glory of the Empire again restored."

### **91. Aystinger the German**

"There shall arise in the last times, a Prince, sprung from the Emperor Charles who shall recover the land of promise and reform the Church. He shall be Emperor of Europe."

### **92. Anonymous**

Last periods before the peace of Christ "January—Blood will rain one hour in the land of Europe that shall be destroyed first.

February—Wars and rumors—everywhere preparing for war—land and sea traffic restricted—countries forced to live on their own products.

March—Great waves and floods—land of the double cross government (England?) submerged because of sins of rulers.

April—Terrible naval battle—waters turn red—England in the fight.

May—War and bloodshed everywhere: twelve women to each man.

June—In the East a whole nation will fight for an evil man—God will rain fire on his army of wealth and treasures.

July—Great drought over the world.

August—Plagues, pestilences (from East) famines—worse than Jerusalem.

September--Seasons unnatural—the soil will not be tillable—cattle will rot and vermin poison the earth.

October—Famine (corn) over Europe.

November—'Great Conqueror' will give peace to the Earth. December—Religion spread universally—peace trumpet sounds."

### **93a. *Old Italian***

"When the White Pope and the Black Pope (Head of Jesuits or an Anti-Pope) shall die during the same night, then there will dawn upon the Christian nations the Great White Day."

**93b.** "Woe unto the City of Philosophers, woe unto Lombardy for thy towers of joy shall be broken down; all the tyrants shall be put out of God's church, and there shall occur a general conversion to the faith of Christ under the Great Lion."

### **94. *Old Latin (Bishop Ageda?)***

"In these times (world in terrible distress) a mercurial hero, a son of the Lion, shall inherit the crown of the Fleur-de-Lis (Bourbons) by means of the kingdom of

England. He shall be a lover of peace and justice, not swerve from the same, and by his means the nation's religion and laws shall have an admirable change. When these things come to pass there shall be a firm alliance between the Lion and the Eagle and they shall live in peace between themselves for a long time. In these times mortals wearied with wars shall desire peace."

### **95. *Old Roman***

"In the first age the nobility will flourish; in the second age the Church will rule; in the third age the law will tyrannize, and thereafter war will destroy everything."

### **96. *Sibylla Tiburtina***

"A star shall arise in Europe over the Iberians (Great Monarch) , toward the great house of the North (Hapsburg?) , whose beams shall unexpectedly enlighten the whole world.

This shall be in a most desired time, when mortal men, being weary of armies, with joint consent embrace peace. Almost at the same time of this star, a light as ancient as the former (Pope) , of the same age (young) , burning with far more eager flames, shall extend his government to the coasts of the Antipodes. France shall first be yoked by this King or Prince. Britain shall humbly cast herself at his knees. Italy, pausing with great deliberation upon high enterprises, will contribute to him her languishing right hand. But this very light shall hide itself in the clouds of the gods long before his time (die young—comparatively short reign) with the mighty desire of mortal men."

### **97. *Abbot "Merlin"--Joachim (d. 1202)***

"After many prolonged sufferings endured by Christians, and after a too great effusion of innocent blood, the Lord shall give peace and happiness to the desolated nations. A remarkable Pope will be seated on the pontifical throne, under the special protection of the angels (Angelic Pastor?) . Holy and full of gentleness, he shall undo all wrong, he shall recover the states of the Church, and reunite the exiled temporal powers. He shall be revered by all people, and shall recover the kingdom of Jerusalem. As the only Pastor he shall reunite the Eastern to the Western Church, and thus one only faith will be in vigor. The sanctity of this beneficent Pontiff will be so great that the highest potentates shall bow down before his presence. This holy man shall crush the arrogance of religious schism and heresy. All men will return to the primitive

Church, and there shall be one only pastor, one law, one master—humble, modest, and fearing God (Pope) . The true God of the Jews, our Lord Jesus Christ, will make everything prosper beyond all human hope, because God alone can and will pour down on the wounds of humanity the oily balm of sweetness.

"The heavens proclaim the glory of God, and the faithful are in joy and happiness, because the Lord has vouchsafed to be merciful to them. He shall invite his elect to the banquet of the Lamb, where melodious canticles and harmonious concerts will be heard.

"The power of this Pontiff's holiness will be so great as to be able to check the fury and impetuosity of threatening waves. Mountains shall be lowered before him, the sea shall be dried up, the dead shall be raised, the churches shall be reopened and altars erected.

"It should be known that there will be two heads, one in the East, and the other in the West. This Pope shall break the weapons and scatter the fighting hordes. He will be the joy of God's elect. This angelic Pope will preach the gospel in every country. Through his zeal and solicitude the Greek Church shall be forever reunited to the Catholic Church.

"Before, however, being firmly and solidly established in the Holy See, there will be innumerable wars and violent conflicts during which the sacred throne shall be shaken. But through the favor of Divine clemency, moved by the prayers of the faithful, everything will succeed so well that they shall be able to sing hymns of thanksgiving to the glory of the Lord.

"This holy Pope shall be both pastor and reformer. Through him the East and West shall be in everlasting concord. The city of Babylon shall then be the head and guide of the world. Rome, weakened in temporal power, shall forever preserve her spiritual dominion, and shall enjoy great peace. During these happy days the Angelic Pope shall be able to address to Heaven prayers full of sweetness. The dispersed nation (Jews) shall also enjoy tranquility. Six and a half years after this time the Pope will render his soul to God. The end of his days shall arrive in an arid province, situated between a river and a lake near the mountains. . . .

"At the beginning, in order to obtain these happy results, having need of a powerful temporal assistance, this holy Pontiff will ask the cooperation of the generous monarch

of France (Great Monarch) . At that time a handsome monarch, a scion of King Pepin, will come as a pilgrim to witness the splendor of this glorious pontiff, whose name shall begin with R . . . A temporal throne becoming vacant, the Pope shall place on it this king whose assistance he shall ask.

"When a monster shall appear to thee in the sky, thou shalt find a ready escape towards the east, and after nine years thou shalt render thy soul to God.

"A man of remarkable sanctity will be his successor in the Pontifical chair. Through him God will work so many prodigies that all men shall revere him, and no person will dare to oppose his precepts. He shall not allow the clergy to have many benefices. He will induce them to live by the tithes and offerings of the faithful. He shall interdict pomp in dress, and all immorality in dances and songs. He will preach the gospel in person, and exhort all honest ladies to appear in public without any ornament of gold or precious stones. After having occupied the Holy See for a long period of time he shall happily return to the Lord.

"His three immediate successors shall be men of exemplary holiness. One after the other will be models of virtue, and shall work miracles, confirming the teaching of their predecessors. Under their government the Church shall spread, and these Popes shall be called the Angelic Pastors."

#### **98. *Bishop Christianos Ageda* (d. 1204)**

"In the twentieth century France's union with England will prove to be her utter destruction: for there will be great shedding of blood by the people of the Kingdom. There will be wars and fury which will last long: provinces divested of their people and kingdoms in confusion; many strongholds and noble houses shall be destroyed and their cities and towns shall be forsaken of their inhabitants; in divers places the ground shall be untitled and there shall be great slaughter of the nobility; their sun shall be darkened and never shine again, for France shall be desolate and her leader destroyed. There shall be great mutations and changes of kings and rulers, for the right hand of the world shall fear the left and the north prevail over the south."

#### **99. *Roger Bacon* (d. 1294)**

There shall arise a "righteous true and holy priest to reform the Church. The Greeks will return (to the

Church), the Tartars will be converted, the Saracens destroyed, there will be one fold and one shepherd."

**100. *John of Vatiguerro (13th cent.)***

"Spoliation, devastation and pillage of that most famous city, which is the capitol and mistress of the whole kingdom of France," will take place when the Church and world will be grievously troubled: "The Pope will change his residence; the Church will not be defended for the duration of twenty-five months, and more, because during all this time there will be no Pope, no Emperor of Rome and no ruler in France. Afterwards a young captive prince shall recover the crown of the Lilies and shall extend his dominion over all the universe. Once established he shall destroy the Sons of Brutus<sup>1</sup> and their Isle so that their memory shall pass into everlasting forgetfulness.

"After many tribulations a Pope will be elected out of those who escaped persecution. He, by his sanctity, will reform the clergy and the whole world will venerate them for their virtue and perfection. He will travel barefoot and be devoid of fear. Almost all unbelievers and the Jews will be converted and there will be one law, one faith, one baptism, one life. All people will love one another and peace will last a long time.

**101. *Werdin d'Otrante (13th cent.)***

"The Great Monarch and the Great Pope will precede Anti-Christ."

"The nations will be in wars for four years and a great part of the world will be destroyed. All the sects will vanish. The capital of the world will fall. The Pope will go over the sea carrying the sign of redemption on his forehead, and after the victory of the Pope and the Great Monarch peace will reign on earth."

"The Pope will cross the sea in a year when the Feast of St. George (April 23rd) falls on Good Friday, and St. Mark's feast (April 25th) falls on Easter Sunday, and the feast of St. Anthony (June 13th) falls on Pentecost and the feast of St. John the Baptist (June 24th) falls on Corpus Christi" (all these concurrences will take place in the year 1943, not again until 2038).

"The Great Monarch will come to restore peace and the

<sup>1</sup>Whether this phrase which occurs also in prophecy 102a means Englishman (because of the Robert "Bruce") or traitorous rulers is not evident.

Pope will share in the victory."

**102a. *Prophecy of Orval (13 cent.)***

"Howl, ye sons of Brutus.<sup>1</sup> Call upon you the wild beasts, which are ready to devour you. God alone is great! What booming of arms! There is not yet a full number of moons, and, behold, many warriors are coming. What fire goes together with his (God's?) arrows! Ten times six moons, and again six times ten moons have nourished his wrath. Woes to thee, populous city (Paris) I Behold kings armed by the Lord! . . . But fire hath already burned thee to the ground. . . . Thy just ones, however, shall not perish; God has heard them; the place of wickedness is purged by fire; the ample river (Seine?) has carried to the sea its waters all red with blood."

"It is finished. The mountain of God desolated (the Church) has cried to God, the children of Juda have invoked God from a strange land, and behold, God is no longer deaf. France, that appeared disintegrated, is on the point of being united. God loves peace. Come, young Prince, leave the Island of Captivity. Join the lion to the white flower. Come. God wills what has been foreseen. The ancient blood of centuries will also put an end to long divisions. Then shall be seen in France one shepherd only.

"The powerful man, assisted by God, will establish himself well. Many wise laws shall restore peace. The scion of Capet will be so prudent and wise that all men will believe God to be with him. Thanks to the Father of mercies, the Holy Sion (Catholic Church) sings again in the temples, One only God. Many poor wandering sheep shall come to drink of the living spring of truth and grace. Three princes and kings shall throw off the garb of error, and will see clearly in the faith of God. At this time two-thirds of a great nation of the sea (England?) shall return to the true faith."

**102b. *St. Gertrude (13th cent.)***

"The love of the Incarnate Word as exemplified by His Divine Heart is reserved for the last ages to be made known; so that the world, carried away by follies, may regain a little of the warmth of early Christian Charity by learning of the love of the Sacred Heart."

**103a. *Abbot Herman of Lehnin (d. 1300)***

Towards the end of the world "Israel will commit a

<sup>1</sup>See note on prophecy 100.

terrible crime for which it will suffer death."

**103b.** "(In Germany) the Shepherd (pope) recovers his flock and the people their King. An era of prosperity follows."

**104a. *Brother John of the Cleft Rock (1340)***

"Toward the end of the world the tyrants and the hostile people will suddenly rob the prelates and clergy of the Church of all their possessions and grievously afflict and martyr them. The ones who heap the most abuse upon them will be held in high esteem. The clergy cannot escape these persecutions, but because of them all servants of the Church will be forced to lead an apostolic life. At that time the Pope, with the Cardinals, will have to flee Rome under trying circumstances to a place where he will be unknown. He will die a cruel death in this exile. The sufferings of the Church will be much greater than at any previous time in her history."

**104b.** "All kingdoms will have to unite in the fight since the Cock (France?), the Leopard (England?), and the White Eagle (Russia?) will not be able to overcome the Black Eagle (Germany) , unless aided by the prayers and vows of all mankind. The Black Eagle will attack the Cock which will lose many of his feathers, but will strike heroically with its spurs—it would soon be exhausted were it not for the help of the Leopard and its claws. The Black Eagle from the land of Luther will surprise the Cock from another side and will invade half of the land of the Cock. The White Eagle coming from the North will attack the Black Eagle; and the other Eagle will invade his land from one end to the other.

"The Black Eagle will find himself compelled to let the Cock go in order to fight the White Eagle, but the White Eagle and the Cock will pursue the Black Eagle into his own land, thus helping the White Eagle. The battles waged until then will be trifling to those that will take place in the land of Luther because the seven angels simultaneously pour fire from their censors on the impious land of Luther.

"When the Beast sees that he is lost he will become furious—it is ordained that for several months the beak of the White Eagle, the claws of the Leopard, and the spurs of the Cock must tear his vitals. Rivers will be forded over masses of dead bodies: in some places this will change the course of waters—only the great will receive burial for the

carnage caused by firearms will but be added to the numberless dead due to famine and plague.

"The Black Eagle will ask for peace again and again, but the seven angels who preceded the three animals (defenders of the Lamb) have declared that victory must involve the absolute crushing of the Black Eagle. As a consequence, the executors of the justice of the Lamb (the three animals) cannot stop the fighting as long as the Black Eagle has a soldier left to defend him. This ruthless sentence of the Lamb against the Black Eagle is because he has claimed to be a Christian and to be acting in the name of God—hence if he did not perish the fruit of the Redemption would be lost and the gates of Hell prevail against the Savior. "It is obvious that this combat, which will be fought where the Black Eagle forges his arms is no human contest . . .

"The three animals (defenders of the Lamb) will exterminate the Black Eagle's last army, but the battlefield (Westphalia?) will become a funeral pyre larger than the greatest cities with the corpses changing the very landscape. The Black Eagle will lose his crown and will die abandoned and insane—his Empire will be divided into twenty-two states with neither fortifications, army nor navy."

**104c.** "The White Eagle (Great Monarch) , by order of the Archangel Michael, will drive the crescent from Europe where none but Christians will remain—he himself will rule from Constantinople. An era of peace and prosperity will begin for the world. There will no longer be Protestants or Schismatics; the Lamb will reign and the bliss of the human race will begin. Happy will they be who have escaped the perils of that terrible time, for they can taste of its fruit through the reign of the Holy Ghost and the sanctification of mankind, which can be accomplished only after the defeat of the Black Eagle.

**104d.** "God will raise up a holy Pope over whom the angels will rejoice. Enlightened by God, this man will reconstruct almost the entire world through his holiness and lead all to the true faith, and everywhere fear of God, virtue, and good morals will be dominant. He will lead all erring sheep back to the fold, and there shall be only one faith, one law, one rule of life, one baptism on earth. All men will love each other and do good, and all quarrels and war will disappear."

**105. *Richard Rolle of Hampole (d. 1349)***

"There will be a general defection from the Church near the end of the world, especially regarding obedience to Her."

**106a. *St. Bridget of Sweden* (d. 1373)**

"The son of man, the parvenu of the sea, shall be most invincible in war and shall subdue all Germany. The great house (German Empire?) shall almost be pulled down. At last the Eagle will come from the North to the West, and shall, together with her children, be surrounded by the towers of Spain and they will raise Germany up again. The Eagle will also invade Mahometan countries and will carry the admirable sign in the land of promise (Palestine). Peace and abundance shall return to the world.

"This most unhappy war shall end when an emperor of Spanish origin will be elected, who will, in a wonderful manner, be victorious through the sign of the Cross. He shall destroy the Jewish and the Mahometan sects: he will restore the church of Santa Sophia (in Constantinople), and all the earth shall enjoy peace and prosperity; and new cities will be erected in many places."

**106b.** "Let the Greeks know that their empire, their kingdoms, or dominions, shall never be secure or in settled peace, but will always be held in subjection by their enemies, from whom they shall have to suffer most grievous hardships and constant distresses: until, with true humility and good will, they shall have devoutly submitted themselves to the Church of Rome and to her faith, conforming themselves entirely to the holy ordinances and rites of that Church.

"When the Feast of St. Mark (April 25) shall fall on Easter, the Feast of St. Anthony (June 13) on Pentecost, and that of St. John (June 24th) on Corpus Christi, the whole world shall cry, Woe!" (These feasts concur in 1943 but not again till 2038).

**106c.** "The time of Anti-Christ will be near when the measure of injustice will overflow and when wickedness has grown to immense proportions, when the Christians love heresies and the unjust trample underfoot the servants of God."

**107. *St. Catherine of Siena* (d. 1380)**

"The bride (Church) now all deformed and clothed in rags, will then gleam with beauty and jewels and crowned with the diadem of all virtue. All believing nations will rejoice and have such excellent and holy shepherds, and the

unbelieving world, attracted by the glory of the Church, will be converted to her."

**108. *Cyril the Hermit* (14th cent.)**

"A German ruler will persecute priests and monks and do much harm to the Church."

**109. *Dolciano* (14th cent.)**

"Under a Holy Pope there will be universal conversion."

**110. *Cardinal d'Ally* (d. 1414)**

"If the world last until those times, which God alone knows, there will occur many great and wonderful renovations and changes in the world, especially regarding laws."

**111. *St. Vincent Ferrer* (d. 1418)**

"Armies from West, East and North will fight together in Italy and the Eagle (Great Monarch?) shall capture the counterfeit king, and all things shall be made obedient unto him, and there shall be a new reformation in the world. Woe then to the shaven orders whose crowns are shaved. (Religious who cannot disguise themselves?)

"In the days of peace that are to come after the desolation of revolutions and wars, before the end of the world, the Christians will become so lax in their religion that they will refuse to receive the Sacrament of Confirmation, saying 'it is an unnecessary Sacrament'; and when the false prophet, the precursor of Anti-Christ comes, all who are not confirmed will apostatize, while those who are confirmed will stand firm in the faith, and only a few will renounce Christ."

**112. *Fr. Jerome Votin* (d. 1420)**

"Woe! yes, thousand times woe, to the people who rebelled against all authority, and abolished the laws; they pulled up from the root the source of their prosperity; they tore to pieces the Lily but the Eagle shall seize upon them; it shall catch and destroy its prey, said the Spirit. The earth shall be deluged with the blood of its inhabitants. Her children, armed with iron, shall perish by the sword. Her innumerable calamities, says the Lord, shall not appease my wrath. My right hand shall be lifted up against the people; the power that will oppress them shall be my instrument of indignation against them, and against other nations. This is what the Spirit says.

"Some time after four centuries the altars of Beelzebub shall be destroyed. The workers of iniquity shall be punished and shall perish; the heavenly dew shall fall upon the desolated earth, and over the Church afflicted. A son of royal blood shall be born from the race of Artois. He shall govern France with prudence and with honor; the spirit of God will be with him; the Spirit said so.

"Before the end of the nineteenth century, another Pastor (a pope) shall rise (be born?) who will lead the people in equity, and the kings in justice. He shall be honored by princes and by the people; but before his empire is established, let those who have not bowed down before Baal fly from Babylon.

"Let everybody think how to save his life; for behold the time wherein the Lord will have, with the severity of His punishments, to demonstrate the multitude and enormity of the crimes with which she (Babylon) is defiled. The Lord will cause to revert upon that city all the evils with which she, has tyrannized over others. This impious city, the ravager of nations, the executioner of her own priests, of her kings, and of her own children, has been used by the Lord as the hand for presenting the cup of his vengeance to all the nations of the earth. All nations have drunk the wine of her frenzy; they shall suffer the anguish of her captivity and of her barbarity.

"But on a sudden this Babylon is fallen and in her fall she is broken to pieces, said the Spirit. All this shall come to pass for the purification of the just, and for the destruction of the wicked; in order to make men honor the Church of God, and fear and serve the Lord.

"Such are the words which the Spirit revealed to his servant Jerome, who wrote these things by his orders, the truth of which shall, in due time, be acknowledged."

### **113a. *St. John Capestran* (d. 1456)**

"There shall arise a certain grave and constant man near Aquisgrave of the Rhine; who being chosen, shall restore the Apostolic Discipline: and in the third incursion of time, shall prevail and do great things; and there shall be of his race to the day of judgment."

### **113b. (*On the Last Eight Popes*)**

The ox shall again be full of life and his trumpets shall resound with sweet lowing. (Pius XI.)

A great city beast (Industrialism?) shall succeed and devour the pastures of little ones. (Pius XII.)

He shall come from the North Wind (Aquilone) , enter into the Sanctuary and the Church will renew her seed. (Angelic Pastor.)

He shall explain the ten heads of the Dragon (water serpent) and he shall destroy in the Holy Land the Author of Wickedness. (Pastor and Sailor.)

The people will be dying with hunger when he is created (Cardinal?) who will divide and give to the poor. (Flower of Flowers.)

The Tree shall give forth its fruits, but the destroying beast shall devour them. (From the Half Moon.)

The brightness of the exposed countenance shall be lifted, and the faces of the proud shall fall before the face of the oppressor. (The Glory of the Olive Tree.)

There shall be signs of the sun and moon when there shall be created a man stronger than any prince, and he shall renew the face of the Church. At this time Anti-Christ shall have been trodden under foot and all the world shall enjoy the faith and peace of the Most High. (Peter the Roman.) (See no. 82, 136) .

### **114a. *St. Francis de Paul* (1470)**

"From your lordship, (Simeon de Limena, Lord of Montalto) , shall be born the great leader of the holy militia of the Holy Spirit, which shall overcome the world, and shall possess the earth so completely that no king or lord shall be able to exist, except he belongs to the sacred host of the Holy Ghost.)

These devout men shall wear on their breasts, and much more within their hearts, the sign of the living God, namely, the cross.

"The first members of this holy order shall be natives of the city of . . . where iniquity, vice, and sin abound. However, they shall be converted from evil to good; from rebels against God they shall become most fervent and most faithful in His divine service. That city shall be cherished by God and by the Great Monarch, the elect and the beloved of the Most High Lord. For the sake of that place all holy souls who have done penance in it shall pray in the sight of God for that city and for its inhabitants. When the time shall come of the immense and most right

justice of the Holy Spirit, His Divine Majesty wills that such city become converted to God, and that many of its citizens follow the great prince of the holy army. The first person that will openly wear the sign of the living God shall belong to that city, because he will through a letter be commanded by a holy hermit to have it impressed in his heart and to wear it externally on his breast.

"That man will begin to meditate on the secrets of God, about the long visitation which the Holy Spirit will make and the dominion that he will exercise over the world through the holy militia. O happy man, who shall receive from the Most High the greatest privileges! He will interpret the hidden secrets of the Holy Ghost, and he shall often excite the admiration of men by his revealed knowledge of the internal secrets of their hearts. Rejoice, my Lord, because that Prince above other princes, and King over other kings, will hold you in the greatest veneration, and after having been crowned with three most admirable crowns, will exalt that city, will declare it free, and the seat of the Empire, and it shall become one of the first cities in the world."

**114b.** "You and your consort desire to have children; you shall have them. Your holy offspring shall be admired upon earth. Among your descendants there will be one who shall be like the sun amidst the stars, he shall be a first-born son; in his childhood he will be like a saint; in his youth, a great sinner; then he will be converted entirely to God and will do great penance; his sins will be forgiven him, and he shall become a great saint.

"He shall be a great captain and prince of holy men, who shall be called 'the holy Cross-bearers of Jesus Christ,' with whom he shall destroy the Mahometan sect and the rest of the infidels. He shall annihilate all the heresies and tyrannies of the world. He shall reform the Church of God by means of his followers, who shall be the best men upon earth in holiness, in arms, in science, and in every virtue, because such is the will of the Most High. They shall obtain the dominion of the whole world, both temporal and spiritual, and they shall support the Church of God until the end of time."

**114c.** "God Almighty will exalt a very poor man of the blood of the Emperor Constantine, son of St. Helena. and of the seed of Pepin, who shall on his breast wear the sign which you have seen at the beginning of this letter (a red Cross). Through the power of the Most High he shall confound the tyrants, the heretics, and infidels. He will

gather a grand army, and the angels shall fight for them; they shall kill all God's enemies."

**114d.** "From the beginning of the world, after the creation of man, and to the end of human generation, there have been and there shall be seen wonderful events upon the earth. Four hundred years shall not pass when his Divine Majesty shall visit the world with a new religious order much needed, which shall effect more good among men than all other religious institutions combined. This religious order shall be the last and the best in the Church; it shall proceed with arms, with prayer, and with hospitality. Woe to tyrants, to heretics, and to infidels, to whom no pity shall be shown, because such is the will of the Most High! An infinite number of wicked men shall perish through the hands of the Cross-bearers, the true servants of Jesus Christ. They shall act like good husbandmen when they extirpate noxious weeds and prickly thistles from the wheat field. These holy servants of God shall purify the earth with the deaths of innumerable wicked men."

**114e.** "How spiritually blind are those persons who, having no thought about the things of God, fix their end in earthly objects. Wretched men? by far worse than the very beasts which are guided by their senses, because they cannot have reason; but when men abandon the use of their reason, they become brutalized. Hence they shall ever be in confusion. Let, therefore, the princes of this world be prepared for the greatest scourges to fall upon them. But from whom? First from heretics and infidels, then from the holy and most faithful Crossbearers elected by the Most High, who, not succeeding in converting heretics with science, shall have to make a vigorous use of their arms. Many cities and villages shall be in ruins, with the deaths of an innumerable quantity of bad and good men. The infidels also will fight against Christians and heretics, sacking, destroying, and killing the largest portion of Christians. Lastly, the army, styled 'of the Church,' namely, the holy Cross-bearers, shall move, not against Christians or Christianity, but against the infidels in pagan countries, and they shall conquer all those kingdoms with the death of a very great number of infidels. After this they shall turn their victorious arms against bad Christians, and shall destroy all the rebels against Jesus Christ. These holy Cross-bearers shall reign and dominate holily over the world until the end of time. The founder of these holy men shall, my lord, be one of your posterity. But when shall this take place? When

crosses with the stigmas shall be seen, and the crucifix shall be carried as the standard.

"The time is coming when his Divine Majesty will visit the world with a new religious order of holy Cross-bearers, who will carry a crucifix, or the image of our crucified Lord, lifted up upon the principal standard in view of all. This standard will be admired by all good Catholics; but at the beginning it will be derided by bad Christians and by infidels. Their sneers shall, however, be changed into mourning when they shall witness the wonderful victories achieved through it against tyrant, heretics, and infidels. Many wicked men and obstinate rebels against God shall perish: their souls will be plunged into hell. This punishment shall fall upon all those transgressors of the Divine commandments who with new and false doctrines will attempt to corrupt mankind and turn men against the ministers of God's worship. The same chastisement is due to all obstinate sinners, but not to those who sin through weakness, because these being converted, doing penance, and amending the conduct of their life, shall find the divine mercy of the Most High full of kindness towards them. O holy Cross-bearers of the Most High Lord, how very pleasing you will be to the great God much more than the children of Israel! God will, through your instrumentality, work more wonderful prodigies than he has ever done before with any nation. You shall destroy the sect of Mahomet, and all infidels of every kind and of every sect. You shall put an end to all the heresies of the world by extinguishing all tyrants. You will remove every cause of complaint by establishing a universal peace, which shall last until the end of time. You will work the sanctification of mankind. O holy men: People blessed of the Most Holy Trinity! Your victorious founder shall triumph over the world, the flesh, and the Devil.

"One of your posterity shall achieve greater deeds and work greater wonders than your lordship. That man will be a great sinner in his youth, but like St. Paul he shall be drawn and converted to God. He shall be the great founder of a new religious order different from all the others. He shall divide it into three classes, namely: 1. Military knights; 2. Solitary priests; 3. Most pious hospitallers. This shall be the last religious order in the Church, and it will do more good for our holy religion than all other religious institutes. By force of arms he shall take possession of a great kingdom. He shall destroy the sect of Mahomet, extirpate all tyrants and heresies. He shall bring the world to a holy mode of life. There will be one fold

and one Shepherd. He shall reign until the end of time. On the whole earth there shall be only twelve kings, one emperor, and one pope. Rich gentlemen shall be very few, but all saints. May Jesus Christ be praised and blessed; for He has vouched to grant to me, a poor unworthy sinner, the spirit of prophecy, not in an obscure way, as to His other servants, but has enabled me to write and to speak in a most clear manner. I know that unbelieving and reprobate persons will scoff at my letters and will reject them; but they will be received by those faithful Catholic souls who aspire to the possession of heaven. These letters shall infuse such sweetness of divine love in their hearts, that they will be delighted in perusing them often, and in taking copies of them, because such is the will of the Most High. In these letters it will be found out who belongs to our blessed Lord Jesus Christ and who does not, who is a predestinate or a reprobate. Much better will this be known through the holy sign of the living God. He shall be a saint of God who will take it, love it, and wear it."

**115. *Monk Hilarion (see no. 81)***

"After the World War they will make peace but not a lasting peace. They will immediately begin again preparing to strike at one another."

**116. *Bl. Johannes Amadeus de Sylva (d. 1482)***

"In the latter days there shall be great wars and bloodshed. The fury of the wars shall last a long time. Whole provinces shall be left naked, and uninhabited, many cities forsaken of people, the nobility slaughtered, principal persons ruined, great changes of Rings, commonwealths and rulers."

117. "Germany and Spain will unite under a great prince designated by God. After much slaughtering, the other nations will be forced to come into this union. There is no hope for the unbelievers until all Germany becomes converted; then all will happen quickly. Because of Germany's unfaithfulness, the time will be prolonged until all countries unite under the Great Ruler. After this union mass conversions will take place by the command of God, and peace and prosperity will follow."

**118a. *Nicholas of Fluh (d. 1487)***

"The Church will sink still deeper until she will at last seem to be extinguished, and the succession of Peter and the other Apostles to have expired. After that she will be victoriously exalted in the sight of all doubters."

**118b. *Nicholas of Fluh and Dionysius Ryckel***

"The Church will be punished because the majority of Her members—high and low—will become so perverted."

**119. *Bernard de Busto (d. 1490)***

"At the time when Anti-Christ is about twenty years old, most of the world will have lost the faith."

**PROPHETS OF THE XVI AND XVII CENTURIES**

**120. *One of the Founders of the Jesuits (1534)***

"The time will come when the Jesuits will be driven out like dogs—And again; other times will come when they will return like nobles."

**121. *Blessed Catherine of Racconigi (1547)***

"After three centuries, a descendant of Frances I of France will rule Europe like Charlemagne."

**122a. *Mother Shipton (d. 1551)***

"The time will come when England shall tremble and quake for fear of a dead man that shall be heard to speak. 'Unhappy he that lives to see those days, but happy are the dead' Shipton's wife says." "Then will the Dragon give the Bull a great snap, and when the one is down they will go to London Towne. . . . Then will the ravens sit on the Cross and drink as much blood of the nobles as the commons—then woe is me—for London shall be destroyed forever after. . . . and then York shall be London and the Kingdom governed by three Lords appointed by a Royal Great monarch of the best blood in the world, who will set England aright and drive out heresy, and after this shall be a white harvest of corn gotten in by women."

**122b.** "Carriages without horses shall go,  
And accidents fill the world with woe.  
Around the earth thoughts shall fly  
In the twinkling of an eye;

The world upside down shall be,  
And gold be found at the foot of a tree.  
Through hills man shall ride,  
And no horse be at his side.

Under water men shall walk,  
Shall ride, shall sleep, shall talk.  
In the air men shall be seen  
In white, in black, in green;

Iron in the water shall float,  
As easily as a wooden boat.  
Gold shall be found and shown

In a land that's not now known,  
Fire and water shall wonders do,  
England shall at last admit a foe."

**122c.** All England's sons that plow the land  
Shall oft be seen with book in hand.  
The poor shall then most learning know,  
And water wind where corn doth grow;

Great houses stand in farflung vale,  
All covered o'er with snow and hail.  
Taxes for blood and war  
Shall come to every door.

And state and state in fierce strife  
Will seek after each other's life.  
But when the North shall divide the South  
An Eagle shall build in the Lion's mouth.

In London Primrose Hill shall be,  
Its center hold a Bishop's See.  
Three times shall lovely France  
Be led to play a bloody dance;

Before the people shall be free,  
Three tyrant rulers shall she see:  
Three times the people's hope is gone,  
Three rulers, in succession, be—  
Each sprung from different dynasty.

Then, when the fiercest fight is done,  
England and France shall be as one.  
The British olive next shall twine  
In marriage with the German vine.

England shall at last admit a Jew.  
The Jew that once was held in scorn  
Shall of a Christian then be born,  
A house of glass shall come to pass  
In England—but alas, alas!

A war will follow with the work  
Where dwells the Pagan and the Turk."

**122d.** "A great man shall come and go,  
Men walk beneath and over streams."<sup>1</sup>

**123a. *Nostradamus* (d. 1566)**

After Germany is prostrate "then a leader ("fuehrer" in German) shall arise from the barren state." (Austria was left barren of the fruit of conquest after World War I.) "He is quite different from former rulers and will come to guide the great empire. Far from joy and goodness will he be and base his parentage. Kingdoms will fall. Great unhappiness."

"Although nations talk peace, trouble brews everywhere. Militaristic parties rise in Germany and pagan cults revive. Opinions are not free and the people not enriched. The heir to the London government is overthrown for having made too many peace protests."

**123b.** "The German fuehrer will deliver the people from meek and voluntary slavery (of the Versailles Treaty?). They will deprive Jupiter (literally God, the Father) of his dignity and honor and place themselves under Mars (i.e., stake all on war). This for the sake of the free city (of Danzig?) in another little Mesopotamia (corridor between two rivers)."

"Germany shall initiate the war by unjustified alarms (war of nerves?) . Near the city which the Wolf (Poland) shall have entered (Poland occupied Danzig after World War I) the hostilities shall begin. A foreign army will despoil a great country. Its citizens will not be forgiven for their determination (to resist) , which will not be let long last, and thereby shall many be confounded."

"Many aids from people afar off desiring to oppose. Suddenly all will be hurried but for the time being they cannot resist." (Poland was prostrate in four weeks and her allies could not help her) .

**123c.** "A deep gate made by the queen will make the place strong and inaccessible (cutting the dykes) but the army of the three lions (shield of Holland) will be defeated because of a terrible thing done inside (German spies beyond the flood frustrated Holland's resistance)."

"On the night when all feel secure because of a feigned oath, it (Belgium) shall be betrayed to the enemy. The people of Leige shall rush upon Brabant" (those fleeing

<sup>1</sup>The second and fourth lines of this verse are missing. The order of the prophecies apparently has been tampered with.

from the east before the Germans blocked the roads to allied troops) .

**123d.** "Horrible war develops in the west. The next year (1940) a plague of fire and blood will visit old and young, even animals shall not escape. The gods (pagan ideals) will make man see that they are the authors of the conflict."

**123e.** "In the year when figures turned, shall be the same, then bloody France look to't, beware thy fame, for all thy cruelties done, then shall pay, and now approaches fast the reckoning day." (e.g., 1881; 1961; MCM; MCM plus XXXX)

**123f.** "Peace is coming on one side and war on the other; there was never so pleat a pursuing man; women shall bewail the innocent blood that shall be spilt—it shall be in France and on all sides. Foot and horse upon the second watch shall come in, destroying all by sea; they shall come into the harbor of

Marseilles: tears, cries and blood—never was so bitter a time. Brooks and rivers shall be a stopping to evil. The old flame of anger being not yet ceased, shall run through France. Take this as an oracle: houses, manors, palaces, sects shall be razed. He that the principality shall keep by cruelty, at last shall see a great army, by fire, blow most dangerously."

"A captain of Great Germany shall come to yield himself through pretended aid to the king of kings so that his revolt will cause great shedding of blood" (not necessarily Hess) .

"The Purveyor shall put all in disorder. When Mars (war) shall be in the sign of Aries joined with Saturn and Saturnith, the moon then shall be the greatest misfortune, the sun being then in its exaltation. O great Rome, thy ruin draweth near—not of thy walls; of thy blood and substance."

"France will be divided into two parts: one ruled by an old man for a while, but later the conqueror will deprive him of power."

**123g.** "A year after the Italian war, the Germans and French and the Spanish will fight for power—the 'schoolhouse of the Republics' will collapse in ruin— on the spot where it stood most people will die suffocated.

"King of Italy, flee. Flee Roman leader who is nearest to you. In the Apennines near Fiesole, a battle will take place; after it will follow a massacre, in which the leaders of the government will be seized people of the Church, of both sexes will not be spared.

"Before the attack a speech will be made in Milan and will be a deceptive move; by the Eagle's trap the oldest outpost of civilization will be beaten down by cannons—very few people will escape the fire and carnage.

"There will be tears, cries, and complaints and terrors—the government will be marked by bestial cruelty. This will take place in Switzerland, England, and Italy. Blood will flow and no one will be spared.

**123h.** "Because of the power of three realms the Holy See will be moved elsewhere. The blood of priests will flow in the streets and temples, as flows water after a furious rain. The Holy of Holies will be destroyed by Paganism and the Old and New Testament will be banished and burned.

"Armies shall fight in the air a great while, the Tree shall fall in the middle of the city; vermin, scabs, swords, firebrands in the face when the Monarch of Adria (Italy and Greece are on the Adriatic) shall fall."

**123i.** "Naples, Palermo and all of Sicily will be depopulated by order of a foreigner. In Corsica, Sardinia and Salerno the end of evils will follow famine, pest and war.

"The people of the isles (British?) long under siege will eventually gather a force sufficient to oppose and overcome their enemies. Those outside The Isles will be more famished afterwards than before the battle.

"Weep Milan, Lucca and Florence when your great leader ("Duce" in Italian) enters the war.

"The tyrant (of Italy?) will be slain at Port Selin, but the new ruler, being warlike in his vengeance, will not bring freedom to the people."

**123j.** "From Aquilo a great effort on the part of Hommasse (bad man) will cause Europe and the world to be fearful, but two eclipses (severe defeats?) will bring about his sudden overthrow, resulting in life and death to his people.

"The law of More' (Christian Utopia) will decay into another and more seductive teaching (Communism?)."

**123k.** "When St. George's day falls on Good Friday; when St. Mark's falls on Easter; when St. John's falls on Corpus Christi; then the end of the war will arrive." (1943 is one such year, the next will be 2038.) (See 106b.)

**123l.** "Arabian power will be installed in Europe—destruction by fire and sword will come with it. Meanwhile the great Asiatic Empire will spread across the sea and continents to destroy the Christian world. It will pass through Italy into France over the eternal snows (Alps?) and will strike all with its stick."

**123m.** "A German heart with Trojan blood shall be born. He will rise to great power. He will wipe out the foreign Arabic race and return the Church to her old supremacy.

"In a cycle of the lily (Bourbon) a great prince is born. He comes late (into the fray?), yet early (in age?) into his dominion. Saturn will be in Libra, its exaltation. (1951 is the next year for this occurrence. This dates the zenith of his power. If true the Anti-Christ can be expected shortly thereafter.)

"The Great Pastor shall enter Rome at the head of a large band of exiles, while the great Celt shall execute all those who united in the Alps for the Cock (France?).

"In a year when Saturn is in Aquarius together with the sun (e.g., June, 1944), the strong King will be crowned at Rheims and anointed at Aix."

**123n.** "Many shall come and talk of peace between Mon-arch and Lords very powerful: but it shall not be agreed to so soon if they do not show themselves more humble than their predecessors.

"While the Great Monarch is fighting victoriously over the Germans, the Italians and Arabs from Northern Africa will attack the South of France, but the Great Monarch will repulse them—many land and sea battles will occur on the south coast of France in the Mediterranean."

**123o.** "The New Pope will be elected at this time—related to the Great Monarch. He will begin his rule at Avignon, the new capitol of France, and later be restored to Rome by the Great Monarch."

**123p.** "He will crusade against the Arabs—and capture Constantinople and Jerusalem. He will be especially aided by Spain, then ruled by a King Charles.

"Orders issued at Avignon will be obeyed as far as the

Gulf of Persia.

"At the end of King Henry's reign the Orient will attack the Occident. With the death of Henry, peace will cease in Europe —a great cataclysm will follow (reign of Anti-Christ?) .

"The force of arms will be united with the sceptre—at a time of misery and calamitous war—shortly thereafter a new king will be anointed, who will reestablish peace."

**123q.** "After the seat is held seventeen years (Pius XI., Feb. 1922-Feb. 1939) , five shall change in the same length of years. (That would be five popes between 1939 and 1956.)

#### **124. *Gameleo***

"The Great Lion will arise when the Holy See has been moved to Mentz, and a Sabinian elected Pope. There will have been much dissension among the cardinals."

#### **125. *Telesphorus of Cozensa (d. 1388)***

"A powerful French monarch and French Pope will regain the holy land after terrible wars in Europe, convert the world and bring universal peace. They will overcome the German Ruler.

"Terrible wars among nations of Europe will follow the secularization of Church property."

#### **126. *Japanese prophecy (probably Christian)***

"When men fly like birds, ten great kings will go to war against each other, and the universe will be under arms."

#### **127. *David Poreaus (d. 1622)***

"The Great Monarch will be of French descent, large forehead, large dark eyes, light brown wavy hair and an eagle nose. He will crush the enemies of the Pope and will conquer the East."

#### **128a. *Fr. Balthassic Mas (1630)***

"I saw a land swallowed by the sea and covered with water, but afterwards I saw that little by little, the sea retreated and left the land visible, and the upper parts of the towers and turrets of the cities rose and appeared more beautiful than before being swallowed by the sea, and it was told me that was England."

#### **128b. *St. Margaret Mary (1674)***

"I understand that devotion to the Sacred Heart is a last effort of His love towards Christians of these latter times, by proposing to them an object and means so calculated to persuade them to love Him."

#### **129a. *Holzhauser (d. 1658)***

"When everything has been ruined by war; when Catholics are hard pressed by traitorous co-religionists and heretics; when the Church and her servants are denied their rights, the monarchies have been abolished and their rulers murdered . . . then the Hand of Almighty God will work a marvelous change, something apparently impossible according to human understanding. There will rise a valiant monarch anointed by God. He will be a Catholic, a descendant of Louis IX, (yet) a descendant of an ancient imperial German family, born in exile. He will rule supreme in temporal matters. The Pope will rule supreme in spiritual matters at the same time. Persecution will cease and justice shall reign. Religion seems to be oppressed, but by the changes of entire kingdoms it will be made more firm.

"He will root out false doctrines and destroy the rule of Muslimism. His dominion will extend from the East to the West. All nations will adore God their Lord according to Catholic teaching. There will be many wise and just men. The people will love justice, and peace will reign over the whole earth, for divine power will bind Satan for many years until the coming of the Son of Perdition (Anti-Christ).

"The reign of the Great Ruler may be compared with that of Caesar Augustus who became Emperor after his victory over his enemies, thereby giving peace to the world, also with the reign of Emperor Constantine the Great, who was sent by God, after severe persecutions, to deliver both the Church and State. By his victories on water and land he brought the Roman Empire under subjection, which he then ruled in peace."

**129b.** "On account of a terrible war Germany will wail, France will be the cause of all the woe, Germany will be miserably wounded, all will be impoverished. England shall suffer much. The King shall be killed.

"After desolation has reached its peak in England peace will be restored and England will return to the Catholic faith with greater fervor than ever before.

"The Great Monarch will have the special help of God and

be unconquerable.

"The Fifth Epoch of time dates from the reign of Charles V until the reign of the Great Monarch.

"The Sixth Epoch from the Great Monarch until Anti-Christ. This Sixth Epoch of the Church—the time of consolation—begins with the Holy Pope and the Powerful Emperor, and terminates with the reign of Anti-Christ. This will be an age of solace, wherein God will console His Church after the many mortifications and afflictions she had endured in the Fifth period, for all nations will be brought to the unity of the True Catholic Faith."

**129c.** The "Angel" is the Great Monarch; "From Heaven" means he will be a Catholic; "Clothed in clouds" implies he will be humble and modest; "Rainbow" he will bring peace to the world; "Sunshine" refers to his wisdom, talents and title; "Feet" refers to his power and zeal; "Open Book" he will rule with justice; "Right and Left Foot," he will exercise power over all the world; "Lion Voice," he will put fear into the wicked. (See above, no. 32c.)

**129d.** "Golden Crown" refers to his Holy Roman (German) Empire; "Cutlass" means his victorious army; the other "angel" refers to the Pope, (Angelic Pastor) , "Other angels" are the other helpers of the Great Monarch who will help him crush the Turks. (It may be that these "other angels" refer to other Popes who will reign at the same time as the Great Monarch but after the Angelic Pastor) . (See above, no. 32d.)

**130. *Sister Mary of Agreda* (d. 1665)**

"It was revealed to me that through the intercession of the Mother of God that all heresies will disappear. This victory over heresies has been reserved by Christ for His Blessed Mother. In the last times the Lord will especially spread the renown of His Mother: Mary began salvation and by her intercession it will be concluded. Before the second coming of Christ Mary must, more than ever, shine in mercy, might and grace in order to bring unbelievers

into the Catholic Faith. The powers of Mary in the last times over the demons will be very conspicuous. Mary will extend the reign of Christ over the heathens and Mohammedans and it will be a time of great joy when Mary, as Mistress and Queen of Hearts, is enthroned.

"An unusual chastisement of the human race will take place towards the end of the world."

**131. *Rudolph Gekner* (d. 1675)**

"A great prince of the North with a most powerful army will traverse all Europe, uproot all republics, and exterminate all rebels. His sword, moved by Divine power, will most valiantly defend the Church of Jesus Christ. He will combat in behalf of the true orthodox faith, and shall subdue to his dominion the Mahometan Empire. A new pastor of the universal Church (Pastor Funalis, Franciscan?) will come from the shore (of Dalmatia) through a celestial prodigy, and in simplicity of heart adorned with the doctrines of Jesus Christ. Peace will be restored to the world."

**132. *Dionysius of Luxemburg* (1682)**

"After the birth of Anti-Christ the people of the world will be very wicked and Godless. People of real virtue will be very scarce. Pastors in many places will neglect the service of God, and will live with women. Even the religious will crave for worldly things. The churches will be dreary and empty like deserted barns . . . at the time when Anti-Christ is about twenty years of age about the whole world will be without faith, subjects will be oppressed by rulers and others in authority. In every period of tribulation God aided His Church, and He will do it in the time before the coming of Anti-Christ. From the midst of His Church He will raise up a Christian ruler who will perform most remarkable deeds. With divine assistance, this ruler will not only lead erring souls back to the true faith but also deal a heavy blow to the foes of the empire, the Turks, take away their empire and restore it to Christianity."

**PREDICTIONS FROM THE 18TH CENTURY**

**133. *Monk of Werl* (published 1701)**

"The whole north of Europe will wage war against the whole south led by a strong monarch. This man will restore divine order in the Church, state and family, thus

giving true peace to the nations."

**134. *Father Lavinsky* (d. 1708)**

"The world will be harassed by civil wars and greater destruction than ever before. Germany will be partitioned

and have many enemies. Religion will be greatly oppressed and monks will be banished. During their banishment, the Cross, to the astonishment of all, will shine in double splendor through many lands because of the great ruler."

**135. *Blessed Louis de Montfort* (d. 1716)**

"The power of Mary over all devils will be particularly outstanding in the last period of time. She will extend the Kingdom of Christ over the idolaters and Moslems, and there will come a glorious era in which Mary will be the ruler and queen of human hearts." (See 130 and 179c.)

**136. *Monk of Padua* (1740; last eight of his twenty entries)**

1. "Here is the faith intrepid and a terrible immolation—King in Italy—Pius XI."

2. "Thou art the Angelic Pastor of Rome, O benevolent doctor, O most indulgent father—Hail, Gregory XVII, most Holy Father, necessary shepherd." (Pius XII now reigning did not take the name Gregory—next Pope?) .

3. "Hail, O wise shepherd and pilot, most prudent of the Roman people. Our Very Holy Father, Paul VII (Paul VI; Benedict XV did not assume the name Paul as foretold by the Monk of Padua). Behold, perfect peace returned."

4. "Behold the flower of flowers, behold the lily crowning the virtues of his native land and the most holy acts predicted by the Lord. Our Most Holy Father, Clement XV. Thou, Rome, his daughter, venerate this King of Peace."

5. "From the half-moon proceeds this pope sent to Rome by the Divine Doctor. Hail, O our well-beloved Father, Pius XII most Holy Mediator, Future Victim."

6. "Thanks to an excellent work of the sun, the earth has nourished the devoted flock of a most holy shepherd—our very Holy Father Gregory XVIII, a priest altogether admirable."

7. "Oh, what a messenger of peace of the glory of the olive tree, of the Lord, oh, what a protector, all filled with goodness!—the Pope, Leo XIV, energetic monarch, a glorious reign."

8. "In the last great desolation of the world the last High Priest of the true God will reign. Criminal Rome will

be destroyed and the terrible Judge, in glory, will judge all nations." (See no'. 82 and 113).

**137a. *Father Nectou, S. J.* (d. 1772)**

"When those things come to pass which will bring on the triumph of the Church, then will such confusion reign on earth that people will think God has permitted them to have their own contrary will and that the providence of God is not concerned about the world. The confusion will be so general that mankind will not be able to think aright, as if God had entirely withheld his providence from mankind, and that, during the worst crisis, the best that can be done would be to remain where God has placed us, and persevere in fervent prayer.

"Two parties will be formed in France which shall fight unto death. The party of evil will at first be stronger; the good side shall be weaker. At that time there shall be such a terrible crisis that people, frightened by events, shall believe that the end of the world is come. Blood shall flow in several large cities. The very elements shall be convulsed. It will be like a little general judgment. A great multitude of persons shall perish in these calamitous times. But the wicked shall never prevail. They indeed shall conspire for the destruction of the Church; but time shall not be allowed them, because this frightful crisis shall be of a short duration. When all will be considered lost, all shall be found safe.

"During this revolution (Communist?) , which shall very likely be general, and not confined to France, Paris shall be destroyed so completely that, twenty years afterwards, fathers walking over its ruins with their children, these will inquire what place that was. To whom they will answer: My child, this was formerly a great city, which God has destroyed on account of her crimes. Paris shall certainly be destroyed, but before this occurs, such signs and portents shall be observed, that all good people will be induced to fly away from it. After this most terrible event, everything shall return to order; justice shall reign in the world, and the counter-revolution shall be accomplished. The triumph of the Church will then be so complete that nothing like it shall ever be seen, for this will be the last victory of the Church upon earth. Those persons who shall behold this last revolution will thank God for having preserved them to witness this glorious triumph of the Church."

**137b.** "A man disliked by France will be placed on the throne; a man of the house of Orleans will be made king.

It is only after this event that the counter revolution shall begin.

"As when the fig tree begins to sprout and produce leaves, it is a certain sign that summer is near, so when England shall begin to wane in power, the destruction of Paris shall be near at hand. This shall be a sign. England shall, in her turn, experience a more frightful revolution than that of France. It shall continue long enough to give time to France to recover her strength, then she will help England return to order and peace."

**138. *Fr. Laurence Ricci, S. J. (d. 1775)***

"After the rule of Napoleon a time will come when the people will become poor and the world will be punished in three ways: wars, famines, and pestilences. At a time when the whole world seems doomed, God will intervene. With His aid, a valiant duke will arise, from the ancient German house which was humiliated by the French monarch. This great ruler will restore stolen Church property. Protestantism will cease and the Turkish empire will end. This duke will be the most powerful monarch on earth. At a gathering of men noted for piety and wisdom, he will, with the aid of the Pope, introduce new rules, and ban the spirit of confusion. Everywhere there will be one fold and one shepherd."

**139. *Capuchin Friar (1776)***

"All the ecclesiastics, both secular and regular, shall be stripped of all their possessions, and of every kind of property, and obliged to beg from lay persons their food and everything necessary for their support, and for the worship of God. All religious orders will be abolished, except one having the rules of the most rigid and most severe institute of the ancient monks. During these calamities the Pope shall die. Through the death of the Supreme Pontiff the Church will be reduced to the most painful anarchy, because from three hostile powers three popes will be contemporaneously elected: one Italian, another German, the third Greek, by force of arms, shall be placed on the throne. During this time much human blood shall be shed in Italy, and many cities, country towns, and castles shall be brought to ruin, with the death of many thousands of persons.

"By the Catholic clergy and people the true and lawful Pope will be elected, who shall be a man of great holiness and goodness of life, selected from the surviving monastic Order mentioned above.

"A scion of the Carolingian race, by all considered extinct, will come to Rome to behold and admire the piety and clemency of this Pontiff, who will crown him, and declare him to be the legitimate Emperor of the Romans, and from the Chair of St. Peter, the Pope will lift up the standard, the crucifix, and will give it to the new emperor.

"This new emperor, with the robust Italian and French people, and with those of other nations, will form a most powerful host, called the Church Army (see 114), through which he shall destroy the Ottoman Empire, all heresies, and shall also totally defeat the Emperor of the North, who is called Mystic Anti-Christ.

"The above mentioned new emperor, with the assistance of God and of the Pope, will cooperate to the reformation of abuses; will assume (with the free consent of the Pope) the management of the temporal government; will assign a decent pension to the Supreme Pontiff, and also the bishops and clergy; and they all, being detached from earthly covetousness, will live in peace, which shall last till the end of time.

"Finally, the Pope will select twelve subjects of his religion, whom he will send through the world to preach missions. They shall have the power of converting the nations to the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, excepting the Hebrews, who are reserved for the end of the world."

**140a. *Bernhardt Remboldt (d. 1783)***

"Cologne will be the scene of a terrible battle. Many foreigners will be slaughtered there: both men and women will fight for their faith. It will be impossible to prevent this horrible devastation. People will wade up to their ankles in blood. At last a foreign king (Great Monarch?) will appear and win a victory for the cause of the righteous. The remaining enemy will retreat to the birch tree (Westphalia?—see no. 89). There the last battle will be fought for the just cause.

"At that time France will be divided. The German Empire will select a simple man as the emperor, who will rule for a short time. His successor will be the man for whom the world has longed. He will be called a Roman emperor and give peace to the world. He will restore Siegburg and Heisterbach. He is the great monarch foretold by Holzhauser (See no. 129). At that time there will be no Jews in Germany and the heretics will admit their error. A good and happy era will follow. God will be praised on earth and war will be no more. . . . Then the fugitive

brothers and their children's children will return and continue to live in peace in their native land."

**140b.** "When the Emperor of Germany flees for his life a man who carries his crown for him will be the man the world has long expected. He will be called 'Roman Emperor' and will give peace to the world."

**141a. *Jane Le Royer* (d. 1798)**

"My Father, God has manifested to me the malice of Lucifer, and the perverse and diabolical intentions of his emissaries (secret societies) against the Holy Church of Jesus Christ. At the command of their master these wicked men have traversed the earth like furies, with the intention of preparing the way and the place for Anti-Christ whose reign is approaching. Through the corrupted breath of this proud spirit they have poisoned the minds of men. Like persons infected with pestilence, they have reciprocally communicated the evil to each other, and the contagion has become general. What convulsions! what scandals! The thick vapors which I have seen rising from the earth, and obscuring the light of the sun, are the false maxims of irreligion and of license (falsely called liberty), which in part originated in France, and in part came to us from abroad. These have succeeded in confounding all sound principles, and in spreading everywhere such darkness as to obscure the light both of faith and of reason. The storm began in France, which shall be the first theatre of its ravages, after having been its forge."

**141b.** "The Church in council assembled shall one day strike with anathemas, pull down and destroy the evil principles of that criminal constitution. I saw in God's essence a numerous assembly of ministers of the Church, who, like an army in battle array, and like a firm and unflinching column, shall sustain the rights of the Church, and of their Head, and shall reestablish its ancient discipline . . . What consolation, what joy,, for all the truly faithful! . . . I saw in the Divinity a great power, guided by the Holy Spirit, which shall destroy all the abuses of the Revolution; religions shall be abolished (Protestantism) ; the altars shall be reestablished, and religion shall more than ever flourish."

**141c.** "When the persecution against the Church has spread like a wild raging fire, even to places where it was thought there was no danger, then the Lord, who knows how to draw glory out of everything, will suddenly command the mighty fire stream (war?) and Satan to halt. Then will a universal peace be proclaimed."

**142. *Venerable Bartholomew de Saluzzo* (18th century)**

"Blessed friar of the Minorities, the Lord, after freeing thee from thy afflictions, will give thee great honor and glory (Angelic Pastor) . Fear not; thou shalt be endowed with very great courage, and pusillanimity shall fly from thee. Bear all thy trials with humble resignation, for the sake of the Lord. Reflect that He suffered more than thou, and He will communicate His power and strength to thee."

**143. *Helen Wallraff* (d. 1801)**

"Some day a Pope will flee from Rome in company of only four cardinals and come to Cologne." (Cologne was her home; probably wishful thinking.)

**144. *Sister Marianne* (d. 1804)**

"So long as public prayers will be made, nothing shall hap-pen; but a time will come when public prayers shall cease. People will say, 'things will remain as they are.' It is then that the great calamity shall occur. This great calamity shall consist: 1, in a great flight; 2, great tribulations in many large cities of France; 3, a horrible massacre in the capitol, namely, Paris. During the battle, people shall hear the noise of the cannon nine leagues distant (27 miles).

"Before the great combat the wicked shall be masters. They will perpetrate all the evils in their power, but not as much as they desire, because they shall not have the time. Good and faithful Catholics, less in number, shall be on the point of being annihilated, but a stroke from Heaven will save them (three days darkness?)

"O power of God! O power of God! All the wicked shall perish, and also many good men. O, how frightful shall these calamities be! The churches shall be closed, but only for the space of twenty-four hours. Religious women, being terrified, shall be on the point of abandoning the convent, but they shall remain. At this time such extraordinary events shall take place that the most incredulous will be forced to say, 'the finger of God is there.' O power of God! There shall be a terrible night, during which no one shall be able to sleep. These trials shall not last long, because no person could endure them. When all shall appear lost, all will be saved. It is then that dispatches shall arrive, announcing good news, when the Te Deum shall be sung, in a manner in which it has never been heard before. It is then that the Prince shall reign, whom people Will seek, that before did not esteem him."

At that time the triumph of religion will be so great that no one has ever seen the equal. All injustices will be repaired, civil laws will be formed in harmony with the laws of God

and of the Church. The instruction given to children will be most Christian; ! pious guilds for workmen shall be reestablished; the triumph of the Church and of France shall be most glorious."

## EARLY NINETEENTH CENTURY WORKS

### 145. *Josefa von Bourg* (d. 1807)

"God will choose a descendant of Constantine, Pepin and St. Louis, who has been tried by a long period of disappointment to come from exile to rule over Europe. He will have the sign of the cross on his breast and besides being a religious man, will be kind, wise, just and powerful. Under him the Catholic religion will spread as never before."

### 146. *Jean Paul Richter* (d. 1809)

"Through a terrible purgatory Europe will return to the faith."

### 147a. *Mother Maria Rafols* (Dated 1815; found, 1931)

"God begs me so insistently to write these things so that He might enable me to realize that poor sinners, no matter how obstinate, might, by reading these writings in the times to come, awake from their profound sleep and blindness and have recourse to His paternal and merciful Heart. Since they will be in need of His mercy, because of their ungratefulness they will forget Him and will even be anxious to obliterate His memory and His Blessed Name from this world.

"In the very difficult times to come the Sacred Heart of Jesus shall perform such wonders in this place (the Mother House of the Sacred Heart at Saragoza, Spain) , so as to win sinners away from their corrupted lives.

"In the times to come such shall be the corruption of morality in every social class that My Eternal Father shall be forced to destroy entire cities should they not reform after His merciful call. So great shall be the putrefaction that they shall scandalize and pervert even the innocent little children so dear to My Sacred Heart. When these documents shall be found (1931) these enormities will be taking place not only in Spain but throughout the entire world.

"It is also my wish, My daughter, that in My beloved Spain every province, city, town and individual be

consecrated to My Sacred Heart. Spain shall be the first nation to be consecrated to My Sacred Heart (It was, by King Alfonso) but I will not be satisfied with general consecration. I wish to preside over homes, families, professor's chairs, schools, offices, shops, and the cupolas of the churches. In every place I want My be-loved sons to see and venerate My image. Even in the mountains My image shall be exposed. No family shall be established where My Heart does not preside. I am ready to pour down My graces but I want to be asked for them with unlimited trust.

"I wish many communions of Reparation. Also there is the Feast of Christ the King that shall be instituted by My will, and at the proper time by My beloved son, Pius XI. I wish that it be surrounded with the greatest possible solemnity and splendor. I want My kingdom to be spread throughout the entire world. But in My beloved Spain this Divine fire is to burn with greater intensity, and from there they will carry it throughout the whole world.

"In the times to come there will be many souls who will propagate the devotion to My Divine Heart, and this shall be very agreeable to Me, but those that must do this the most are the sons of My company, for I have chosen them principally for this work so pleasing to Me.

"It is My wish that all men visit the Image of My Most Merciful Heart, and to those who devoutly carry it on their person, I promise great graces for eternal salvation.

"All those who wear My medal devoutly shall receive My special protection at the hour of their death.

"Those who wish to obtain the conversion of sinners shall obtain it from My Merciful Heart, by asking it through the mediation of My Most Holy Mother. To all those who seek Me with a lively faith and spirit of prayer, through the intercession of My Most Holy Mother, My Merciful Heart will give itself. I shall never refuse any graces which are asked Me through the intercession of My Most Holy Mother.

"It is My desire also that the Feast of My Sacred Heart be celebrated throughout the entire Catholic Church with the greatest solemnity, that it be made a holy day of obligation and that all the faithful receive Holy Communion on that day.

"Men offend Me also by the lack of love that they have for one another; the rich seek to exploit the poor and the poor rebel against the rich. It is My wish that there be peace and union and that they have great love one for the other. There are also many who do not desire to obey the commands of Holy Mother Church and My Vicar on earth. There are also many who persecute the Church and seek to destroy Her. Neither priests nor religious are respected, yet I desire that all be converted and perform acts of satisfaction to placate the wrath of the Divine Justice of My Eternal Father.

"I desire that priests be a living model of My image, and that all propagate devotion to My Divine Heart.

"There is, however, a thing which hurts My Heart still more, and that is to be offended, forgotten and despised by (souls consecrated to Me. Oh how much do I love my priests and how meager is their cooperation with My love. I have called each one of them and I want My priests to be the salt of the earth, to be holy, and to come to My tabernacle which is forgotten by so many of them. They forget that I love them with all My heart, that I want to be present in all their actions. Tell them to visit My tabernacle where I am waiting to teach and inspire them and to communicate My Spirit to them, so( that they may bring life to many souls. I want them to be very humble, poor, and chaste. Let them never forget that it is My greatest desire that they love one another: as I have loved them from the beginning and that lack of charity hurts My Sacred Heart. Let them cover their defects with the cloak of charity and thus avoid scandalizing the people.

"The Sacred Heart of Jesus was very sad on account of the offenses which He continually receives from men by reason of the sacrileges which they commit, and which they are going to commit during the years when this writing will be found, and also by reason of the coldness with which those who call themselves Christians are going to serve Him."

**147b.** "He, (the Sacred Heart) , makes me feel that, in the times to come, there shall be in Spain and all over the world, many persecutors of the religion and of the country, who will be anxious to destroy all good things;

and my sweet Jesus orders me to write these examples of his protection in order that they may keep up their spirit however big the wars and persecutions might be, having God with them they have nothing to fear. He will confuse the enemies of the Church, and many of them shall become zealous apostles, followers of St. Paul, who will conquer many souls for Him. I do not speak to you for your benefit, but for other sons of Mine, who one day shall be persecuted, and who shall be very uncertain and helpless in the combats prepared by the enemy, who shall try to wipe out not only religion, but even My name from the face of the earth. This period will begin openly in the year 1931.

"I am ready to pour out many graces upon My beloved Spain, which shall be persecuted so severely by Freemasonry. I will not let My faithful sons be overcome. Spain the beloved of My Blessed Mother, is My first beloved, and I would destroy all the nations of the world rather than let the Faith disappear from Spain.

"Many are they who persecute her (the Church) and seek to destroy her. Neither priests nor religious are respected, yet they are the select portion of My Church, and it is I Who receive all these offenses because it is to Me that they are done. Pray that fortitude be given to the Vicar of Christ (who shall be greatly persecuted) . For My Name, and for My Sake, at all times and in all places, they (the Jesuits) will be greatly persecuted, as I was, in My mortal life, and the enemy, jealous of the great good that they do for souls, will work to make them disappear, but I make it known to you, My daughter, and through you to all men, that they will prevail until the end of time despite their enemies, and I will bless greatly the nations and towns who welcome them with loving good will, and one of these nations I desire to be My Beloved Spain. I (Mother Rafols) feel that there will be a great religious persecution, very much like the one we now suffer. Let them have confidence that all will pass, and when it appears to them that the Lord sleeps He stands, ever on watch, and when He says 'Enough,' all His enemies shall be confounded."

**147c.** "My Sweet Jesus gave me to understand that many of His sons all over the world (when these writings shall be found) , guided by the infernal spirit, profaning and destroying temples, demolishing images, and above all, anxious to destroy His Blessed Name from the face of the earth. At hearing these things I was terribly impressed, and more yet when the Heart of Jesus and the Blessed Virgin made me see and feel more clearly, that the evil

spirit would be firmly bent upon Spain, even more than upon any other nation, working incessantly to destroy the Christian Faith from all its inhabitants, and, in a special way, they will be anxious to take away, and they will succeed, from the eyes of their little children so beloved by His Sacred Heart, His Image, and they will forbid that his Divine doctrine might be taught to them, all with the infernal purpose that He might be ignored. My Sweet Jesus answered—Do not be afraid: whatever means and machinations My unfortunate sons might invent to destroy the faith of Spain, they will not succeed, and I assure you, for your consolation and tranquility, that for the love of the just, pure and chaste souls that will always live in Spain, I will reign until the end of time in it, in a singular manner, and My Image will be venerated even in the streets and public squares.'

"The greatness and nobility of a nation shall depend on the faith and Catholic religion which exists there. If they lose their religion it shall be destroyed. I give them warning, through you, so that no one may deceive himself, and so that all may know the way that they must follow if they desire to please Me. They live apart from Him (His Heavenly Father) from My Catholic Church, from the orders of My Vicar on earth, and from My commandments. Oh, that I would find well-disposed at least the souls which are consecrated to Me. But, my daughter, many have abandoned Me, and prefer their desires, their self-love, their own glory, because of which they live a very worldly life, and their heart is taken up with these vile things, and for Me they have no room.

"The offenses that I have received, and those that I shall yet receive are many, especially woman, with her immodest dress, her nakedness, her frivolity and her evil intentions. Because of all this she shall accomplish the demoralization of the family, and of mankind. Such shall be the corruption of morality in every social class, and so great unchastity, that My Eternal Father shall be forced to destroy entire cities should they not reform after this merciful call.

"Ordinarily the corruption of the family always has been the origin of the public calamities, and of the destruction of the Christian Faith; for the first purpose of our common enemy is the destruction of the Christian family; once he attains this, the infernal enemy is sure of victory. Therefore the great evil of these times, and of the even worse than these that shall come, always has been and

always shall be to lose the memory and taste of the supernatural life, living only for earthly and sinful things;"

**147d.** "When those turbulent and calamitous times will come, the most powerful means to give satisfaction to His Eternal Father, will be to invoke His Most Holy Mother under the invocation of El Pilar, who is the Patroness and Protectrix of our beloved Spain, and that the mental and vocal prayer, meditating on the Five Sorrowful Mysteries of the most holy rosary will be the most substantial devotion, and most pleasing to the Virgin of El Pilar, in times of wars, pestilence and persecutions against our most holy religion."

**148. *Father Korzeniecki, O. P. (1819)***

St. Andrew Bobola appeared to him and caused him to see this vision which also he interpreted:

The priest saw an immense plain. Then the blessed martyr said to him: 'you behold now the fields of Pinsk, (Northern Poland) where I had the glory of suffering martyrdom for the faith of Jesus Christ.' He then beheld that vast field covered with Russian, Turkish, French, English, Austrian and Prussian armies, and others which he could not well discern, all of them fighting in a most furious manner one against the other. Not being able to comprehend the meaning of this vision, St. Andrew explained it to him in the following words: 'when the war which you see shall end, then the kingdom of Poland shall be re-established, and I shall be acknowledged its principal patron.' (Part of this was realized in 1918.) (Andrew Bobola was canonized by Pope Pius XI and would therefore now be in a position to be made Patron of Poland.)

**149. *Mathew Lang (d. 1820)***

"After the Great war (World War I) there will be no peace. The people will rise and all will fight against each other. . . . The rich and nobles will be killed. The world war will not make people better but much worse. . . . Tell your children that their children will live to see the time when the earth will be cleared. God will do away with people because there will be no charity among men. Religious faith will decline; priests will not be respected; people will be intent only on eating and drinking; there will be many immensely rich people and large numbers of paupers; great wealth will not endure long, for the red caps (Communists?) will come. People will hide in the forests and many will go into exile. After this civil conflict and

general clearing up people will love each other as much as previously they hated one another."

**150. Elizabeth Canori-Mora (d. 1825)**

"It seemed to me to behold the heavens opening, and St. Peter, Prince of the Apostles, coming down, surrounded with great glory, and by a numerous escort of heavenly spirits, singing canticles. St. Peter was dressed in his pontifical robes, and held in his right hand the pastoral staff, with which he was drawing upon the earth an immense cross; at the same time the angels sang these words of the Psalmist, 'You will constitute them princes over the whole earth.'

"After this the holy Apostle touched with his staff the four extremities of the cross, from which instantly sprung up four beautiful trees loaded with blossoms and fruits. These mysterious trees had the form of a cross, and were surrounded by a splendid light. Then I comprehended in the depth of my soul that St. Peter had produced these four symbolic trees to the end that they may serve as a place of refuge to the little flocks of the faithful friends of Jesus Christ, and in order to preserve them from the fearful punishment which shall convulse the whole earth. All good Christians shall then be protected under these trees, together with all those religious persons who shall have faithfully preserved in their hearts the spirit of their order. I say the same thing in relation to the secular clergy and to all other persons of every class who shall have kept in their heart the Catholic faith—they shall all be protected. But woe, to those religious who do not observe their rule! thrice unhappy they! for they shall all be struck by that terrible punishment. I say the same to all secular clergy, and to all classes of people in the world who give themselves to a life of pleasure, and who follow the false maxims of modern ideas, which are opposed to the holy precepts of the gospel. These wretched people, who through their scandalous conduct deny—the faith of Jesus Christ, shall perish under the weight of the indignant arm of God's justice. Not one of them shall be able to escape the punishment.

"I beheld these good Christians, who had sought a refuge under those mysterious trees, in the form of beautiful lambs confided to the care and vigilance of St. Peter, their good shepherd, testifying to him the most humble and most respectful obedience. As soon as St. Peter, the prince of the Apostles, had gathered the flock of Jesus in a place of safety, he re-ascended into heaven, accompanied by

legions of angels. Scarcely had they disappeared, when the sky was covered with clouds so dense and dismal that it was impossible to look at them without dismay. On a sudden there burst out such a terrible and violent wind, that its noise seemed like the roars of furious lions. The sound of the dreadful hurricane was heard over the whole earth. Fear and terror struck not only men, but the very beasts.

"All men shall rise one against the other, and they shall kill one another without pity. During this sanguinary conflict the avenging arm of God will strike the wicked, and in his mighty power he will punish their pride and presumption. God will employ the powers of hell for the extermination of these impious and heretical persons who desire to overthrow the Church and destroy it to its very foundation. These presumptuous men in their mad impiety believe that they can overthrow God from His throne; but the Lord will despise their artifices, and through an effect of His Mighty Hand He will punish these impious blasphemers by giving permission to the infernal spirits to come out from hell. Innumerable legions of demons shall overrun the earth, and shall execute the orders of Divine Justice by causing terrible calamities and disasters; they shall attack everything; they shall injure individual persons and entire families; they shall devastate property and alimentary productions, cities and villages. Nothing on earth shall be spared. God will allow the demons to strike with death those impious men, because they gave themselves up to the infernal powers, and had formed with them a compact against the Catholic Church.

"Being desirous of more fully penetrating my spirit with a deeper sentiment of His Divine Justice, God showed to me the awful abyss; I saw in the bowels of the earth a dark and frightful cavern, whence an infinite number of demons were issuing forth, who under the form of men and beasts came to ravage the earth, leaving everywhere ruins and blood. Happy will be all true and good Catholics! They shall experience the powerful protection of the holy Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul, who will watch over them lest they may be injured either in their persons or their property. Those evil spirits shall plunder every place where God has been outraged, despised, and blasphemed; the edifices they profaned will be pulled down and destroyed, and nothing but ruins shall remain of them.

"After this frightful punishment I saw the heavens opening, and St. Peter coming down again upon earth; he

was vested in his pontifical robes, and surrounded by a great number of angels, who were chanting hymns in his honor, and they pro-claimed him as sovereign of the earth. I saw also St. Paul descending upon the earth. By God's command, he traversed the earth and chained the demons, whom he brought before St. Peter, who commanded them to return into hell, whence they had come.

"Then a great light appeared upon the earth which was the sign of the reconciliation of God with man. The angels conducted before the throne of the prince of the Apostles the small flock that had remained faithful to Jesus Christ. These good and zealous Christians testified to him the most profound respect, praising God and thanking the Apostles for having delivered them from the common destruction, and for having protected the Church of Jesus Christ by not permitting her to be infected with the false maxims of the world. St. Peter then chose the new pope. The Church was again organized; religious orders were reestablished; the private families of ordinary Christians, through their great fervor and zeal for the glory of God, became like the most exemplary religious communities. Such is the glorious triumph reserved for the Catholic Church; she shall be praised, honored, and esteemed by all men. All men shall become Catholics, and shall acknowledge the Pope as Vicar of Jesus Christ." (Some of the above may refer to the time of Anti-Christ.)

**151. *Abbe Souffrand* (d. 1828)**

"The Great Ruler will perform such great and noble deeds that the infidels will be forced to admit the working of God's Providence. Under his reign the greatest righteousness will be practiced and the earth will bear in overabundance."

"Between the cries, 'Everything is lost,' and 'Everything is saved,' there will be scarcely any interval."

**152. *Nursing Nun of Belez* (d. 1830)**

"There will be a great slaughtering whereby the wicked will try to eradicate the religion of Jesus Christ. After they have killed a great number they will raise a cry of victory, but suddenly the good will receive help from above. This great crisis, in which eventually the good triumph, will be of short duration, namely, about three months. The majority of the wicked will perish and the living will be very much afraid over the chastisement of the others. They cannot but recognize the finger of God and adore His

omnipotence. Many will then be converted and order and justice restored."

**153. *Bishop George Michael Wittman* (d. 1833)**

"Woe is me! Sad days are at hand for the Holy Church of Jesus Christ. The Passion of Jesus will be renewed in the most dolorous manner in the Church and in her Supreme Head. In all parts of the world there will be wars and revolutions, and much blood will be spilled. Distress, disasters, and poverty will everywhere be great, since pestilential maladies, scarcity, and other misfortunes will follow one another.

"Violent hands will be laid on the Supreme Head of the Catholic Church; bishops and priests will be persecuted, and schisms will be provoked, and confusion reign amid all classes. Times will come, so pre-eminently bad, that it will seem as if the enemies of Christ and of His Holy Church, which He founded with His blood, were about to triumph over her. But the priesthood will remain firm and resolute, and good people will adhere faithfully to that body. A general separation will be made. The wheat shall be winnowed, and the floor swept. Secret societies will work great ruin, and exercise a marvelous monetary power, and through that many will be blinded, and infected with most horrible errors; however, all this shall avail naught. Christ says, He who is not with Me is against Me, and he who gathereth not with Me, scattereth. Scandals will be but too rife, and woe to those by whom they come! Although the tempests will be terrible, and will turn many in their passage, nevertheless they cannot shake the rock whereon Christ has founded His Church: "Portae inferi non prevalebunt."

"The faithful sheep will gather together, and in unions of prayer will offer potent resistance to the enemies of the Catholic Church. Yes, yes, the flock will become small. Many of you will see those sad times and days which will bring such evil in their train; but I shall not behold them. A marvelous thing will occur, but then hell will rise in opposition against it, and terrible agitation will ensue. Great confusion will reign amid princes and nations. The incredulity of the present day is preparing those horrid evils."

**154. *Bl. Casper del Bufalo* (d. 1837)**

He foretold "the destruction of impenitent persecutors of the Church during the three days darkness. He who outlives the darkness and fear of the three days—it will

seem to him as if he were alone on earth because of the fact that the world will be covered everywhere with carcasses."

**155. *Cardinal La Roque***

"A regeneration of Faith will appear in Asia through a descendant of Mohammed."

"Three nations will appear on the ocean with mighty fleets. In that time the Great Monarch will be in Europe. Devastating storms and earthquakes will frighten the inhabitants of Switzerland and remind them of their frailty. Plagues amongst humans and beasts will accompany the earthquakes. The sickle of death will harvest in Prussia, in palaces as well as in the houses of the poor, many will flee to England but to no avail, for even there death will overtake them. In 1938 will appear the Great Comet which will foreshadow these calamities."

**156a. *Blessed Maria Taigi (d. 1837)***

"God will ordain two punishments: One, in the form of wars, revolutions and other evils, will originate on earth; the other will be sent from Heaven. There shall come over all the earth an intense darkness lasting three days and three nights. Nothing will be visible and the air will be laden with pestilence, which will claim principally but not exclusively the enemies of religion. During this darkness artificial light will be impossible. Only blessed candles can be lighted and will afford illumination. He who out of curiosity opens his window to look out or leaves his house will fall dead on the spot. During these three days the people should remain in their homes, pray the Rosary and beg God for mercy.

"On this terrible occasion so many of these wicked men, enemies of His Church, and of their God, shall be killed by this divine scourge, that their corpses round Rome will be as numerous as the fish, which a recent inundation of the Tiber had carried into the city. All the enemies of the Church, secret as well as known, will perish over the whole earth during that universal darkness, with the exception of some few, whom God will soon after convert. The air shall be infected by demons, who will appear under all sorts of hideous forms.

After the three days of darkness, Saints Peter and Paul, having come down from heaven, will preach throughout the world and designate a new pope (see 150) . A great light will flash from their bodies and will settle upon the

cardinal, the future Pontiff. Then Christianity will spread throughout the world. Whole nations will join the Church shortly before the reign of Anti-Christ. These conversions will be amazing. Those who shall survive shall have to conduct themselves well. There shall be innumerable conversions of heretics, who will return to the bosom of the Church; all will note the edifying conduct of their lives, as well as that of all other Catholics. Russia, England, and China will come into the Church.

**156b.** "France shall fall into frightful anarchy. The French people shall have a desperate civil war, in which old men themselves will take up arms. The political parties having exhausted their blood and their rage, without being able to arrive at any satisfactory understanding, shall at the last extremity agree by common consent to have recourse to the Holy See. Then the Pope shall send to France a special legate, in order that he may examine the state of affairs and the dispositions of the people. In consequence of the information received, His Holiness himself shall nominate a most Christian king for the government of France."

**156c.** "Religious shall be persecuted, priests shall be massacred, the churches shall be closed, but only for a short time; the Holy Father shall be obliged to abandon Rome."

**157a. *Bro. Louis Rocco (d. 1840)***

"All over Europe there will rage terrible civil wars. God has long been patient with the corruption of morals. . . . He will destroy half of mankind. The poor will be rich and rich poor.

"Russia will witness many outrages; great cities as well as smaller towns will be destroyed and a bloody revolution will destroy half of the population; the royal family, the nobles and many of the clergy will be killed and the Russian Empire will be divided. Poland will become independent and develop into one of the principal Powers of Europe, whereas Hungary will disappear. In Constantinople, the cross will replace the half-moon of Muslimism and Jerusalem will be the seat of a king. Vienna will be hated by all nations, suffer great devastation and become a waste place. A venerable monarchy will collapse after many battles, but its ruling dynasty will be preserved. The kings and lords of Germany will abdicate. The king of Prussia will suffer particularly. The German sections of Austria will join Germany, so also will the commercial cities of Belgium and Switzerland. A Catholic descendant of a German

imperial house (Hapsburg?) will rule a united Germany with peace, prosperity and great power, for God will be with this sovereign (Great Monarch?) .

"The Slays of the South (Balkan states) will form a great Catholic empire and drive out of Europe the Turks, who will settle in Northern Africa and subsequently embrace the Catholic faith.

**157b.** "A Great Monarch will arise after a period of terrible wars and persecutions in Europe. He will be a Catholic; he will not be German (by birth?) ."

**157c.** La Salette (1846)

The Blessed Virgin is quoted as saying that after a terrible European war, there will arise a great ruler and his reign will be marked by peace and marvelous progress in Christianity.

**158a. *Mary Lataste* (d. 1847)**

"Pray for France; pray much and never cease from praying. France shall not perish. When disorder and confusion are at their height in France, the merciful God will intervene in a marvelous manner, overthrow the evildoers and restore order. Afflictions shall come over the earth. Oppression shall reign in the city which I love, and where I have left my heart. She shall be in mourning and desolation, surrounded on every side by her enemies, like a bird caught in the net. During three years and a little more, this city shall appear overcome. (This may refer to the time of Anti-Christ.) But my Mother will come down to that city; she will take the hand of the old man sitting on the throne, and will say to him: Lo! the hour is come; rise up; behold thy enemies! I make them disappear, one after the other, and they shall disappear forevermore. Thou hast given me glory both on earth and in heaven (See 179c). Behold, men venerate thy name, venerate thy courage, venerate thy power: thou shalt live, and I will live with thee. Dry up thy tears, old man; I bless thee!" (this probably refers to Rome and the Pope) .

**158b.** "Peace shall return to the world, because the Blessed Virgin Mary will breathe over the storms and quell them. Her name will be praised, blessed and exalted forever. Prisoners or captives shall recover their liberty; exiles shall return to their country, and the unfortunate or unhappy shall be restored to peace and happiness. Between the most august. Mary and her clients there will be a mutual exchange of prayers and graces, of love and

affection. From the east to the west, from the north to the south, all shall proclaim the holy name of Mary; Mary conceived without original sin, Mary queen of heaven and earth, Amen."

**159. *Sister Rose Asdenti of Taggia* (1847)**

"A great revolution will spread over all of Europe and peace will not be restored until the white flower, the lily (Bourbon) has taken possession of the throne of France. Not only religious communities, but also good lay Catholics, shall have their property confiscated. Many of the nobility shall be cast into prison. A lawless democratic spirit of disorder shall reign supreme throughout all Europe. There will be a general over-throw.

"There shall be great confusion of people against people, and nations against nations, with clashing of arms and beating of drums. The Russians and Prussians shall come to make war in Italy. They shall profane many churches, and turn them into stables for their horses. Some bishops shall fall from the faith, but many more will remain steadfast and suffer much for the Church.

"Many terrible calamities impend over Italy. Priests and religious\ shall be butchered and the earth, especially in Italy, shall be watered with their blood.

"The persecution in Italy is to begin by the suppression of the Jesuits; they shall be called back again; then a third time they will be suppressed and never more be revived.

"During a frightful storm against the Church, all religious orders will be abolished except two, namely, the Capuchins and the Dominicans, together with the Hospitaliers, who shall receive the pious pilgrims, who, in great numbers, shall go to visit and venerate the many martyrs in Italy, killed during the impending persecution." (See nos. 114e and 111.)

(Note: She also foretold the three days darkness and that England would return to the Unity of faith.)

**160. *Joseph Goires* (d. 1848)**

"The people will be united under a powerful monarch who will make new laws and banish corruption from the earth. To the Church will fall the task of rebuilding society. Before this man comes to save them, the people will realize how bitter it is to desert God."

**161. *Father Bernard Maria Clausi, O. F. M.* (d. 1849)**

"Before the triumph of the Church comes, God will first take vengeance on the wicked, especially against the Godless. It will be a new Judgment, the like has never been before and it will be universal. It will be so terrible that those who outlive it will imagine that they are the only ones spared. All people will then be good and contrite. This judgment will come suddenly and be of

short duration. Then comes the triumph of the holy Church and the reign of brotherly love. Happy, indeed, they who live to see those blessed days. However, before that, evil will have made such progress that it will look like all the devils of Hell were let loose on earth, so terrible will be the persecution of the wicked against the just, who will have to suffer true martyrdom."

## PROPHECIES FROM THE LATE NINETEENTH CENTURY

### 162. *Prophecy of Mayence (1854)*

"Woe to thee, great city (Paris) : woe to thee, city of vice! Fire and sword shall succeed fire and famine. Courage faithful souls! The reign of the dark shadow shall not have time to execute all its schemes. But the time of mercy approaches. A prince of the nation is in your midst. It is the man of salvation, the wise, the invincible, he shall count his enterprises by his victories. He shall drive the enemy out of France, he shall march from victory to victory, until the day of divine justice. That day he shall command seven kinds of soldiers against three to the quarter of Bouleaux between Ham, Woerl, and Padenborn. (Westphalia.) Woe to thee, people of the North, thy seventh generation shall answer for all thy crimes. Woe to the people of the East, thou shalt spread afar the cries of affliction and innocent blood. Never shall such an army be seen. Three days the sun shall rise upwards on the heads of the combatants without being seen through the clouds of smoke. Then the commander shall get the victory; two of his enemies shall be annihilated; the remainder of the three shall fly toward the extreme East."

### 163a. *Cure of Ars (d. 1859)*

"After this victory their enemy (the Prussians) shall not quit entirely the occupied country. They shall come back (for a second invasion of France) ; but this time our army shall fight well everywhere. For during the first war our men would not combat well, but in the second war they will fight. O how they will fight!

"The enemy will allow the burning of Paris, and they will rejoice at it, but they shall be beaten; they shall be driven entirely from France. Our enemies shall return, and will destroy everything in their march. They shall arrive near Poitiers without meeting with any serious resistance, but there they shall be crushed by the defenders of the West, who shall pursue them. From other directions their provisions shall be cut off, and they shall suffer very

serious losses. They will attempt to retire toward their country, but very few of them shall ever reach it. All that they took from us shall be returned, and a great deal more.

"The Communists of Paris, after their defeat, shall spread themselves through all France, and will be greatly multiplied. They shall seize arms; they shall oppress people of order. Lastly, a civil war shall break out everywhere. These wicked people shall become masters in the north, east, and southwest. They will imprison very many persons, and will be guilty of more massacres. They will attempt to kill all the priests and all the religious. But this shall not last long. People will imagine that all is lost; but the good God shall save all. It will be like a sign of the last judgment. Paris shall be changed, also two or three other cities; God shall come to help; the good shall triumph when the return of the king shall be announced. This shall re-establish a peace and prosperity without example. Religion shall flourish again better than ever before. Paris shall be demolished and burnt in earnest, but not entirely. Events shall transpire more terrible than what we have seen. However, there shall be a limit beyond which the destruction shall not go. A great triumph will be witnessed on the feast of our Lady."

**163b.** I believe that the Church in England will return to her ancient splendor."

### 164. *Abbess Maria Steiner (d. 1862)*

"I see the Lord as he will be scourging the world, and chastising it in a fearful manner so that few men and women will remain. The monks will have to leave their monasteries, and the nuns will be driven from their convents, especially in Italy. . . . The Holy Church will be persecuted. . . . Unless people obtain pardon through their prayers, the time will come when they will see the sword and death, and Rome will be without a shepherd."

"The Lord showed me how beautiful the world will be

after the awful chastisement. The people will be like the Christians of the primitive Church."

**165. *Palma Maria d'Oria* (d. 1863)**

"There will be an attempt of the sectaries to establish a republican government in France, Spain, and Italy ; a civil war will, in consequence, break out in those countries, accompanied by other dreadful punishments, as pestilence and famine, the massacre of priests, and also of some dignitaries of the church. Rome shall have to endure severe trials from the malice of wicked men. But at the critical moment, when the rebellious Republicans shall attempt to take possession of the Holy City, they shall be suddenly arrested at the gates and forced to fly away in terror, crushed under the deadly blows of the exterminating angel, who, in behalf of the Israelites, destroyed 185,000 men of Sennacherib's army.

"There shall be a three days darkness, during which the atmosphere will be infected by innumerable devils, who shall cause the death of large multitudes of incredulous and wicked men.

"Blessed candles alone shall be able to give light and preserve the faithful Catholics from this impending dreadful scourge. Supernatural prodigies shall appear in the heavens. There is to be a short but furious war, during which the enemies of religion and of mankind shall be universally destroyed. A general pacification of the world, and the universal triumph of the Church are to follow."

**166. *Mother Alphonse Eppinger* (1867)**

"Many priests have lost their fervor for the honor of God and the salvation of souls. Their hearts hang too much on the phantoms of this life. God will, by chastisements, cure them thereof and so thereby change them. In many religious houses the spirit of poverty and simplicity is forgotten. They look only for convenience, they carry a scandalous splendor to satisfy their pride, therefore must God, through a salutary remedy, restore the true religious spirit. It is indeed a sad thing to see religious houses desecrated, but it will be necessary in order to eradicate pride and worldly luxuries and to bring all things back to simplicity.

"After God has purified the world, faith and peace will return. Whole nations will adhere to the teachings of the Catholic Church."

**167. *Brother Anthony of Aix-la-Chapelle*, in 1871**

"Some day war will break out again in Alsace. I saw the French in Alsace with Strassburg at their rear, and I saw Italians fighting with them. Suddenly great transports of troops arrived from the French side. A two-day battle ended with the defeat of the Prussian army. The French pursued the Prussians over the Rhine in many directions. In a second battle at Frankfort, the Prussians lost again and retired as far as Siegburg, where they joined a Russian army. The Russians made common cause with the Prussians. It seemed to me as if Austrians were aiding the French. The battle at Siegburg was more horrible than any before and it's like will never occur again. After some days the Prussians and Russians retreated and crossed, below Bonn, to the left bank of the Rhine. Steadily pressed by their opponents, they retired to Cologne, which had been bombarded so much that only one-fourth of the city remained intact. Constantly in retreat, the remainder of the Prussian army moved to Westphalia, where the last battle went against them. The people greatly rejoiced because they were freed from the Prussians.

"Then a new emperor, about 40 years old, was elected in Germany, and he met the Pope. Meanwhile, an epidemic broke out in the regions devastated by the war, and many people died. After the battle in Westphalia the French returned to their country, and from then on there was peace between the French and the Germans. Industry and trade prospered, and many convents were founded. All exiles returned to their homes. When I begged God to take the terrible vision away I heard a voice saying: 'Prussia must be humiliated and in a manner that it never again will bring sorrow to the Church.' In the following year the Russians will war with the Turks, driving the latter out of Europe and seizing Constantinople. The new German emperor will mobilize for war, but the Germans will not go beyond their border. When afterward I was shown France and Germany I shuddered at the de-population that had taken place. Soon after the Russo-Turkish War England also will be visited by war."

**168a. *Ven. Magdalene Porzat* (d. 1850)**

"An enormous bird (Great Monarch) shall awake as from a sleep, and with its terrible bill and claws shall sever the ox's neck and shall eagerly devour the intestines of the wicked dragon. He shall drag to the mud the tricolor (revolutionary) flag of the French and restore to their dominions the legitimate kings. A just and pious man born in Gallicia shall be the Supreme Pontiff; then the whole world shall be united and prosperous. One faith only and

one emperor shall reign over the whole earth."

**168b.** "Listen, my children, to what Mary our Mother charges me to announce to you. 'Behold the end of time! Behold the end of evil and the beginning of good. What is going to happen is not an ordinary event. It is a grand epoch which is going to commence. It is the third (era of the world).

Since the Father, who has created us, in order that we may know, love and serve him; since the Son, who has redeemed us; behold now the Father and the Son to console us, send to us the Triumphant Spirit, with Mary His spouse. This is a grand miracle.

"Mary comes from Heaven. She comes accompanied by a legion of angels. The elect living upon earth should through spiritual electricity elevate themselves in order to go forward before the messengers of God. Behold the host of the Lord! Many holy women, few St. John's. Behold the armor of God! No gun or musket, no club or truncheon, no bolt, no watchdog, no material force, no human means.

"After this Mary, all powerful, shall change all men into good wheat. All shall be good. The Pharisees will be the last to be converted; the great brigands will arrive beforehand. The Jews who have refused to receive Jesus Christ in his humiliation will acknowledge Him at the glorious arrival of Mary.

"The dove (the peace and grace of God through Mary) comes to us from Heaven, wearing on her breast a white cross, sign of reconciliation, and waving a sword of fire, symbol of love. She seats herself on a throne of solid gold, figure of Noah's ark; for she comes to announce the end of a deluge of evils. Behold, she comes, our Mother! The Church prepares everything for the glorious arrival of Mary. The Church forms for her a guard of honor to go before the angels. The triumphal arch is nearly accomplished. The hour is not far distant. It is Mary in person! But she has her precursors,—holy women, apostles, who shall cure the wounds of the body as well as the sins of the heart. Holy women, images of Mary, shall have power to work miracles. After them comes Mary to prepare the place for her Son in His triumphant Church. Behold the Immaculate Conception of the Kingdom of God that precedes the arrival of Jesus Christ. It is the mansion of God upon earth, which is going to purify and prepare itself to receive the Emmanuel. Jesus Christ cannot come into this hovel of the world.

It is necessary that God should send His spirit to renew the face of the earth by means of another creation, to render it a worthy mansion for the God made man. Behold here, the fire from below, for burning and changing everything. Behold here, the fire from above! The love of God comes to embrace and transfigure the world. I see the earth rendered level; its valleys are raised; its mountains are lowered; there is nothing more than gentle hills and beautiful vales (images of the Christian virtues regenerating fallen humanity). Since I am as I am,

I see nothing else before us but union and universal fraternity. All men are in reciprocal love. One helps the other. They are all happy."

**168c.** "It is now twenty-six years since I announced to you the seven crises, the seven wounds and sorrows of Mary which should have to precede her triumph and our cure, namely: 1, Inclemencies of seasons and inundations; 2, Diseases to animals and plants; 3, Cholera over men; 4, Revolutions; 5, Wars; 6, An universal bankruptcy; 7, Confusion."

"The preceding evils have been mitigated through Mary's intercession, who detained the arm of her Son Jesus. Behold now the sixth calamity, the commercial crisis. Commerce marches to its ruin, because the axle, confidence, is shattered. There will be no respite between the sixth and seventh crises; the passage shall be rapid. The year 1798 upset France only; that which is coming shall cause the revolution of the whole world. The seventh crisis shall come to parturition. Men shall believe that all is lost and annihilated. Immense trouble shall be over the agitated sea of time. Whoever is not on the bark of Peter shall be engulfed. The bark goes up and down. Peter, have confidence. The ark comes out of the storm and a calm ensues. Pius IX is the last pope of the Church oppressed. 'Cross of the cross.' To him sorrow, but also joy. After him comes deliverance. Lumen in Coelo. Light in Heaven. This is Mary's eye. (Leo XIII's coat of arms show a star appearing in the heavens.) In the Church, Christians will imagine that all is lost. Mary arrives. Behold there is confusion; confusion even in the sanctuary. Notwithstanding, it is to the Catholic priests that one shall have to go for absolution and blessing."

**168d.** "Pius IX is the last pope of an epoch. Do you think that Mary will come to destroy the work of her Son? The Pope holds the place of God upon earth; so does the bishop in every diocese, and the parish priest in every

parish. Behold the representative of Jesus Christ, as the good and religious mother is the image of Mary. Go to your pastors who have been appointed by God. But woe! woe! to mercenaries who go to the side of the world! Look at that field where among bad weeds and every kind of damaged wheat there are some fine ears; that is a figure of how human society is now seated in wickedness. What should be done with it? Good souls should not be allowed to perish. The sound ears are good souls. Well! Mary comes to harvest the elect from the earth. . . . A grand event shall have to take place in order to terrify the wicked to their advantage."

**168e.** "In the year when Easter occurs on the feast of St. Mark (April 25), Pentecost on the feast of St. Anthony (June 13) and Corpus Christi occurs on the feast of St. John the Baptist (June 24), then the whole world will cry: WOE! WOE! WOE! (1943 is one such year; the next in 2038). (See no. 101, 123k).

**168f.** "Famine, pestilence, war and fraud shall prostrate the Italian Kingdom; and the ancient kings everywhere shall be expelled. The Supreme Pastor (Pope) shall hold the keys of heaven but will be deprived of earthly kingdom. Horrible spectacle: When the Red Ox (Communism? See 168a) shall give birth to the Hydra (Anarchy?) , God will not extinguish the flames nor calm his anger until all these calamities shall have stricken the people of Italy. This state of affairs shall last about five years."

**169a. *Pope Pius IX* (d. 1878)**

"We expect that the Immaculate Virgin and Mother of God, Mary, through her most powerful intercession, will bring it about that our holy mother, the Catholic Church, after removal of all obstacles and overcoming of all errors, will gain in influence from day to day among all nations and in all places, prosper and rule from ocean to ocean, from the great stream to the ends of the earth; that she will enjoy peace and liberty . . . that all erring souls will return to the path of truth and justice after the darkness of their minds has been dispelled, and that there will be then one fold and one shepherd."

**169b.** "Since the whole world is against God and His Church, it is evident that he has reserved the victory over His enemies to Himself. This will be more obvious when it is considered that the root of all our present evils is to be found in the fact that those with talents and vigor crave earthly pleasures, and not only desert God, but repudiate

Him altogether; thus it appears they cannot be brought back to God in any other way except through an act that cannot be ascribed to any secondary agency, and thus all will be forced to look to the supernatural, and cry out: 'From the Lord is this come to pass and it is wonderful in our eyes!' . . . There will come a great wonder, which will fill the world with astonishment. This wonder will be preceded by the triumph of revolution. The Church will suffer exceedingly. Her servants and her chieftain will be mocked, scourged and martyred."

**170. *Sister Mary of Jesus Crucified of Pau* (d. 1878)**

"All states will be shaken by war and civil conflict. During a darkness lasting three days the people given to evil ways will perish so that only one-fourth of mankind will survive. The clergy, too, will be greatly reduced in number, as most of them will die in defense of the faith or of their country."

**171. *Bishop Pie of Portiers* (d. 1880)**

"At no time in the history of the world have we seen such universal rebellion against God as today. All grasp weapons against Him. Never has man dissolved so entirely every covenant with God and been so completely against Him. 'Go away from us, leave us;' that is what modern nations say. 'We don't want a God, we will do all against Him and do all without Him.' That is what the modern nations, with France in the lead, do. The State must be anti-cleric, atheistic, purely worldly.' And God takes them at their word and leaves them to their defiance and self-will, until they, in their madness, tear one another to pieces and cover Europe with blood and ruin. Then God will come again, though armed: then will all see that He is the Lord of the world, created by Him, out of which they tried to expel Him."

**172a. *Catherine Emmerich* (d. 1824)**

"I wish the time were here when the Pope dressed in red will reign. I see the Apostles, not those of the past, but the apostles of the last times, and it seems to me, the Pope is among them."

"I was likewise told, if I remember right, that he (Satan) will be unchained for a time fifty or sixty years before the year of Christ 2000."

**172b.** "A pale faced man floated slowly over the earth and, loosening the cloths, which wrapped his sword, he threw them on sleeping cities, which were bound by them.

This figure also dropped pestilence on Russia, Italy, and Spain. A red noose lay around Berlin, and from there it came to Westphalia. Now the man's sword was naked, bands red as blood hung from its hilt and blood trickled from it on Westphalia." (This could refer to the spread of communism chiefly in northern Germany, as well as the last battle) .

**172c.** "The Jews shall return to Palestine and become Christians towards the end of the world."

**173a. *St. John Bosco (d. 1888)***

"War comes from the south, peace from the north. French laws no longer recognize the Creator, but the Creator will make himself recognized and will visit her thrice with the rod of His wrath. In the first visit he breaks her pride by conquest, plundering ruined harvest and butchery of men and beasts.

"In the second visit the great Prostitute of Babylon, which makes decent people sigh and call the Brothel of Europe, will be left without a leader and will be a victim of disorder.

"Paris! . . . Paris! instead of arming yourself in the name of the Lord, you fortify yourself with Houses of Immorality. They will be destroyed by you yourself. Your idol, The Pantheon, will be burnt to ashes in order that this may come true: 'violence uttereth lies against me.' Your enemies will reduce you to want, to hunger, to fear, and will make you the abomination of the nations. Ah, woe to you, if you do not recognize the hand that strikes you! I want to punish immorality, the despising of, and the contempt for My law, says the Lord.

"In the third visit you will fall into the hands of foreigners. Your enemies standing afar off will behold your palaces in flames. Your homes will become a heap of ruins bathed with the blood of your heroes who are no more.

"But there will come a great warrior from the North carrying a banner and on the right hand that supports it is written: "The Irresistible Hand of the Lord." At that very moment there went out to meet him the Venerable Old Man of Lazio, holding aloft a brilliantly glowing torch. The banner then increased in size and turned from black to snow-white. In the middle of the banner, in letters of gold, there was written the name of Him who is able to do all things.

"The warrior with his men bowed and shook hands with the Venerable Old Man.

"Now Heaven's voice is addressed to the Shepherd of shepherds. You are now in conference with your advisors. The enemy of the good does not stand idle one moment. He studies and practices all his arts against you. He will sow discord amongst your consulters; He will raise up enemies amongst my children. The powers of the world will belch forth fire, and they would that the words be suffocated in the throats of the custodians of my law. That will not happen. They will do harm—harm to themselves. You must hurry. If you cannot untie the knots, cut them. If you find yourself hard pressed, do not give up but continue until the head of the hydra of error is cut off. This stroke will make the world and Hell beneath it tremble, but the world will be safe and all the good will rejoice. Keep your consulters always with you, even if only two. Wherever you go, continue and bring to an end the work entrusted to you. The days fly by, your years will reach the destined number; but the great Queen (Mary) will ever be your help, and as in times past so in the future She will always be the exceeding great fortress of the Church.

"Ah, but you, Italy, land of blessings! Who has steeped you in desolation? Blame not your enemies, but rather your friends. Can you not hear your children asking for the bread of faith and find only those who smash it to pieces? What shall I do? I shall strike the shepherds, I shall disperse the flock, until those sitting on the throne of Moses search for good pastures and the flock listens attentively and is fed.

"Over the flock and over the shepherds My hand will weigh heavy. Famine, pestilence and war will be such that mothers will have to cry on account of the blood of their sons and of their martyrs dead in a hostile country.

"And to you, Rome, what will happen? Ungrateful Rome, effeminate Rome, proud Rome! You have reached such a height that you search no further. You admire nothing else in your 'Sovereign except luxury, forgetting that you and your glory stands upon Golgotha. Now he is old, defenseless, and despoiled; and yet at his word, the word of one who was in bondage, the whole world trembles.

"Rome I to you I will come four times!

"The first time, I shall strike your lands and the inhabitants thereof.

"The second time, I shall bring the massacre and the slaughter even to your very walls. And will you not yet open your eyes?"

"I shall come a third time and I shall beat down to the ground your defenses and the defenders, and at the command of the Father, the reign of terror, of dreadful fear, and of desolation shall enter into your city."

"But My wise men have now fled and My law is even now trampled underfoot. Therefore I will make a fourth visit. Woe to you if My law shall still be considered as empty words. There will be deceit and falsehood amongst both the learned and the ignorant. Your blood and that of your children will wash away your stains upon God's law. War, pestilence, famine are the rods to scourge men's pride and wickedness. O wealthy men, where is your glory now, your estates, your palaces? They are the rubble on the highways and byways."

"And you priests, why have you not run to 'cry between the vestibule and the Altar,' begging God to end these scourges? Why have you not, with the shield of faith, gone upon the housetops, into the homes, along the highways and byways, into every accessible corner to carry the seed of My word? Know you not that this is the terrible two-edged sword that cuts down my enemies and that breaks the Anger of God and of men?"

"These things must come one after another. They are inexorable."

"Things are happening too slowly."

"But the August Queen of Heaven is present."

"The power of the Lord is in His hands. He scatters His enemies as a cloud. The Venerable Old Man attires himself in all his ancient raiment."

"There will come again a violent hurricane."

"Iniquity is consummated. Sin will have its end. And before two full moons of the month of the flowers will have run their course, the rainbow of peace will rise above the earth."

"The Great Minister will see the bride of his King arrayed in festive fashion."

"Throughout the world the sun will appear so luminous that the likes of which never has been seen since the tongues of fire descended on the Cenacle until this day,

nor will such a sun ever be seen again until the very last of days."

**173b.** "It was a dark night. Men could no longer tell which way to take in order to return to their homes. Of a sudden there appeared in the heavens a very bright light that illuminated the steps of the travelers as though it were midday. At that moment there, was seen a host of men and women, of young and old, of nuns, monks and priests with the Holy Father at the head. They were going out from the Vatican and were arranging themselves in line for a procession."

"Then there came a furious storm which clouded that light somewhat and made it appear that light and darkness were engaged in battle. In the meantime they arrived at a little square covered with dead and wounded, some of whom cried aloud and asked for help."

"Very many were dropping out of the line of procession. After having walked for a time that would correspond to two hundred risings of the sun (200 days) they all realized that they were no longer in Rome. Struck with fear they all ran to the Holy Father to defend him personally and to attend his wants. Instantly two angels were seen carrying a banner, going they presented it to the Holy Father and said: 'Receive the banner of He Who fights and scatters the strongest armies of the world. Your enemies are dispersed. Your children with tears and sighs beg you to return.'

"Looking at the banner one could see written on one side, 'Queen conceived without sin'; and on the other side, 'Help of Christians.'

"The Holy Father joyfully took the banner, but looking closely at the small number of those who remained with him, he became very sad."

"The two angels added: 'Go quickly to console your children. Write your brothers dispersed throughout the world that there must be a reform in the morals of men. That cannot be obtained except by distributing to the people the bread of the Divine Word. Catechize the children. Preach the detaching of the heart from the things that are of the earth. 'The time has come,' concluded the two angels, 'when the poor shall evangelize the people. Vocations will come from among those working with the spade, the axe, and the hammer to the end that they fulfill the words of David: God has raised up the poor from the land in order to place them on the thrones of the princes of

His people.'

"Having heard that the Holy Father began the march. The farther he went the greater did the procession behind increase. When finally he set foot in the Holy City, he wept bitter tears for the distress in which he found the people and the large number now missing. As he entered St. Peter's he intoned the

Deum' to which a choir of angels replied singing: 'Glory to God in the highest and on earth peace to men of good will.'

"With the ending of the hymn there came an end to the thick darkness and the sun shone with a brightness all its own.

"The cities, towns, and villages were thinly populated. The land had been leveled down as if by a hurricane, by a tempest, and a hail storm. People went from one to another saying in tones of great emotion: 'there is a God in Israel.'

"From the beginning of the exile until the singing of the 'Te Deum,' the sun rose in the East two hundred times (200 days). The time that passed for the fulfilling of those things (all spoken of above) corresponds to four hundred risings of the sun."

**173c.** "After the World War there will follow another European war with great battles taking place on August 15th and September 15th" of a year not stated. "The Pope will die, and live again (Pius XI and Pius XII?) Belgium will undergo sufferings, but will rise again and become stronger than ever. Poland will get back her rights (See 148).

#### **174. Marie Julie Jahenny of La Faudais (1891)**

"There will come three days of continuous darkness. The blessed candle of wax alone will give light during the horrid darkness. One candle will last for three days, but in the houses of the Godless they will not give light. During those three days the demons will appear in abominable and horrible forms, they will make the air resound with shocking blasphemies. The lightning will penetrate the homes, but will not extinguish the light of the blessed candles; neither wind nor storm nor earthquake will extinguish it. Red clouds like blood will pass in the sky, the crash of thunder will make the earth tremble; lightning will flash through the streets at an unusual time of the

year; the earth will tremble to its foundations; the ocean will cast its foaming waves over the land; the earth will be changed to an immense cemetery; the corpses of the wicked and the just will cover the face of the earth. The famine that follows will be great. All vegetation will be destroyed as well as three-fourths of the human race. The crisis will come all of a sudden and chastisement will be worldwide."

#### **175. Ossolinski Library Prophecy (1893)**

After speaking of what corresponds with the first World War and Poland's precarious independence it goes on: "When the people suffer 30 years (1944?) there arises a great heart who works a miracle. When the Black Eagle disgraces the cross sign (swastika) and spreads its evil wings, two nations fall. Might surpasses right, but when this Eagle comes to the intersection of roads and looks to the east to diffuse its Teutonic ways, it shall go back with a broken wing.

"The disgraced cross (swastika) shall fall together with the hammer (Russia) and the grasping powers shall retain nothing. Masuria and Danzig returns to Poland. In the difficult fight against the proud Teuton, the world will smell of blood, when the north threatened by the east creates for itself unity among four.

"The Western Lion, betrayed by its freed slave shall unite with the Cock and put a young man on the throne.

"This time the strength of the disturbers of Earth is broken for ever. Brother shall shake hands with brother and the foe retires to a distant country.

"At the sunrise the Hammer is broken, flames shall spread over the prairie and when the Eagle and Hammer invade foreign fields they shall perish on a river.

"Ruthenia and beyond the Dnieper shall be in Poland and its Eagle reaches its old haunts at the Black Sea.

"Witebsk, Odessa, Kiev and Czerkassy are the bulwarks of Europe. Forever shall the barbarian be banished in fear to Asia.

"Warsaw is become the earth's center, yet three capitols belong to Poland. The Asiatic abandons the far off marshes and the Dragon gains face anew.

"The Bear falls after a second expedition. The Danube shines again in splendor. When peace is made at Warsaw,

three kings have their horses drink of its waters.

"Three rivers give three crowns to the Anointed One from Cracow. Four confederates from four boundaries swear allegiance to him.

"When the men of Hungary and Poland shake hands, three nations with Rumania shall join under Poland's throne in perpetual union.

"When the Crimean Tartar reaches the river he will not renounce his belief but will seek protection from Poland and remain faithful.

"Poland shall reach from sea to sea but that in half a century. The grace of the Lord shall always protect us, wherefore suffer and pray." (50 years from 1893 would be 1943. This would seem to foretell defeat of the lands of the Crooked Cross and the Hammer (Germany and Russia) and two United States in Europe, one Slav and one Scandinavian.)

**176. *Marie Martel of Tilly* (d. 1899)**

She saw in a vision great darkness, accompanying thunder and the destruction of nearly all of Paris through fire as well as the wiping out of Marseilles and other cities.

**PUBLISHED PREDICTIONS FROM THE TWENTIETH CENTURY  
(1900-1936)**

**177. *Lucie Christine* (d. 1908)**

"In the Old Testament men have mostly known and adored the Father. In the New Testament they have attached themselves to their Savior Jesus Christ. In the latter days the Holy Ghost will make His heat and light more strongly felt in the hearts of the faithful; they will find therein a renewal of faith and they will the better know and love the Father and the son, and especially Our Eucharistic Lord," (see no. 102b).

"I also thought I understood how the cult of the Sacred Heart, which offers us Divine Love in the Heart of the Man-God, prepares souls for that diffusion of the eternal and personal love of God which will in one supreme effort include the whole world in its all-powerful embrace, and anoint souls for the conflict of those days which will be marked by all the fury of Hell.

"I understood that time had to be divided into epochs corresponding to the Three Persons of the Adorable Trinity."

**178a. *Sister Marie Chambau* (d. 1907)**

"The triumph of the Church will be hastened by devotion to the five wounds and Precious Blood of Jesus Christ."

**178b. *Chesser Lortie* (1903)**

"A great war will begin in the Eastern world. The next one which starts there commences it. It begins in an hour, gains strength in a day, increases in a month, and in a year from the month all shall become involved. According to

the sign it shall occur during the reign of Pope Pius X. The principal powers involved: Japan, England and the United States against Russia, France and Germany. Other countries involved: China, Austria, Spain, Italy and Turkey. Turkey shall be dismembered and England severely beaten.

**178c. *Same* (1933)**

"Anti-Christ is on earth at the present time. The two great prophets of the Lord are also right at hand. The War of Nations (noted above) is fought in two halves. The second half started in the war between Japan and China September 18, 1931. The Asiatic world will become involved, the European nations will again fight among themselves. South America, Mexico and the United States shall become involved.

**179a. *Pius X* (d. 1914)**

"I saw one of my successors by name fleeing over the corpses of his brethren. He will flee to a place for a short respite where he is unknown, but he himself will die a cruel death."

**179b.** "We hold that you are not ignorant thereof what an outrageous combat is everywhere going on in our time. In truth the heathens and self-conceited nations are rebelling against their Creator. The cry of God's enemies is: 'Depart from us.' In most people respect for God has disappeared both in public and in private life. They even go so far as to attempt to obliterate even the memory of God. When we consider these facts you must really feel that such

wickedness is only the beginning of those evils which are to come before the end of the world, and that the Son of Perdition of whom the Apostles speak, is already among us (1903) ."

**179c. *The Prophecy of Fatima (July 13, 1917)***

"To save souls, the Lord desires that devotion to my (Blessed Virgin) Immaculate Heart be established in the world. If what I tell you is done, many souls will be saved and there will be peace. The war will end; but, if they do not cease to offend, the Lord, not much time will elapse, and precisely in the next Pontificate (Pius XI) another and more terrible war will commence."

To prevent "the castigation of the world for its many transgressions" the vision asked the "consecration of the world to my Immaculate Heart<sup>1</sup> and Communion in reparation on the first Saturday of each month. If my requests are heard, Russia will be converted and there will be peace. Otherwise, great errors will be spread through the world, giving rise to wars and persecutions against the Church; the good will suffer martyrdom and the Holy Father will have to suffer much; different nations will be destroyed; but, in the end, my Immaculate Heart will triumph and an era of peace will be conceded to humanity."

**180a. *Berry (published 1920)***

At the breaking of the fifth seal<sup>2</sup> St. John sees the souls of the martyrs beneath the altar where they enjoy eternal happiness in union with Christ, yet they cry out for justice. They, beseech 'God to manifest His glory, His justice, and His mercy by the resurrection of their bodies, the punishment of His enemies and the general judgment of all men. The imagery of this vision seems to refer to the altar of holocaust which stood in the inner court of the temple before the Holy Place. In the Jewish ritual the blood of the victim was poured out at the foot of the altar. The life of the victim was said to be in the blood: 'the life of the flesh is in the blood,' and again, 'Beware of This that thou eat not the blood, for the blood is for the soul, and therefore thou must not eat the soul with the flesh.' Hence the life or soul of the victim was conceived as being under the altar. In like manner the souls of the martyrs are seen beneath the altar because they too have

<sup>1</sup>Pope Pius XII has consecrated the world to the Immaculate Heart of Mary.

<sup>2</sup>See Apocalypse quoted above in No. 32a.

become victims to God through martyrdom and the voice of their blood cries out to God for justice. 'The voice of thy brother's blood crieth out to me from the earth.' The martyrs have received the white robes of eternal happiness and glory, but they must wait for the resurrection of the body until the number of their fellow martyrs has been filled up. They have but a short while to wait since the whole course of ages is as a few moments when compared with eternity that follows: 'For a thousand years in thy sight are as yesterday which is past, and as a watch in the night.' This verse clearly foretells that there shall be martyrs other than those of the first ages of the Church. There shall be witnesses to God by their blood in every age, especially in the days of Anti-Christ and at the end of the world. The resurrection and general judgment shall not take place until after this last persecution."

**180b.** "On the opening of the sixth seal<sup>1</sup> we catch a glimpse of the last persecution and the destruction of the world. This is to show that the prayers of the martyrs have already been heard in the designs of God, and shall be answered in due time."

**180c.** "These verses make it clear that there is no question of real locusts such as those that ravaged Egypt in the days of Moses.<sup>2</sup> They are purely symbolic, and their ravages chiefly spiritual. Their sting burns and poisons the soul with false doctrines, but has no power to injure those who remain faithful to the graces received in Baptism and Confirmation. For a short time these locusts are permitted to harass and persecute without killing, but they cannot destroy the Church.

"In those days men seek death and find it not. The good would welcome death as an escape from the evils and miseries that surround them. Many who have been led astray by false doctrines would likewise welcome death as a relief from their doubts and remorse of conscience.

"The locusts resemble horses accoutered for war. Heresy and schism are ever fruitful sources of religious wars and persecutions. The crowns indicate that rulers,—emperors, kings, and princes will be arrayed against the Church as actually happened at the Reformation in the sixteenth century. The crowns merely resembled gold, because there was but a mere semblance of real Christian charity in those days. The human faces prove that these locusts symbolize real persons.

<sup>1</sup>See Apocalypse quoted above in No. 32a.

<sup>2</sup>See Apocalypse quoted above in No. 32b.

"The hair of a woman probably signifies vanity and immorality; the teeth of a lion strength and cruelty. The breast-plates of iron show preparedness for defense as well as for attack. The sound of their innumerable wings resembles the thunder of chariots rushing to battle. This indicates their great numbers and impetuosity. The scorpion-like sting is a symbol of heresy that stings and poisons the soul. Its location in the tail signifies deceit and hypocrisy.

"The king of these symbolic locusts is called the Destroyer (Exterminans) . He is Lucifer, the angel of the abyss, the leader of the rebel angels. His minions on earth are the leaders of heresy, schism, and persecution."

**180d.** "The invasion of the locusts is the first woe predicted by the eagle.<sup>1</sup> The two yet to come will fill up the 'mystery of iniquity' with the appearance of Anti-Christ and his prophet.

"God sends a sixth angel to instruct and guide the Church. This mission will still further reveal the thoughts of many hearts. The wicked continue to be separated from the just.

"A voice from the golden altar commands the captive angels of the Euphrates to be released. As noted above, the altar is Christ who makes trials and tribulations a means of sanctification for souls and an increase of fervor and holiness in the Church. They also serve to spread the blessings of the Gospel for as Tertullian says: 'The blood of martyrs is the seed of Christians.'

"Christ Himself gives command to release the captive angels thus showing that the enemies of the Church have no power against her unless God permits. The Church can say to her enemies as Christ said to Pilate: 'Thou shouldst not have any power against me, unless it were given thee from above.'

"The captive angels are demons who will arouse new enemies and increased enmities against the Church. In a figurative sense they represent the new enemies thus aroused against the Church, whether they be nations, individuals or secret societies hostile to her. Four, the number of universality, indicates how widespread will be their influence. "

With the prophets of old the region of the Euphrates was ever the country whence came the enemies of God's

people. Its mention here indicates that these new enemies will arise among nations already hostile to the Church. In a secondary sense the term may be taken literally to represent peoples from that region who are hostile to the Church.

"The four angels of the Euphrates, now ordered to be released, may be the same as those whom Christ forbade to injure the earth until the Church could be firmly established after the persecutions.

"Even the time for the manifestation of these evil spirits and their minions has been accurately fixed in the designs of Providence. The very day and hour has been determined.

"Great numbers will be done to death in the religious wars and revolutions stirred up by these angels from the Euphrates. The prophecy may also mean that large numbers will be led into new errors and schisms. Both interpretations are fully justified by the history of the pretended Reformation and the wars that followed it.

"These scourges shall be more terrible than any yet predicted. The first plagues were brought to earth by four horsemen. Then we saw four charioteers, the four winds, ready to scourge mankind. Here we find a vast array of cavalry. The chastisements sent upon the world increase with the growth of iniquity and the approach of Anti-Christ.

"The description of horses and riders in this vision gives some idea of their boldness, strength, and cunning ferocity. They inflict upon men the plagues of fire, smoke and sulphur. The fire is persecution and war. Smoke symbolizes the obscuring of doctrine and the weakening of faith; sulphur, the moral depravity which follows.

"The fire, smoke and sulphur issue from the mouth of the horses. From the mouth should proceed words of wisdom; instead there come forth heresies, and incitements to revolt and revolution. It should be noted that Luther openly preached revolt and revolution to the peasants of Germany, but when they put his words into practice, he turned to the princes and urged them to stamp out the revolt with fire and sword.

"The horses of this vision inflict injuries with their tails which resemble serpents. Amongst all peoples the serpent

<sup>1</sup>See Apocalypse quoted above in No. 32b.

is a symbol of lying and hypocrisy. These vices have ever characterized the enemies of the Church.

"There is no question here of real artillery as some have imagined. St. John is giving only the broad outlines of the Church's history. He is not concerned with the material means employed by men to wage war against her.

"The vision of locusts and the vision of cavalry horses are not two representations of one and the same event. They foreshadow two distinct events that follow one another in the order of time. The one is the great revolt against the Church brought about by the fallen star. The other consists of wars and disturbances which follow in the wake of that revolt.

"After these plagues have passed there still remain many who worship idols, and many guilty of robbery, murder, and immorality. This is verified today. Although nineteen hundred years have elapsed since the first preaching of the Gospel, whole nations are still steeped in idolatry, and Christendom seems hopelessly divided by heresy and schism."

**180e.** "An angel coming in clouds of grace and glory brings to St. John a book of further prophecies.<sup>1</sup> The rainbow about his head symbolizes mercy, while the brightness of his countenance expresses the power of his teachings to enlighten souls. The feet as of fire indicate that he shall lead the Church in the ways of truth and justice as the pillar of fire guided the Israelites in the wilderness.

"The book is open to signify that the prophecies therein revealed to St. John are intelligible and shall be understood in due time according to the needs of the Church. The angel places one foot upon the sea, the other upon the land to express God's supreme dominion over all things.

"The voice like the roar of a lion is the voice of the Gospel which shall penetrate to the very ends of the earth teaching divine truth, condemning error, and threatening persecutors with the vengeance of God. Here, as elsewhere, the thunders may symbolize the anathemas of the Church against all wickedness and error; but it would be useless to comment on their exact meaning since St.

<sup>1</sup>For Text of Apoc., see above No. 32c.

John was commanded to seal up their words. In like manner Daniel was ordered to seal up the words of his prophecies until the time appointed by God for their publication. The words of the seven thunders may also have been such as St. Paul heard—'secret words which it is not granted to man to utter.'

"Lifting his hand to heaven the angel calls upon the God of all creation to witness the truth of his words that time shall be no more. This does not mean that the end of the world is at hand, but that the time for judgment against obstinate sinners and persecutors has arrived.

"This judgment shall be the great persecution of Anti-Christ and its attendant evils. Then shall be accomplished the 'mystery of God' which has been announced (evangelized) by the prophets of old. To evangelize is to announce good tidings, hence this 'mystery of God' is probably the plenitude of the Redemption applied to all nations of earth. After the destruction of Anti-Christ and his kingdom all peoples shall accept the Gospels and the Church of Christ shall reign peacefully over all nations."

"Eating the book symbolizes an intimate union with the Holy Ghost by which the mind of the Apostle is illuminated with the spirit of prophecy. St. John finds the book sweet to the taste because it announces mercy to the elect and the final triumph of the Church. It is bitter in so far as it predicts dire persecutions for the Church and terrible punishments for the wicked."

**180f.** "The followers of Anti-Christ have been warned of defeat and eternal punishment;<sup>1</sup> the faithful have been encouraged by promise of victory here and eternal happiness hereafter. The time of judgment is at hand; the final conflict now begins. The separation of the good from the bad will be still further accomplished. As on the last day, Christ sends forth His angels to gather the wheat into the barns while the cockle is being bound into bundles for the fire. The gathering in of the good through martyrdom is represented as a harvest. The destruction of the wicked is depicted as the vintage of God's wrath. The realization of this judgment will be found in the complete destruction of the kingdom of Anti-Christ in subsequent chapters.

"The reaper sitting upon a bright cloud, is an angel who comes in the name of Christ to execute His orders. Hence

<sup>1</sup>For text of Apoc., see above No. 32d

he bears the resemblance of Christ and is surrounded by a cloud of glory. He also wears a crown of gold, the emblem of royalty, because as representative of Christ he exercises dominion over all peoples.

"The cloud of glory and the crown of royalty might lead one to accept the reaper as Christ Himself. Yet the context makes it plain that the reaper cannot be identified with Christ since he is commanded by an angel to thrust in his sickle. Furthermore, Christ has told us in the Gospel that angels shall be commissioned to separate the wheat from the cockle.

"The voice from beneath the altar, commanding the vintage to be gathered is the voice of a martyr whose blood cries to heaven for vengeance. This martyr who has "power over fire" is probably Elias who will destroy Anti-Christ by sending down fire from heaven. The prophet Joel also describes the judgments of God against unholy nations as a vintage and a treading of the wine-press.

"The wine-press of divine wrath shall be trodden outside the city of Jerusalem. Final victory over Anti-Christ will be won through great slaughter and bloodshed in a battle near the Holy City, perhaps in the Valley of Josaphat. The prophecy of Joel may refer to this event instead of the last judgment; 'Let the nations come up into the Valley of Josaphat: for there I will sit to judge all nations round about . . . in the valley of destruction: for the day of the Lord is near.' "

#### **181. *Benedict XV* (d. 1922)**

"The return of the Jews to Palestine is the will of God, hence they will have to leave many countries."

#### **182. *X. B. Markiewicz* (before 1922)**

Due to a second world war "two great plagues and many other evils will come. The true Christian civilization will be restored through the heroic action of Polish men and women, and the correct road to true peace and happiness will be shown them."

#### **183. *Pere Lamy* (d. 1931)**

"The prayer of the children must be the foundation of everything. . . . (What a different world this would be) if only we did not place obstacles in the way of (Our Lady's)

empire over our souls. . . . She told me she desired a new congregation. . . . The dispersal of the congregations (or religious) was more a punishment for the people than the individuals concerned. . . . The monasteries will flourish again and the convents will once more be filled. After these (not specified) calamities many souls will come to dwell in them. . . . Prayer offered in union with Our Lady has great power. . . . Our Lady requires the sanctity of family life. She requires that disorder should cease and that people should observe order once more. God asks only this so that he may grant them pardon. . . . If people had heeded Her the war (1914-1918) would not have come. . . . I will not tell you a tenth part (of what I know of the future). There are some things it would not be well to say even in 40 years' time. Besides this is perhaps the least suitable epoch that has ever existed for revelation. I do not mean that small fraction of the people who are fervent Catholics. It is just those who do not need revelations. . . . Penance, penance, penance, terrible times are coming. The times we are living in now (1914-1918) are as nothing to what we are soon to see. . . . How Our Lord must have suffered! And yet Christians are always seeking pleasure! If it were thus in the green wood, how shall it be in the dry. . . . The (first) world war had three causes, blasphemies, work on Sundays and desecration of marriage. . . . When we are not in the state of grace (our guardian angels) would like to help us but they cannot. They often save us from accidents. Our Lady was weeping over the world (1929) . There are few devout souls nowadays. . . . The Jews are scattered all over the world, but they will not be abandoned. God never forsakes his own . . . As to the Apostles of the latter days, I only know one thing: Our Lord has said in His Gospel that this day is known to nobody. . . . One should never order one's life according to visions, especially according to the visions of others. In material things we must use common sense. And in spiritual things we need common sense, too. . . . We must be careful of mysticism. The devil stands behind the Mother of God; if you let her pass you by, you find the devil.

"Lucifer is playing his last card; he thinks the game is in his hands, in which he is mistaken. . . . We must pray confidently, in spite of his blustering. . . . People will appreciate still more the gentle goodness of Our Blessed Lady. . . . Peace will be restored to the world, but I shall not see that, and other things will come to pass of which I shall not see the end.

"When peace has been established in the world many things will be changed. . . . The manufacture of aeroplanes, the exploitation of mines, iron works, all this will diminish. There will be no more of these great factories where morality suffers and dies. Workers will be obliged to go back to the land. Work on the land will receive a great impetus. . . . Industry will be reduced to smaller proportions and it will remain so. But still old workmen will insist on dying in the towns. . . . When peace has been restored to the world, it will be necessary to re-evangelize it, and that will be the work of a whole generation. . . . There will be many difficulties. . . .

"The state of the early Christians will come back again; but there will be few men on the earth then! And there will be another magnificent revival of Orders and Congregations."

#### **184. *Countess Francesca de Billiante (d. 1935)***

"Great tribulations are coming; however, before this God will send a light of the Church, so that those who follow the light will be given a clear understanding of right and justice. Albertus Magnus will be elevated to the throne of sainthood and recognized as a Doctor of the Church. God will shame the professors of theology with whom he is displeased due to their pride. He will elevate to sainthood the ignorant Brother Konrad and the unknown Brother Jordan Mai. Likewise God will cause Don Bosco to be canonized (these things have come to pass) . In these days the Rosary will bring down untold blessings. We will even know the true Christian by his Rosary.

"I see a land with a hooked cross (swastika) . In this nation there will arise proud statesmen who will seek to throw Christ from His throne. They will even attack the power of reproduction in the mother's womb. Many in this land will carry the hooked cross on their forehead and breast, not suspecting that this is a sign of Satan. In these times many priests and monks will suffer in prison. They will be designated as criminals and most of their wealth will be confiscated. When the hooked cross glitters on the top of church steeples, they will be at the zenith of their power.

"When the land with the great fleet enters the Mediterranean (England or United States?) , then Europe will tremble. God will save Rome from the worst, due to the intercession of the Holy Father Pius X and the holy martyrs. France and Spain will sink deeply and will be

saved only at the intercession of the Immaculate Conception, from the worst.

"I see yellow (Japanese?) and red (Communists?) warriors marching against Europe and Europe will be covered by a yellow fog. The cattle in the fields will die from this yellow fog. The nations, who have risen against Christ, will be destroyed by flames. Famine will annihilate those who remain, so that Europe will be too large. In those days there will be many saints. Then the sons of St. Francis and St. Dominic will pass through the world and lead it back to Christ. Then the Holy Father will gather the remnant in an open field under the Cross. The hooked cross will be branded on the forehead of the criminals.

"The beginning of these days I shall yet see. I am sick from what I have seen. May God grant my little children a perseverance in the true faith."

#### **185. *A Bernadine Sister (before 1938)***

[She] was shown in spirit the vast devastation caused by the devil throughout the world, and at the same time she heard the Blessed Virgin telling her that it was true, hell had been let loose upon the earth; and that the time had come to pray to her as the Queen of Angels and to ask of her the assistance of the heavenly legions to fight against these deadly foes of God and of men. "But my good Mother," she replied, "You who are so kind could you not send them without our asking?" "No," Our Lady answered, "because prayer is one of the conditions required by God Him-self for obtaining favors." Then the Blessed Virgin communicated the following prayer, bidding her to have it printed and distributed.

"August Queen of Heaven! Sovereign Mistress of Angels! Thou who from the beginning has received from God the power and mission to crush the head of Satan: we humbly beseech thee to send thy holy legions, that under thy command, and by thy power, they may pursue the evil spirits: encounter them on every side: resist their bold attacks and drive them hence into the abyss of eternal woe. Amen."

#### **186. *Priest in Rome (before 1936)***

According to information from a reliable source, the following prayer was disclosed to a devout priest in Rome during the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass, when it was revealed to him that those who say the prayer with

devotion and faith would be spared from the great sufferings that are soon to come into the whole world:

"O Jesus, Divine Savior! be merciful, be merciful to us and to the whole world. Amen. Powerful God! Holy God! Immortal God! Have compassion upon us and upon the whole world. Amen. Eternal Father, show us mercy, in the name of the Precious Blood of Thy Only Son, show us mercy we implore Thee. Amen."

**187. *Theresa Neumann* (September 6, 1936)**

"The provocations have in these days attained their height. The furies of Hell rage now. The chastisement of God is inevitable. Every future petition to help them, to spare them, dis-pleases Me. If you petition Me for the conversion of dying sinners in the last hour, I will hear you. No! do not petition Me to prevent this chastisement. Until now victims (many of whom existed in many parishes) have offered their merits to expiate for the crimes of mankind, which held back the wrath of God, but now their expiations are not enough and the chastisement is now certain and unpreventable. It will happen suddenly. Fortunate are those who already are in their graves.

I have warned them and have postponed, as I did with Sodom, but Sodom would not listen to Me, nor do the people listen to Me nowadays, nor heed My warnings, therefore they will incur the sad experience of My wrath which they deserve."

**188a. *Pope Pius XI* (d. 1939)**

"The churches are destroyed, ruined from base to steeple, the religious and the consecrated virgins are expelled from their habitations, delivered to insults and bad treatment, and condemned to prison, multitudes of children and young women are torn from the bosom of the Church, their mother; they are incited to deny and blaspheme Christ; they are pushed to the worst excesses of luxury; the entire people of the faithful is terrorized, lost, under the constant menace that they must deny their faith or perish, at times, under the most atrocious form of death: It is a spectacle so appalling that one might see in it already the dawn of the beginning of sorrows that will bring 'the man of sin' arising against all which is called God and is

honored by worship. "

**188b.** Pope Leo XIII, in ordering the prayers after Mass, is said to have been prompted by a vision of St. Michael driving Satan back into hell. The principal intention of these prayers was changed by Pope Pius XI in 1934 to be "for the return of Russia to God." Therefore their efficacy in restraining the devil is, as it were, placed secondary or rather directed to hasten the conclusion of his work in Russia. Prayer to St. Michael: "St. Michael, the archangel, defend us in battle, be our protection against the malice and snares of the devil. We humbly beseech God to command him, and do thou, O prince of the heavenly host, by thy divine power thrust into hell Satan and the other evil spirits who roam through the world seeking the ruin of souls."

**189a. *Pius XII* (See appendix for additional matter)**

"the Virgin Mother of God, invoked by such prayers (for peace) will obtain from the Divine Savior liberation from present anxieties, the peace of hearts and fraternal concord among peoples."

**189b** "For God or against God—this once more is the alternative that shall decide the destinies of all mankind. . . . (prayer and penance) . . . are the inspirations that will dispel and remedy the first and principal cause of every revolt and every revolution—the revolt of man against God."

**189c.** (My Christmas 1942 blessing goes) "to all those who, like the Crusaders, will fight for this and for a better Christian world. . . . a new danger has arisen—the subordination of everything to politics and the heresy of a national state which subordinates all to human law. . . . Communism and National Socialism: these orders conflict with those of God. It is useless to fight without faith in God.

"Do you, crusader-volunteers of a distinguished new society, lift up the new banner of moral and Christian rebirth, declare war on the darkness which comes from deserting God, on the coldness that comes from strife between brothers."

## SOME CONTEMPORARY PROPHECIES

(The first two are merely students' observations. The rest, all anonymous but one, are said to result from private revelations. I have reason to believe that the authors are not deceivers. It is not within my power to determine whether or not they have been deceived)

### **190. *Franciscan Father of Arizona***

"Don Bosco's prophecy 'The Pope will die and live again' refers to the peculiar circumstances surrounding Pius XI and Pius XII: when the former died, 'Fides Intrepida' died, but when Pius XII, his Secretary of State, was elected, 'Fides Intrepida' lived again." Pius XII according to this would not be the Pastor Angelicus, at least not the one who would rule with the Great Monarch."

### **191. *The so-called Pyramid prophecy***

"A period of very great trial and distress for millions of humanity will occur over the 17-year period September 16, 1936 to August 20, 1953. This will be a period during which the whole earth is to be cleansed of its iniquity."

### **192. *Rev. Theophilus Reisinger, O. M. Cap. (d. 1940)***

"The Great Monarch was destined to have been Archduke Franz Ferdinand of Austria (his assassination was the spark that started the first world war) , but, because of the many 'souls of atonement,' the reign of Anti-Christ was postponed, and hence, also that of the Great Monarch."

### **193. *New York Laywoman***

"God wants a new world. This (war) is the judgment of nations. Rome will be invaded. A German ruler will be converted and an English one assassinated. Another Englishman once great now small will become a member of the Church and will be all powerful. There will be much suffering before this war ends and it will end as a religious war with terrible persecution everywhere. Thereafter will be a crusade which will be victorious under Mary's banner."

### **194a. *Phoenix, Arizona, Mother***

Vision: "A terrific wind seemed to blow from earth to

heaven. It rent the blue sky as tho it were a canvas. The opening was at first in the form of a cross. The wind kept up and blew back the four triangular flaps whose edges formed the cross and in this kite-shaped opening there appeared a happy young mother with a child on her arm. This was in the south-west sky." The vision faded. Eleven months later after being warned to remember the vision described above "there opened to my view a scene beyond description. My only thought was that could it be reduced to canvas it would convert all men. Since that time it is no credit to me that I love God." (Suggested meaning of the visions: Through Our Lady's intercession God will do something that will make men understand their relations to Him. This something will follow terrific commotions on earth) . (See 150 also.)

**194b.** "When intellectual Christianity will have suffered long enough it will find its heart, and the whole world will see it; then will come the peace of Christ. This peace will come first to the United States."

### **195. *Chicago Mother***

"The present Pope will spend his last year in exile. A severe plague will strike in middle Europe so deadly that it will take months to bury the dead. In 1943 Russia will defeat Germany. God's anger at men's indifference will not be averted this time."

### **196. *Chicago Layman***

"Those who lord it over the parts of the world today and who condone or propagate evil in national laws, press and schools as well as private lives and who think they can restore peace to nations and reform society and bring happiness to men, these err greatly. The gifts they think they can disburse are the property of God alone. Infidels, even though Christian in name, shall not dispense them lest the recipients say: See, I have received happiness from so and so or such a nation or such a government or such a form of government. No, irrespective of the sincerity of any individual involved misery will grow, war will come. Communism will rule and the Anti-Christ will arrive. Success will come only when man reverts to a system laid down by God himself as he laid it down to the Hebrews before the days of the Kings."

### **197a. *The "Mystic" in the Earling Case***

In urging universal and perpetual adoration before the Blessed Sacrament this person is said to state that this is the Heaven desired means of atoning for the sins of the world.

**197b.** Further, in urging exposition from dawn to midnight in United States churches generally, and nocturnal adoration in convents and other convenient American Chapels, this person is said to state that this method of adoration, even though practiced only in our country, and especially if Novenas for peace and prayers to the Blessed Virgin be added, then for a certainty, when enough atonement be offered, God shall work the wonder which is necessary to end the war and to bestow peace on the world.

**198.** There is a movement among Polish Catholics to have the picture of Our Lady of Jasna Gora declared the Catholic Action Banner. To Our Lady under this title is attributed both the 1683 Victory over the Turks and the 1920 Victory over the Communists. Another Polish source that I have not been able to identify, says that the Victory flag in this war will have a White Eagle crowned with gold on one side and on the other a picture of Our Lady.

### **199. *Monessen (Pa.) Layman***

"Russia will defeat Germany and Communism will dominate the governments from Sweden to China inclusive. Soon after an Anti-Christ appears. We will be at war again in 1952 and that war will last 31/2 years. This one will end in Europe in 1943 and in Asia in 1944. I feel certain that this is the meaning of the visions."<sup>1</sup>

There are appended *two prophecies* said to be old but I have found no reference to them prior to 1915. This is neither in their favor nor against them:

**200.** "And it shall come to pass that . . . the Earth shall become like unto this Garden (Eden). . . . Behold, this last hour (of evil) is at hand (1850-1950) . . . . Now is it come to pass that the hearts of men and nations are hardened like flint upon the face of the earth. For this is the last hour of self-righteousness and of the hypocrite; when men of

<sup>1</sup>These living seers have much more to say that I haven't deemed wise to publish, and there are several others in the United States but I have not been able to have samples, as yet, of their oracles.

smug face and smooth tongue gather into their snares all the people of simple mind, to pour upon them the force of hatred and jealousy and lead them into slaughter.

"Behold, the whole Earth is filled with turbulence and discontent. The rulers use their vast powers for greater domination and the struggling multitude uncoils itself like a serpent seeking its prey. They seize nations against their neighbors and waste their strength to break one another. The victors are too far spent to shout, and the defeated utterly despoiled . . . For the last half of the hour is wombed with the most terrible period of the Earth's history. . . .

"And it came to pass that when the last quarter of the last hour arrived . . . the yellow hordes in the place of the Rising Sun, and the white hosts of the middle kingdom have joined hands. . . . And behold, they pour out their terrifying wrath upon the inhabitants of the island kingdom which is swelled with victory and grown fat upon the commerce of sea and land.

. . . "Behold, saith the Lord: 'I will turn thee inside out, who in the folly of thine hypocrisy imagined a vain thing in thine heart. Thou art an harlot among the vain \_people of the earth. Thou hast lain in the beds of divers nations, and by charm and deceit, by beguilements thou hast brought under thy dominion the uttermost parts of the earth. But I shall make thee over. . . . Thy seamen and thy pilots and all men of war that are within thee, with all thy company, shall fall into the heart of the sea. And I will break thee in pieces as thou hast broken many before thee. For the nations from the ends of the earth, and of the middle kingdom, which I have pitched against thy strength, are cruel beyond endurance whose might thou canst not overcome . . . Thou and thy companions shall be brought down to earth and it shall be a day of repentance. . . . On that day, when the day of thy repentance is full, when remorse hath broken thy heart, and thy cry is raised unto Me, I shall remember and send thee thy deliverer.' "

### **201a. *(Said to be Ancient Irish: If so it is likely merely a form of other Irish prophecies given above.)***

What resembles the first world war is described and then the text continues "A number of years must elapse before the second and more terrible part of this war begins. It shall come out of Asia and shall require the aid of every occidental on earth to put down. England will again injure

the Irish. This will be a sign for the frightful punishment of England. She has betrayed all nations; . . . When the world is appalled by the anguish of Britain, the leaders of the dispersed Irish in all parts of the world shall call upon them (their followers?) to kneel in supplication to God for mercy on their fallen enemy. 'We forgive her,' they will say, 'Why not you?' And God astonished (so to speak) at finding in any race of men so God-like a quality, rescinds His judgment (of utter annihilation) against them (the English).

"England suffers the same degradation as she meted out to her neighbor, and for the same length of time. Not the smallest fraction of time in this long period shall be remitted. Often shall she attempt to rise, but each attempt shall fail. Never shall world power be hers again, but she shall do very much for the Faith, once she makes submission to Rome.

"Ireland's progress in peace and plenty shall intrigue the

world. Many shall come from afar to see that land so blessed. To the end of time no enemy shall ever again set foot on her soil."

**201b.** "France restores order in England after her own recovery from a violent revolution."

**201c.** "The close of the war finds a Celt in the Chair of Peter. He is the most perfect of all the popes—chosen miraculously amidst chaos. An angel in human form, he shall be called "Papa Angelorum." This Celt is not an Irish Celt but one born in Galicia, and the only Celt to occupy Peter's throne.

"He shall, like Peter of old, take his staff and his scrip, and with a few companions start out to reconcile the nations. They shall walk over mounds of dead and find the rivers choked with the bodies of the dead. The pope will die in exile." (This last sentence apparently refers to his death while away from Rome.)

*Holy Spirit, all divine,  
Dwell within this heart of mine;  
Cast down every idol throne,  
Reign supreme, and reign alone*

*See, to Thee I yield my heart;  
Shed Thy life through every part:  
A pure temple I would be,  
Wholly dedicate to Thee.*

# APPENDIX I

## Some Significant Statements of Pius XII

**MARCH 3, 1939**

"We speak of that peace which Our predecessor of blessed memory urged so insistently upon men, . . . and for which he made to God a spontaneous offer of his life.

". . . the peace of families united and harmonized by much love of Christ.

"Before Us is a vision of the enormous evils afflicting the world, for the correction of which may Our Blessed Lord send help to Us, unarmed but confident. . . . We are sure that you Our children, Our Brothers (meaning the Cardinals) , will not render this Our wish in vain. After the Grace of God, it is in your good will that Our soul so greatly trusts."

**AUGUST 24, 1939**

". . . through Our voice you may hear the voice of . . . Christ . . . in a crisis in which His word alone is capable of mastering all the tumultuous disturbances of the earth.

"We . . . speak to you in the Name . . . of the Holy Ghost, . . . the inexhaustible source of love in the hearts of men.

". . . Today . . . the tension of minds seems to have arrived at such a pass as to make an outbreak of the awful scourge of war appear imminent, We . . . appeal to those in power . . . that, laying aside accusations, threats and causes of mutual distrust, they may attempt to resolve their present differences with the sole means suitable thereto, namely by reciprocal and trusting agreements ; . . .

". . . empires which are not founded on justice are not blessed by God. "Statesmanship emancipated from morality betrays those very ones who would have it so.

". . . Nothing is lost with peace; all may be lost with war.

". . . May the strong hear Us that they may not become weak through injustice. May the powerful hear Us if they desire that their power be not destruction, . . .

". . . Christ . . . has made His solemn commandment, love of one's brother. . . . promise of salvation for individuals and for nations.

". . . human efforts are of no avail without Divine

assistance."

**DECEMBER 24, 1939**

"The indescribable disaster of war, which Pope Pius XI, with profound and extreme regret, foresaw . . . has broken out . . .

. . . We of the Christian brotherhood have been obliged to see a series of irreconcilable acts, . . . acts which show in what chaotic and vicious circles has the sense of justice been deviated from useful consideration.

"Atrocities and illegal use of means of destruction even against noncombatants, refugees, old people, women and children and disregard of human dignity, liberty and life are acts which cry for the vengeance of God—as does ever more extensive and methodical anti-Christian and even atheistic propaganda, mostly among young people.

. . . We . . . contemplate the . . . spiritual ruin . . . accumulating because of confusion of ideas which, more or less voluntarily, shades and distorts truth in the souls of many people, whether they be involved in war or not.

"We, therefore, must regard with alarm the tremendous amount of work that will be necessary when a world tired of fighting wishes to restore peace—to break down the walls of aversion and hatred which have been built up in the heat of the strife.

. . . We attempted . . . to the last moment, to prevent the worst and to persuade men in whose hands power lay . . . to abstain from armed conflict and so to save the world from incalculable disaster.

"These efforts . . . failed . . . chiefly because of deep and apparently irremovable distrust . . . which had grown in recent years and which had raised insurmountable spiritual barriers.

.. 'How can exhausted or weakened economy, at the end of the war, find means for economic and social reconstruction among difficulties which will be enormously increased, and of which the forces and artifices of disorder, lying in wait, will seek to make use in the hope of giving the final blow to Christian Europe?'

"First. A fundamental condition of a just and honorable peace is to assure the right to life and independence of all nations, large or small, weak and strong. . . .

"Second. That order, reestablished in such a manner may be tranquil and durable . . . nations must be liberated from the heavy slavery of the race for armaments. . . .

"Third. In any reordering of international community life it would conform to the rules of human wisdom for all parties concerned to examine the consequences of the gaps and deficiencies of the past; . . .

"And since it is . . . almost impossible for human weakness to foresee everything . . . at the time of the drafting of treaties of peace . . . the establishment of juridical institutions . . . to revise . . . is of decisive importance.

"Fourth. A point which should draw particular attention . . . concerns the real needs and just demands of nations and of peoples as well as of ethnical minorities: . . .

"Fifth. But even better and more complete settlements will be imperfect and condemned to ultimate failure, if . . . peoples . . . do not allow themselves to be penetrated always more and more by that spirit from which alone can arise life, authority and obligation for the dead letter of articles in international agreements . . . by that hunger and thirst for justice which is proclaimed as a Beatitude in the Sermon on the Mount . . .

"We wait for and hope that all those who are united to Us by the bond of Faith, each at his post within the limits of his mission, will keep both mind and heart open, so that, when the hurricane of war ceases and is dispersed, there will rise up in every nation and among all peoples far-sighted and pure spirits, animated by courage, who will know how and will be able to confront the dark instinct of vile vengeance with the severe and noble majesty of justice—the sister of love and companion of all true wisdom.

. 'O Emanuel, Our King and Our Law-maker, the awaited of the Gentiles and their Saviour, come to save us, Lord Our God.' "

#### **NOVEMBER 24, 1940**

“. . . we feel . . . that the present hour is a phase in the solemn story of humanity predicted by Christ. . . .

"But if the din of war seems to overcome and drown Our

voice, We turn Our gaze away from earth to Heaven, to the Father of Mercies . . . .

Who . . . commands the flow of the ocean: 'Hitherto thou shalt come, and shalt go no further' . . . .

". . . Our heart, imploring from Him better days . . . .

"Grant us, O Lord, peace in our days!

"God . . . will hear us—at the moment and in the manner which He will have disposed—if we send up to the seat of His throne with one voice a trusting and fervent prayer enriched by the humiliation of penance; . . . .

. . . May whirlwinds, that in the light of day or in the dark of night scatter terror, fire, destruction and slaughter on humble folk, cease. . . . "

#### **DECEMBER 24, 1940**

". . . the peoples will be obliged to dedicate themselves to the task of repairing the deep-seated evils which will be their bitter social and economic heritage; when disorganized nations find themselves, at the war's conclusion, with spiritual wounds which will certainly demand assiduous and watchful care, that their pernicious effects may be forestalled or minimized.

. . . a quasi-universal opinion . . . contends that . . . Europe as well as its political structure are now undergoing a process of transformation of such a nature as to signal the dawn of a new era.

"Indispensable prerequisites for such a new order are:

"One, triumph over hate . . . .

"Two, triumph over mistrust . . . .

"Three, triumph over the . . . principles that utility is a basis of law and right, and that might makes right; . . .

"Four, triumph over . . . too strident differences in the field of world economy; . . .

"Five, triumph over the spirit of . . . egotism . . . . "

#### **APRIL 13, 1941**

"In this tempest . . . our most powerful and safest haven of trust and peace is found in prayer to God, in Whose hands rests not only the destiny of men but also the outcome of their most obdurate dissensions. . . .

.. We are saddened to note that there seems to be as yet little likelihood of an approximate realization of peace that will be just, in accordance with human and Christian norms.

"Thus Our supplications to Heaven must be raised with ever increasing meaning and fervor, that a new spirit may take root and develop in all peoples . . . the spirit of willingness, devoid of sham and artifice, that is ready to make mutual sacrifices in order to build . . . a new edifice of fraternal solidarity among the nations . . .

"Nothing can . . . restrain Us from doing all in Our power in order that, in the tempest of surging waves of enmity among the peoples of the earth . . . the Church of Christ may be held firmly by the anchor of hope under the golden rays of peace . .

. . . the virtuous man is neither exalted by worldly well-being nor humbled by temporal misfortune; the evil man on the other hand, being corrupted in prosperity, is made to suffer in adversity.

.. upon the manner in which you deal with those whom the fortunes of war put in your hands may depend the blessing or curse of God upon your own land.

"Contemplation of a war . . . inspires in the heart of the Common Father . . . words of comfort and encouragement for the pastors and faithful of those places where the Church, the Spouse of Christ, is suffering most; where fidelity to her, the public profession of her doctrines, the conscientious and practical observation of her laws, moral resistance to atheism and to de-Christianizing influences deliberately favored or tolerated, are being openly or insidiously opposed and daily in various ways made increasingly difficult."

#### **JUNE 1, 1941**

"What problems and what particular undertakings, some perhaps entirely novel, our social life will present to the care of the Church at the end of this conflict . . . is difficult at the moment to trace or foresee.

"Our planet . . . is not . . . without habitable regions and living spaces now abandoned to wild natural vegetation and well suited to be cultivated by man . . . it is inevitable that some families migrating from one spot to another should go elsewhere in search of a new homeland. Then . . . the right of the family to a living space is recognized. When this happens emigration attains its natural scope . . .

the more favorable distribution of men on the earth's surface . . . that surface which God created and prepared for the use of all. . . .

"Do not let yourselves be misled by the manufacturers of errors and unhealthy theories, . . . Oh, lamentable ignorance of the work of God! Professing themselves to be wise they become fools.

". . . you . . . must not ever be satisfied with this widespread public mediocrity in which the majority of men cannot, except by heroic acts of virtue, observe the Divine precepts which are always and in all cases inviolable.

. . . tomorrow, when the ruin of this world hurricane is cleared, at the outset of that reconstruction of a new social order, (social justice) will infuse new courage and a new . . . growth in the garden of human culture.

"Keep burning the noble flame of a brotherly social spirit . . . do not allow . . . it to (be) overcome by the dust and dirt carried by the whirlwind of the anti-Christian or non-Christian spirit."

#### **JUNE 29, 1941**

"All men are as children before God; all, even the most profound thinkers and the most experienced leaders of peoples. They judge events with the foreshortened vision of time, which passes and flies past irreparably; God, on the other hand, sees events from on high from the unmoved center of eternity. They have before their eyes the limited view of a few years; God has before Him the all-embracing panorama of the ages.

"Trust in God means the abandonment of oneself . . . in spite of all the doubts suggested by appearance to the contrary, to the wisdom, the infinite love of God. It means believing that nothing in this world escapes His Providence. . . . It means believing that God can permit, at times here below, for some time the preeminence of atheism and of impiety, the lamentable obscuring of a sense of justice, the violation of law, the tormenting of innocent, peaceful, undefended, helpless men. It means believing that God at times thus lets trials befall individuals and peoples, trials of which the malice is the instrument in a design of justice directed toward the punishment of sin, towards purifying persons and peoples through the expiations of this present life and bringing them back by that way to Himself; but it means believing

at the same time that this justice always remains here below the justice of a Father inspired and dominated by love.

". . . It means believing finally that the fierce intensity of the trial, like the triumph of evil, will endure even here below only for a fixed time and not longer; that the Hour of God will come, the hour of mercy, the hour of holy rejoicing, the hour of the new canticle of liberation, the hour of exultation and of joy, the hour in which, after having let the hurricane loose for a moment on humanity, the all-powerful Hand of the Heavenly Father, with an imperceptible motion, will detain it and disperse it and, by ways little known to the mind or to the hopes of men, justice, calm and peace will be restored to the nations.

". . . . suffering stands at the threshold of life."

#### **DECEMBER 24, 1941**

"Such large-scale disbursements, giving rise as must to a contraction of the forces of production in the civil and social field, cannot but be the basis for serious anxiety on the part of those who turn their thoughts with preoccupation towards the future.

"No! Christianity, whose force derives from Him Who is the Way, the Truth and the Life and Who is with it and shall remain with it until the consummation of the world, has not failed in its mission but men have rebelled against that Christianity which is true and faithful to Christ and His doctrine.

"In its place they have fashioned Christianity to their liking, a new idol which does not save, which is not opposed to the passions of carnal desires nor to the greed for gold and silver which fascinates, nor to the pride of life; a new religion without a soul or a soul without religion, a mask of dead Christianity without the spirit of Christ. And they have proclaimed that Christianity has failed in its mission!

"A religious anemia, like a spreading contagion, has so afflicted many peoples of Europe and of the world and has created in their souls such a moral void that no spurious and pharisaical religious organization and no national or international mythology will serve to fill this emptiness. Is it not true that for decades and centuries past men have directed their every thought, word and deed to their sworn objective of tearing from the hearts of our young and old alike their faith in God, the Creator and Father of all,

Rewarder of good and Avenger of evil, and have they not striven for the accomplishment of this goal through a process of radical change in education and instruction, opposing and oppressing by every art and means the diffusion of the spoken and printed word, and by the abuse of scientific knowledge and political power, the religion and the Church of Christ?

". . . it has happened that the spirit and the tendency with which technical progress was often (but by no means necessarily) put to use have brought it about that in our time technology must expiate its error and be, as it were, its own avenger by producing instruments of destruction which destroy today what it had erected yesterday.

"Now the destruction brought about by the present war is on so vast a scale that it is imperative that there be not added to it also the further ruin of a frustrated and deluded peace. In order to avoid so great a calamity it is fitting that in the formulation of that peace there shall be assured the cooperation, with sincerity of will and energy, with the purpose of a generous participation, not only of this or that party, not only of this or that people, but of all people; yea, rather of all humanity. It is a universal undertaking for the common good which requires the collaboration of all Christendom in the religious and moral aspects of the new edifice that is to be constructed.

"Within the limits of a new order founded on moral principles there is no room for the violation of the freedom, integrity and security of other States; ..

". . . no place for open or occult oppression of the cultural and linguistic characteristics of national minorities, . .

. . . no place for that cold and calculating egoism which

tends to hoard the economic resources and materials destined for the use of all . . .

". . . once the more dangerous sources of armed conflicts have been eliminated, there is no place for a total warfare or for a mad rush to armaments. . . .

"Means must be found which will be . . . efficacious in order that the norm 'pacts must be observed' . . .

.. no place for the persecution of religion and of the Church.

.. priceless . . . will be the contribution of statesmen who show themselves ready to open the gates and smooth the

path for the Church of Christ so that, free and unhindered, it may bring its supernatural influence to bear in the conclusion of a peace amongst nations and may cooperate with its zeal and love in the immense task of finding remedies for the evils which the war will leave in its wake.

. . . in some parts of the world countless legislative dispositions bar the way to the message of the Christian Faith while free and ample scope is given to a propaganda that opposes it, . . .

"At the dawning of that day with what great joy will nations and rulers, freed in mind from the fear of the insidious dangers of further conflict, transform the swords, nicked and jagged from constant use against their fellow man, into ploughs with which to furrow the fertile breast of the earth under the sun of Heavenly Benediction and to wrest from it their daily bread, dampened now by the sweat of their brows but no longer bathed in blood and tears of sorrow? In expectation of that happy day, and with this longing prayer upon Our lips, We send Our greeting and Our blessing to all Our children of the entire universe."

#### **MAY 13, 1942**

"Let us rekindle in ourselves the spirit of love; let us hold ourselves ever ready to collaborate with our faith and our hands, after the most extensive, disastrous and bloody cataclysm of all history, to reconstruct from the pile of material and moral ruins a world that the bonds of brotherly love will weld in peace, a world in which, with the help of the Almighty, all may be new hearts, words and works."

#### **NOVEMBER 1, 1942**

"Queen of the Most Holy Rosary, Refuge of the Human Race, Victress in all God's battles, we humbly prostrate ourselves before thy throne, confident that we shall receive mercy, grace and bountiful assistance and protection in the present calamity, not through our own inadequate merits, but solely through the great goodness of thy Maternal Heart.

"To thee, to thy Immaculate Heart, in this, humanity's tragic hour, we consign and consecrate ourselves in union not only with the Mystical Body of thy Son, Holy Mother Church, now in such suffering and agony in so many places and sorely tried in so many ways, but also with the entire world, torn by a fierce strife, consumed in a fire of

hate, victim of its own wickedness.

"May the sight of the widespread material and moral destruction, of the sorrows and anguish of countless fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, brothers and sisters, and innocent children, of the great number of lives cut off in the flower of youth, of the bodies mangled in horrible slaughter, and of the tortured and agonized souls in danger of being lost eternally, move thee to compassion!

"O Mother of Mercy, obtain peace for us from God and above all procure for us those graces which prepare, establish and assure the peace!

"Queen of Peace, pray for us and give to the world now at war the peace for which all peoples are longing, peace in the truth, justice and charity of Christ. Give peace to the warring nations and to the souls of men, that in the tranquility of order the Kingdom of God may prevail.

"Extend thy protection to the infidels and to all those still in the shadow of death; give them peace and grant that on them, too, may shine the sun of truth, that they may unite with us in proclaiming before the one and only Saviour of the World 'Glory to God in the highest and peace to men of good will.'

"Give peace to the peoples separated by error or by discord, and especially to those who profess such singular devotion to thee and in whose homes an honored place was ever accorded thy venerated icon (today perhaps often kept hidden to await better days) : bring them back to one fold of Christ under the one true shepherd.

"Obtain peace and complete freedom for the Holy Church of God; stay the spreading flood of modern paganism; enkindle in the faithful the love of purity, the practice of the Christian life, and an apostolic zeal, so that the servants of God may increase in merit and in number.

"Lastly, as the Church and the entire human race were consecrated to the Sacred Heart of Jesus, so that in reposing all hope in Him, He might become for them the sign and pledge of victory and salvation: so we in like manner consecrate ourselves forever also to thee and to thy Immaculate Heart, Our Mother and Queen, that thy love and patronage may hasten the triumph of the Kingdom of God and that all nations, at peace with one another and with God, may proclaim thee blessed and with thee may raise their voices to resound from pole to pole in

the chant of the everlasting Magnificat of glory, love and gratitude to the Heart of Jesus, where alone they can find truth and peace.-

**DECEMBER 24, 1942**

.. the road from night to full day will be long; but of decisive importance are the first steps on the path, the first five milestones . . . the following maxims:

"He who would have the star of peace shine out and stand over society should cooperate for his part in giving back to the human person the dignity given to it by God . . .

"He . . . should reject every form of materialism which sees in the people only a herd of individuals . . . to be lorded over and treated arbitrarily; . . . "He . . . should give to work the place assigned to it by God

"Is it not true that deep thinkers see ever more clearly in the renunciation of egoism and national isolation the way to general salvation, ready as they are to demand of their peoples a heavy participation in the sacrifices necessary for social well-being in other peoples?

"May this Christmas Message of Ours, . . . encourage and increase the legions of these social crusades in every nation. And may God deign to give to their peaceful cause the victory of which their noble enterprise is worthy.

"He . . . should collaborate towards a complete rehabilitation of the juridical order.

"He . . . should cooperate towards the setting up of a State conception and practice founded on reasonable discipline, exalted kindness and a responsible Christian spirit."

# APPENDIX II

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### *A. Scripture, the Fathers and Commentaries Thereon*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| The Holy Bible (Vulgate and Douay-Rheims Versions)   | Roberts and Donaldson: The Ante-Nicene Fathers           |
| The New Testament (Westminster and Spencer Versions)   | Pohle-Preuss: Eschatology                                |
| a Lapide: Commentaria in S. Scripturam and partial English translation of the same by Mossman and Cobb | Hermann : Institutiones Theologiae Dogmaticae            |
| Migne (editor): Scripturae S. Cursus Completus   | Lindberg: Gog—All Agog                                   |
| Berry: The Apocalypse of St. John  | de Journal: Enchiridion Patristicum                      |
| Holzhauser Apocalypseos D. Joannis Expositio   | Denzinger: Enchiridion Symbolorum                        |
| Parker and the Rivingtons (printers): A Library of the Fathers of the Holy Catholic Church             | Thomas Aquinas (St.): Summa Theologica (2: 2: 171 – 174) |

### *B. The Apocrypha*

- |   |                                      |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| Charles : Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament | James : The Apocryphal New Testament |
|---|--------------------------------------|

### *C. Collections of Private Prophecies*

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| Antoine: Le Grand Pape et le Grand Roi        | Dalgairns: The German Mystics of the Fourteenth Century  |
| Beck: Great European Monarch and World Peace  | Daniel: Serait-ce Vraiment La Fin Des Temps  |
| Bembord: Spielbachn                           | Delattre : Le Second Avenement de Jesus Christ   |
| Benedictine Sisters: Armenseelenfreund        | Deniers avis Profetiques—Anon.   |
| Beykirch: Prophetenstimmen                    | Dollinger: Fables of the Middle Ages, The Prophetic Spirit and the Prophecies of the Christian Era |
| Boswell: Prophets and Portents                | Dompierre: Comment Tout cela va Finir  |
| Bricaud: Le Guerre et les Propheties Celebres | Dornstetter: Das endzeitliche Gottesreich nach der Prophetie                                       |
| de Busto: Rosarium Sermonum                   | Forman: The Story of Prophecy  |
| Celtic el Nobil : La Voix des Prophetes       | I Futuri Destini degli Stati e delle Nazioni—Anon.   |
| Collier: Something to Hope For                | Godard: Le Prophetisme et le temps Nouveaux  |
| The Christian Trumpet—Anon. (Donohoe: Boston) |  |
| Curicque: Voix Prophetiques                   |  |

Honert: Prophetenstimmen	Plancy: La Fin des Temps
Josserand : Recueil Complet des Propheties	Prophecies—Sadlier & Co., New York City
Konzionator: Der Kommende Grosse Monarch Die Zukumft Englands Die Zukumft Frankreichs	Rademacher: Der Weltuntergang
Lanslots: The End of the World and of Man	Reed: Prophecies about the War in Europe
Lilly: A Collection of Ancient and Modern Prophecies	Spirago: Antichrist Der Weltuntergang Die Zukumft Deutschlands
Luetzenburg: Vita Antichristi	Stenay: L'Avenir devoile
Michel: The Last Things	Stern: Die Offenbarung
Naquet: Europe Delivree	Thomas Das Weltende nach der Lehre des Glaubens and der Wissenschaft
Novaye: Demain	Thurston: The War and the Prophets
Peladan: Le Derniere Mot des Propheties	Timbs: Things not generally known
Pelletier: La Chef des Temps	Zalinski: Noted Prophecies

### ***D. Matter on Specific Private Prophecies***

Jerome of Prague: Book of Visions and Instructions—El. Angela of Foligno	(Paris: 1861)
St. Bede: In die Judici	Luca of Cosenza: Expositio Magni Prophetae Abbatis
Roux: Examen de la Prophetie de Blois	Joachim Biver: Pere Lamy
Don Bosco in the West: issue for Nov.-Dec., 1939	Stenay: Le Prophete David Lazzaretti
Poulain (editor) : The Spiritual Journal of Lucie Christine	Lortie: Is the Pope of Rome Infallible?
O'Kearney: The Prophecies of St. Colum-Cille et al.	"Ressehc": Leviathan
Emmerich: The Dolorous Passion	Maitre: La Prophetie des Papes attribuee a Saint Malachie, Les Papes et la Papaute de 1143 a la fin du monde
Wegener-McGowan: Sister Anne Katherine Emmerich	Spirago: Die Malachias-Weissagung
Spirago: Katherine Emmerich	Paton: Prophecies of Merlin
The Life and Revelations of St. Gertrude (Burns, Oates & Washbourne, publishers)	Spirago: Klarheit ueber Konnersreuth
St. Hildegard: Scivias	Von Lama: Therese of Konnersreuth
Steele: Life and Visions of St. Hildegard	Ratcliffe Thompson: The True Prophecies of Michael Nostradamus
Venerabilis , Servi Dei Bartholomaei Holzhauser Opuscula Ecclesiastica—Pub-lished in "Graduel"	Modern Library: Oracles of Nostradamus

The Southern Messenger: issues of Jan. 7 and 14, 1943

Allen: Window in Provence (Nostradamus: Good)

Lamont: Nostradamus Sees All

McCann: Nostradamus

Boswell: Nostradamus Speaks

Jeantin: Croniques historiques sur l'Abbaye d'Orval

Smith: The House of Glory, Miracle of Ages

Konzionator: La Salette

Lola: La Grand Nouvelle de la Mere de Dieu

Parent: Le Secret Complet de la Salette

Baker: Mother Shipton and Nixon's Prophecies

Harrison: Mother Shipton Investigated

Providence-Sligo: Life of Ven. Anna Maria Taigi

Thompson: Life of Ven. Anna Maria Taigi

Dixon: St. Vincent Ferrer

Portentosa vida y Milagros de S. Vincente Ferrer—  
Madrid, 1856

### ***E. Manuscripts***

Philip. Beecher of St. Louis, Mo.: The Private Prophets

The Works of Mother Rafols translated from the Spanish text bearing the "Nihil Obstat" of the Assessor of the Cong. of Rites

Various letters and manuscripts in which information on

the contemporary seers is given.

Books and pamphlets noted above, if not out of print and obtainable in this country, may be ordered through the "Thomas More Library and Book Shop," 22 W. Monroe St., Chicago, Ill.

### ***Important Notes***

Leaflets on Universal Atonement are advertised as obtainable from Loretta Laney, 3154 College Ave., Berkeley, Cal. The same on prayers to the Queen of the Angels and on the prayer said to be revealed to the Roman Priest are listed as obtainable from Betty Kelly, 1008 Riverside Avenue, Baltimore, Md. Prayers to the Holy Ghost is a third leaflet put out by Holy Ghost Fathers, 1615 Manchester Lane N. W., Washington, D. C. Paul Husted, 6531 So. Union Ave., Chicago, Ill., is advertised as the source whence priests may obtain information on a plan of social reform which is said to have some mystical connections. Beck's booklet noted above is published by Our Sunday Visitor. The Prayer revealed by Our Lady of Fatima is: "O, my Jesus, forgive us; deliver us from the flames of Hell and have mercy on the souls in Purgatory,

chiefly those most abandoned." This to be said after the "Gloria Patti" which follows each decade of the Rosary. (Fonseca: Nossa Senhora de Fatima, p. 23.)

Whether any faith be put in the private pamphlets quoted herein or not, there is one pamphlet which should not go unread in these times, namely "Pius XII and Peace" put out by the N. C. W. C., 1312 Massachusetts Ave. N. W., Washington, D. C. It may be expected that the pope will have much more to say. Follow his words carefully. The prayers and conditional prophecies in the works of Pius XII are most valuable. The prophecies give no appearance of revelations. They are rather external truths applied to our times. Finally, "Principles of Peace," published by the N. C. W. C. contains the mature thought of the last five Popes on the subject of peace

*Come, Holy Ghost, Who ever one  
Art with the Father and the Son,  
Come, Holy Ghost, our souls possess  
With Thy full flood of holiness.*

*In will and deed, by heart and tongue,  
With all our pow'rs Thy praise be sung,  
And love light up our mortal frame,  
Till others catch the living flame.*



*O Comforter, to Thee we cry,  
The heav'nly gift of God Most High,  
Thou fount of life and fire of love  
And sweet anointing from above.*

*Praise we the Father and the Son,  
And Holy Spirit with them one;  
And may the Son on us bestow  
The gifts that from the Spirit flow*

# INDEX TO PROPHETS AND PROPHECIES

(Reference to numbers, not pages)

- Adso, Abbot of Montier-en-Der: 79  
Ageda, Bishop Christianos: 98  
Agreda, Sister Mary of: 130  
Alacoque, St. Margaret Mary: 128b  
d'Ally, Cardinal: 110
- Alphonsa Eppinger: *see* "Eppinger"  
Amadeus, Blessed John, de Sylva: 116 and 117  
Amos: 15  
Anthony of Aix-la-Chapelle: 167  
Anonymous: 92 and 200
- Apocalypse: St. John: 32; of Thomas: *see* "Thomas"  
Apostles, Epistle of the: 57 and 58  
Apostolic Constitutions: *see* "Didache"  
Ars, Cure of: 163  
Asdente, Sister Rose Columba, of Taggia: 159
- Asher: 56  
Augustine, St., of Hippo: 35  
Aystinger the German: 91  
Bacon, Roger: 99  
Bartholomew, Venerable, da Saluzzo: 142
- Baourdi, Marie: 144  
Baruch: 10 and 41  
Bearcan, St.: 68  
Becket, St. Thomas a : *see* "Thomas"  
Belez, Nursing Nun of: 152
- Benedict, Pope, XV: 181  
Bernardine Sister: 185  
Bernhardt Rembordt: *see* "Rembordt"  
Berry, Rev. Dr. E. Sylvester: 180 ff  
Billiante, Countess Francesca de: 184
- Birch-Tree Prophecy: 89 (See "Peter Schlinkert")  
Blois, Prophecy of: *see* "Gaultier"  
Bosco, St. Don John : 173  
Bobolo, St. Andrew: 148  
Bourg, Mother Josefa von: 145
- Bridget, St., of Sweden: 106  
Bufalo, Blessed Caspar del: 154  
Busto, Bernardine von: 119  
Caesar, St.: 67  
Calliste, Father: 156 (Recorder for Bl. Anna Maria Taigi)
- Canori-Mora, Elizabeth: *see* "Mora"  
Capestran, St. John: 113  
Capuchin Friar: *see* "Franciscan Friar"  
Caspar del Bufalo: *see* "Bufalo"  
Cataldus, St.: *see* "Kataldus"
- Catherine Mattel, Blessed, of Racconigi: 121  
Catherine, St., of Sienna: 107  
Chambau, Sister Marie: 178  
Chrysostom, St. John: 36  
Chicago layman: 196
- Chicago mother: 195  
Clausi, Father Bernard Maria: 161  
Chesser Lortie: *see* "Lortie"  
Cleft-Rock, Brother John of the: 104  
Colomba, Sister Rose: *see* "Asdente"
- Columcille (Columba) St.: 70  
Cristine, Lucie: 177  
Cyril the Hermit (St.): 108  
Daniel: 12  
Daniel, Book of (Apocryphal): 52-54
- Deuteronomy: 2  
Didache (Apostolic Constitutions): 33  
Dionysius of Luxemburg (Letzenburg): 132  
Dionysius Ryckel: *see* "Ryckel"  
Dolcino: 109
- Earling Mystic: 197  
Ecclesiaticus (Sirac): 7  
Edward, St., of England : 80  
Emmerich, Venerable Anne Catherine: 172  
English, Old: 85

Enoch: 44  
 Eppinger, Mother Alphonsa: 166  
 Ezechiel: 11 and 47  
 Ezra: 48 (Apocryphal)  
 Fatima, Prophecy of: 179c  
  
 Ferrer, St. Vincent : 111  
  
 Fluh, Blessed Nicholas: 118 (Known also as "Brother Klaus")  
 Francesca, Countess, de Billiante: *see* "Billiante"  
 Francis, St., de Paul: 114  
 Franciscan Father of Arizona: 190  
  
 Franciscan Friar: 139  
 Gameleo: 124  
 Gaultier, Sister Marianne: 144 (Known also as "Sister Marianne")  
 Gekner, Rudolph: 131  
 German, Old: 88  
  
 Gertrude, St.: 102b  
 Gora, Jasna: *see* "Jasna Gora"  
 Goires, Joseph v.: 160  
 Gregory, Pope St., the Great: 37  
 Grignon: *see* "Montfort"  
  
 Hampole: *see* "Rolle"  
 Herman, Monk, of Lehnin: 103  
 Hermes, Pastor: 34  
 Henoch, Book of: 44  
 Hilarion, Monk: 81 and 115  
  
 Hildegard, St.: 84  
 Holzhauser, Venerable Bartholomew: 129  
 Italian, Old: 93  
 Irish, Old: 75  
 Isaias: 8; Testament of: 43  
  
 Jahenney, Marie Julie, of La Fraudais: 174  
 James, The Epistle of: 59 (Apocryphal)  
 Jane Le Royer: 141 (Known also as "Sister Mary of the Nativity")  
 Japanese Prophecy: 126  
  
 Jasna Gora: 198  
 Jeremias (Jeremiah): 9  
 Jerome, St.: 39  
 Jesuit Founder: 120  
 Joachim, Blessed, of Fiore: 97 (Known also as "Merlin Joachim")  
  
 Joel: 14  
 John, St., the Evangelist: Gospel: 21; 1st Epistle: 29; 2nd Epistle: 30; Apocalypse: 32 ;  
 John Baptist Vianney *see* Ars;  
 St. John Capestran: 113  
 John, Brother, of the Cleft-Rock: *see* "Cleft-Rock"  
  
 Josefa von Bourg: *see* "Bourg"  
 Jubilees, Book of : 46  
 Judah, Book of: 50  
 Jude, Epistle of: 31  
 Kataldus, St.: 64  
  
 Klaus, Brother: *see* "Flub"  
 Korzeniecki, Father: 148  
 Lactantius: 38  
 Lamy, Pere: 183  
 Lang, Matthew: 149  
  
 La Roque, Cardinal: *see* "Roque"  
 Lataste, Sister Marie: 158  
 Latin, Old: 94  
 Lavinsky, Father: 134  
 Lehnin, Prophecy of: *see* "Herman"  
  
 Leo XIII, Pope: 188b.  
 Leo the Philosopher: 78  
 Levi, Book of: 49  
 Leviticus: 1  
 Lortie, Chester: 178b  
  
 Lucie Christine: *see* "Christine"  
 Luke, St. (Gospel): 20  
 Luxemburg: *see* "Dionysius"  
 Maccabees, Book of: 18  
 Maeltamlacht, St.: 74  
  
 Madgeburg, Chronicles of: 90  
 Malachy, St.: 82  
 Maurus Rabanus: *see* "Rabanus"  
 Markiewicz, X. B.: 182  
 Margaret Mary St.: *see* "Alacoque"  
  
 Martel, Marie, of Tilly: 176  
 Mary of Earling: *see* "Earling"  
 Mary, Sister, of Jesus Crucified: *see* "Baourdi"  
 Matthew Lang: *see* "Lang"  
 Matthew, St. (Gospel): 19

Mayence, Prophecy of: 162  
 Merlin: 72  
 Methodius, St.: 40  
 Micheas: 16  
 Monessen layman: 199

Montfort, Blessed Louis Marie Grignon de: 135  
 Mora, Elizabeth Canori: 150  
 Nativitas: *see* "Jane"  
 Nectou, Father, S. J.: 137  
 Nepthali: 55

Neumann, Therese: 181  
 New York laywoman: 193  
 Nicholas, Blessed, of Flub: *see* under "Flub"  
 Nostredamus (Nostradamus) ; Michael: 123  
 Odile, (Odilia), St.: 76

Oria, Palma Maria: *see* "Palma"  
 Orval Prophecy: 102  
 Osee: 13  
 Ossolinski Library Prophecy: 175  
 Otrante: *see* "Werdin"

Padua, Monk of: 136  
 Palma Maria Addolorata Matarelli d'Oria: 165  
 Parallelipomenon: 3  
 Pastor Hermes: *see* "Hermes".  
 Paul, St.: 22-27

Paul, St. Francis de: *see* "Francis"  
 Peter, St.: 28  
 Peter, Apocalypse of: 61  
 Philosopher, Leo the: *see* "Leo"  
 Phoenix mother: 194

Pie, Cardinal: 171  
 Pius IX, Pope: 169  
 Pius X, Pope: 179  
 Pius XI, Pope: 188a  
 Pius XII, Pope: 189, and Appendix

Poreaus, David: 127  
 Porsat, Venerable Magdalen : 68  
 Premol, Prophecy of: 65  
 Psalms: 4  
 Psalms of Solomon: 45

Pyramid Prophecy: 191  
 Rabanus Maurus, Blessed: 77  
 Racconigi: *see* "Catherine"  
 Rafols, Mother Maria: 147  
 Reisinger, Father Theophilus : 192

Rembordt, Bernhardt : 140  
 Remigius, St.: 66  
 Ressehc—pen name for Lortie q. v.  
 Ricci, Father Laurence: 138  
 Richard Rolle: *see* "Rolle"

Richter, Bishop Jean Paul: 146  
 Rocco, Louis : 157a  
 Rock, Blessed John of the Cleft: *see* "Cleft"  
 Rolle, Richard, of Hampole: 105  
 Roger Bacon: *see* "Bacon"

Roman, Old: 95  
 Roque, Cardinal La: 155  
 Royer, Jane: *see* "Jane"  
 Ryckel, Dionysius: 118b  
 Saluzzo: *see* "Bartholomew"

Saxon, Old: 87  
 Schlinkert, Peter: *see* "Birch-Tree"  
 Scotch, Old: 86  
 Senanus, St.: 69  
 Shepherd of Hermes: *see* "Hermes"

Shipton, Mother: 122  
 Sibylline Oracles: 63  
 Sibylla Tiburtina: 96  
 Sienna, St. Catherine of: *see* "Catherine"  
 Silva, Amadeus: *see* "Amadeus"

Sirac: *see* "Ecclesiasticus"  
 Solomon, Psalms of: *see* "Psalms"  
 Souffrand, Abbe: 151  
 Spielbahn: *see* "Rembordt"  
 Steiner, Abbess Marie: 164

Strassbourg Prophecy: *see* "Mayence"  
 Taigi, Blessed Anna Maria Giannetti: 156  
 Talmud: 62  
 Telesphorus of Cosenza: 125  
 Testament of Isaias: 43

Thomas, Apocalypse of: 60

Thomas, St., a Becket: 83

Tobias: 6

Tobit: 42

Ultan, St.: 71

Vatiguerro, John of: 100

Vianney, St. John Baptist: *see* "Ars"

Vincent, St. Ferrer: *see* "Ferrer"

Votin, Father Jerome: 112

Wallraff, Helen: 143

Welsh, Old: 73

Werdin, Abbot, d'Otrante: 101

Werl, Monk of: 133

Wisdom, Book of: 5

Wittman, Bishop George Michael: 153

Zabulon: 51

# THE REIGN OF ANTICHRIST



*By*  
**R. GERALD CULLETON**



*"Lord wilt Thou at this time restore the Kingdom of Israel? . . .It is not for you to know the times or dates which the Father has fixed" Acts 1: 6-7*

*"Let no one deceive you . . . The day of the Lord will not come unless the apostasy comes first and the man of sin is revealed ... who ... gives himself out as if he were God." 2 Thes. 3-4*



TAN BOOKS AND PUBLISHERS, INC.

Rockford, Illinois 61105



**REV. R. GERALD CULLETON**

September 10, 1902 – February 19, 1950

Copyright 1951 by Academy Duplicating Service, Fresno, California

Copyright © 1974 by TAN Books and Publishers, Inc.

PRINTED AND BOUND IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TAN BOOKS AND PUBLISHERS, INC.

P.O. Box 424

Rockford, Illinois 61105

1974

## PUBLISHER'S PREFACE

Originally issued in 1951, the *The Reign of Antichrist* forms a companion volume to *The Prophets and Our Times* (1941) and is very much like the latter in scope and content. Two important differences in the books, however, should be noted: *The Reign of Antichrist* comprises Biblical prophecies as well as saintly prophecies; whereas, *The Prophets and Our Times* covers saintly prophecies almost entirely. Secondly, *The Reign of Antichrist* deals with a slightly different period of time, that, obviously of the individual Antichrist; *The Prophets and Our Times* deals with the period just before the reign of Antichrist, a period dominated by the Great Monarch. A careful reading of these two books will indicate that the time of the Great Monarch more or less prefigures that of Antichrist, although the two personages have generally reversed roles; that is, the times of both men are calamitous for the Catholic Church and for society. The Great Monarch's ascension to power ends the turmoil and initiates an unprecedented peace; on the other hand, Antichrist's coming to power ends the great peace and prosperity of the Great Monarch and heralds the most dreadful situation for both Church and society, which situation ends in the second coming of Our Lord.

The present work is by no means perfect, and all readers should recognize this before they start. Our purpose in reprinting it is twofold: It is a wonderful source book, one from which students of the subject can make an excellent beginning and from which, perhaps some really good student of eschatology, using other existing sources also, can give us a truly authoritative work on the subject. Secondly, there is practically nothing in print in this area that is even remotely reliable. *History of Antichrist*, by Rev. P. Huchede (1884) is a notable exception, being not only authoritative, but brief and highly readable. Our suggestion is that this book be read before *The Reign of Antichrist*, if possible, or at least shortly thereafter; it is an excellent outline of Catholic teaching relative to Antichrist. A first reading of Father Huchede's book should be followed by one where the reader looks up all the Biblical passages cited there. In this manner, the subject becomes extremely clear. Father Huchede bases his thesis upon Scripture, Tradition, and the Fathers and Doctors of the Church. Father Culleton, however, actually quotes the passages from scripture and the Fathers and Doctors of the Church, plus gives numerous sources of written tradition; added to these, moreover, he quotes

many saints and holy people who possessed the gift of prophecy themselves. Having all these prophetic passages under one cover singularizes *The Reign of Antichrist* as a unique and valuable book in its field.

A word of warning needs to be interjected here. Sainly prophecies are not "of faith" (*de fide* pronouncements) and most of the Biblical prophecies regarding Antichrist have not been given official interpretation; consequently, we must observe precaution in interpreting them and in basing our actions upon them, especially until the Church has made judgment in their regard. Nonetheless, these prophecies, both Biblical and saintly, were given and intended for our enlightenment and should not be casually put aside. "Despise not prophecies," says St. Paul, "but prove all things." (1 *Thes.* 5:20-21). Also he tells us, "Follow after charity, be zealous for spiritual gifts; but rather that you may prophesy ... He that prophesieth, speaketh to men unto edification, and exhortation, and comfort . . . He that prophesieth, edifieth the church . . . For greater is he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues." (1 *Cor.* 14:1,3,4,5). We would indeed be most foolish if we debunked the prophecies Father Culleton has gathered together here, for they form an impressive collection, probably the most thorough treatment on the subject in print. Perhaps it is even providential that the book is being reissued at this time, along with *The Prophets and Our Times* as well. Together, these two books tell quite a story about the future. And the great divergence of the sources of the prophecies cited is itself the most compelling argument for their validity.

Needless to say, the doctrine on Antichrist is very much a part of our Catholic theology and Tradition, and as such, must be considered carefully by all men, the learned and the unlearned alike, for the Antichrist, when he comes, will affect the lives of all men. Based upon the firmness of their faith and the correctness of their knowledge, men will either apostatize or remain faithful to Christ and His Church. Thus, it will be seen that a knowledge of the prophecies regarding Antichrist is of an immensely practical nature.

We have omitted from the book the secret messages of the La Salette apparition (1846—approved by the Church in 1851), and the reader will find under Number 337 on page 163 a note to this effect. Pages 164 through 170 are missing entirely and only part of pages 163 and 171

appear. In the proper place we have explained why this was done. Other than that, a correction has been made concerning the "Secret of Fatima" on page 186. The wording of the original edition was not precisely what it should have been, and the author issued with each book a preface sheet containing also some corrections; this particular correction we have thought to include new in the body of the book, as well as two others of merely typographical nature. The balance of the author's loose-leaf enclosure has been added as the "Author's Preface."

Some readers no doubt will question Father Culleton's including Number 315, the prophecy of Michael Nostradamus (page 144) because Nostradamus was an astrologer, or at least a student of that subject. Presumably, this was due to Nostradamus' great overall accuracy as a prophet. Although Jewish by birth, he was a Catholic and apparently a very devout one. Moreover, he believed his prophetic foresight was so accurate that he scrambled his quatrains (the enigmatic, four-line verses in which he cast most of his prophecies), in order that people would not be too frightened of the future. Cultivation of the occult sciences is of course forbidden, but to what extent he relied upon astrology to make his predictions, if at all, I do not know. Nonetheless, his reputation for accuracy is great; however, in the particular predictions Father Culleton quotes here, he seems to have made several errors. But the same is true for the predictions of Father Theophilus Reisinger, O. F. M., Cap. (No. 369; page 222), the renowned exorcist of Earling, Iowa fame, popularized by the booklet *Begone Satan*.

This leads immediately into the question of errors in saintly prophecies. Does this obvious element of error

vitiating the entire book. I do not believe it does, and for the following reasons: First, prophecies are about the future, and events, spiritually speaking, are greatly dependent upon the moral quality of human lives; when mankind improves his behavior, he can forestall or remove imminent catastrophe from happening. The prophet might be predicting in the sense of "if conditions do not change, then . . ." Second, a prophet may simply be misquoted. Third, he may be misinterpreted. And finally, the person in question may not in fact have the prophetic gift, as I believe is the case with Father Reisinger, whose forte or charisma was exorcism; the prediction given by him was through a second party, a mystic who received a locution.

Over all, however, the reader will see that most of Father Culleton's book contains passages that tend to support one another and which in general elucidate what Sacred Scripture has to say on Antichrist, and it is for this reason that we have reissued his book. May it bring enlightenment to its readers on this sorely abused subject, and may it inspire people today to turn to a serious spirituality in their lives, as the only valid bulwark to the onslaught of "the man of sin," a spirituality including prayer, penance, good works, spiritual reading, and frequenting the Sacraments, the formula laid down by the saints for spiritual perfection. This, after all, should be the end result of all our reading—growth in holiness so that we may earn salvation through the merits of Our Lord Jesus Christ, no matter what it may be our fate to live through.

Thomas A. Nelson

July 1, 1974

Feast of the Precious Blood

# TABLE OF CONTENTS



<b>Publisher's Preface.....</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>Author's Preface.....</b>	<b>126</b>
<b>Introductory Chapter.....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>Scripture Prophecies.....</b>	<b>136</b>
<b>Apocryphal Scripture.....</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>The Earliest Christian Writers.....</b>	<b>78</b>
<b>Later Christian Writers.....</b>	<b>121</b>
<b>Modern Sages.....</b>	<b>144</b>
<b>Twentieth Century Prophets.....</b>	<b>183</b>
<b>Bibliography.....</b>	<b>225</b>
<b>Index To Authors.....</b>	<b>227</b>

## EDITOR'S PREFACE

Father Gerald Culleton lost his life in an automobile accident, February 19, 1950. He was on his way to say Sunday Mass in his mission church when his car struck a truck in the thick fog. This was at the place called Traver on U. S. Highway 99. He is buried in Holy Cross Cemetery, Fresno, California.

The manuscript for this book was pretty well completed when he died. The index and bibliography only were missing. These and two quotations have been added by the editor; also a couple of prophecies since repudiated by Church authority have been omitted, as has a large section from the introduction. This was necessary to keep the size and price down.

It is most important that readers understand that inclusion of any private prophecy in this book does not in any way indicate that it is approved by the Church or even by the author of this work. This is merely an historical presentation of oracles that at the moment are read by good Christians.

The author, as a rule, avoids expressing his own views. Now that he has gone to his reward we may well ask just what were those views. Did he expect Antichrist in the 1950's? So far as we can learn he held no definite personal views as to the time of Antichrist's appearance. He did believe, however, that private prophets expected a very great anti-Christian movement (or an antichrist more fierce than any yet encountered) in this present decade. This person or movement would set out to conquer the world and would be at first very successful. The attempt would be defeated just when it would seem about to overcome the last remnant of opposition. As is natural he felt that if these prophets are true, Communism is this anti-Christian force.

As to the object which would defeat this force he was not at all sure. Would it be a person and thing still more evil, namely the Antichrist par excellence, or a Christian organization under a personage often called in prophecy the Great Monarch, or a more apparent miracle (such as three days darkness), or something that would typify the Second Coming of Christ? He found the prophets too diversified to find an answer to this question. The diversity need not mean contradiction, for each prophet may speak of different times or different phases of the same time.

Some private prophets give very precise dates. This is one of the simplest ways of eliminating a prophecy from the realm of truth. If the date arrives and the words are not fulfilled then evidently God has not spoken, or if he has, he meant one of many antichrists and the prophet thought he meant the Antichrist.

The author did not hope to be able to make a collection of prophecies all of which would be true. All he could do was bring together all which at the moment seemed likely to be trustworthy. Just as Satan has a hand in false religions, chiefly because they tend to make religion itself ridiculous, so also does he take a hand in false prophecy, again in an effort to make all prophecy ridiculous. Nevertheless, just as the true religion shall survive and prove itself, so also shall those prophecies that are true survive and prove themselves. If one or other prophecy recorded in this book be repudiated, let it be understood that others still stand.

Father Culleton wrote his first book **THE PROPHETS AND OUR TIMES** at the suggestion of Monsignor (later Bishop) Philip G. Scher, who was the pastor when he was an assistant at Monterey. The book itself was written somewhat later when father was pastor at Taft, California (1934 - 1944). It was widely read having gone through three editions totaling 12,500 copies. Most purchasers who wrote the author complained that so many had borrowed their copies that the book was literally read to pieces.

Father was born at Fresno, California, September 10, 1902 of Irish immigrant parentage: Patrick J. Culleton, of Coolgraney, Co. Kilkenny and Mary J. McCrory of Aghagallon, Co. Antrim. He was one of four children. After the grammar and high grades at the local parish school, he went to Santa Clara College. Having decided to be a diocesan priest, he transferred to St. Patrick's Seminary, Menlo Park, California and three years later went to the American College in Rome, where he was ordained March 24, 1928. He has a brother a priest and a sister and aunt in the convent.

After assistancies at Hanford, Monterey, Salinas, and San Luis Obispo, he became pastor of Taft and then of Wasco. He contracted undulant fever in the latter place and was sent to the cooler climate of Soledad, where he was Chaplain at the Medium Security Prison. It was while he

was in Wasco and Soledad that he collected and arranged the material for this book. The typing was done by one of the Soledad prisoners.

His health was restored somewhat at Soledad. He was then given a district in the San Joaquin Valley to develop into a parish. This was July 29, 1949. By February 20, 1950, he had built a rectory and otherwise developed the place to the point where on that day Bishop Aloysius J. Willinger established the parish of the Sacred Heart, Exeter, with Father Culleton as its first pastor.

Father had not been well for some weeks before his death, which he expected without knowing why, and which he asked others to help him prepare for. He had special devotion to the Holy Ghost, Saints Michael, Gabriel of our Sorrowful Mother, Gemma Galgani, and Maria Goretti, and great faith in relics and sacramentals. He always gave ready submission to the desires of his superiors.

The manuscript for this book passed by will to Father's bishop, who gave it to us with permission to print and distribute it.



## PREFACE

It has not been my intention to inject myself or my personal opinions into this book. On the whole it is not to be considered so much a theological as an historical presentation; The purpose has been to put into the hands of as many readers as possible the thoughts of many different persons, all of them pious and some of them learned. In all cases where I could detect any intention to deceive, the material has been excluded. In other cases, and this is really my only intrusion, when a statement seemed to me in need of clarification or of modification from a doctrinal point of view, I have added a footnote or remarks in parenthesis.

Were it not for a book such as this, it would be humanly impossible for the ordinary person, lay or clerical, to get an over-all picture, in original sources, of the thought of true believers on the Antichrist through the long centuries that the Antichrist idea has formed an indispensable segment of divine teaching. This because Antichrist literature is widely scattered and for the most part in books long out of print and besides closed to the ordinary person in that they are not in the English language.

I do not pretend to have satisfied the requirements of scholars in the presentation of these texts ; but I do not write the book for scholars. They can look up the material for themselves. Were the texts to be issued in the critical manner of the scholar, the lifetime of one man and the wealth of many could not have produced this book and when it was produced, no one but a scholar could or would have read it.

I am not satisfied myself with some of the sources; but I doubt that any serious errors, that have not been pointed out, have crept into the books that I have used. Some of the translations, too, are imperfect; but not so imperfect that they distort the original.

A really good book on Antichrist by several scholars working together and in libraries, which my busy life in a parish made impossible, is surely in order. I will be the first to hail the man or men who will issue a better book on this fascinating subject.

The Author

November 16, 1949

## **AUTHOR'S PREFACE**

This first edition of THE REIGN OF ANTICHRIST has been printed at the request of and exclusively for several persons who own and appreciate a copy of THE PROPHETS AND OUR TIMES. It is a second volume along the same idea.

Apart from being the first attempt in any language to give a complete picture of the Antichrist of prophecy, this work also lays claim to being the first genuine book printed with paper plates instead of with type, or the zinc plates heretofore in use.

We have issued the book as a printed manuscript but as noted at the end of the Editor's Preface, it is issued with the bishop's permission. To assure our readers, however, we submitted the book in its present form to the book censor for the Diocese of Monterey-Fresno, Reverend Amancio Rodriguez, S. T. D. His reply is as follows:

"I have examined the book, THE REIGN OF ANTICHRIST, and found nothing in it against Faith or Morals. However, it should be noted at the beginning that the scriptural texts never have received an authentic interpretation by the church and that in the case of private revelations they are only matter of private opinion."

If this edition meets with favor we shall issue another for the general public. Meanwhile, we will appreciate your criticism and any information you may have on additional prophecies, old and new.

## INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER

Since the author or rather the compiler of this book has no merit as a theologian, he has felt that he will perform a better service if he lets others do most of the talking. For this reason, even this introduction will come almost entirely from the mouths of men whose knowledge and ability are beyond doubt.

The fundamentals of the Christian idea of Antichrist are in the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians and in the Apocalypse, so we will hear what Father Prat has to say about the former and Father LeFrois about the latter. Most theologians devote very little space to Antichrist so we have chosen to translate from the work of Father Herve whose comments are typical. I have interjected a few remarks in parenthesis. Neglect them if you wish.

The only point I am forced to make deals with an opinion now quite widespread, that the times of Antichrist are upon us. The only reason I speak is because I have found no one without preconceived ideas whom I can quote.

First : Several have told me that Antichrist is already born. One puts him in Pennsylvania, another in Illinois, a third

in Iraq; a fourth has informed me that he already has temples in the four corners of the earth, one corner being Chicago and another Los Angeles. Christ has said, "If they say, lo, here is Christ or there, go ye not out to look." If I err not, this means we should not bother with these rumors. When Antichrist comes, the whole world will know him, the elect for what he is, the rest for what he is not.

Second: It is said that the times in which we live fit very well into those which will immediately precede the coming of Antichrist. This is not for me to judge. They are indeed evil times. They are more intensely and widespreadly evil than any that have existed since Constantine. They will, no doubt, get worse. The Church will suffer much more than She now suffers. But whether what we now see or may live to see is any more than one of the numerous eras which are to precede Antichrist, I do not know. There are those quoted in this book who say we are near the times of Antichrist. Who am I to say they are wrong? But on the other hand, who are they, that we are to believe them. We do not doubt their good faith. The value of their word we know not.

### ANTICHRIST ACCORDING TO SAINT PAUL'S EPISTLES

In **2 Thess.** 2:3-12 Saint "Paul merely recalls here, with a few allusions, some features of his oral preaching. He takes it for granted that the Thessalonians are familiar with these ideas, for the instructions given to the neophytes always included a chapter on the last things associated with the parousia.<sup>1</sup> The Apostle contents himself with refreshing their memory of them. He formerly taught orally, and now he repeats in writing — but in terms the conciseness of which makes them enigmatical for us — that the last day is to be preceded by two great crises — the apostasy and the appearance of Antichrist. He speaks of both as of things well known which do not need explanation.

"The apostasy indicates certainly a religious defection, a revolt against God or his representatives. It appears to be closely connected with the acts and wonders wrought by the great adversary. The latter, formally distinguished from Satan, who lends him his aid and uses him as an

agent, is described with the traits and characteristics of the persons of whom he is the antitype. He will lift himself up above all that is God or is called God, like Antiochus Epiphanes ; he will give himself out for God and will wish to be treated as God, like the Prince of Tyre in Ezechiel and the King of Babylon in Isaias; he will sit in the very Temple of God, like the abomination of desolation predicted by Daniel.

"These reminders are not so much new prophecies as allusions to old texts; it is not necessary to expect the literal verification of them, they are symbols realizable according to a law of proportion unknown to us. When we read that the Lord Jesus 'will destroy the wicked one with the spirit (breath) of his mouth,' these words recall to us the way in which the Son of David, according to Isaias, is to destroy impiety; but what can we conclude from them as to the real way in which those things will take place? What is said, aside from figures of speech, is that Antichrist will work false miracles, signs and wonders, will seduce a great many souls, and also cause a schism in

<sup>1</sup>Second coming of Christ.

the Church, but that he will finally be conquered, and that his fall will be the signal for the parousia.

"In one point only does Paul go beyond his predecessors. He speaks of an obstacle which hinders the immediate coming of Antichrist, and gives us the following description of it: It is a person or something personified (masculine), and at the same time a physical or moral force (neuter). The obstacle is already active and it checks the mystery of iniquity; it prevents the advance of the wicked one. As soon as this obstacle disappears the field will be open to Antichrist whose appearance seems likely to precede but shortly the appearance of the Son of God. What is this obstacle? The Thessalonians had learned what it is from the mouth of the Apostle, but we are ignorant of it now, and everything leads us to suppose that we shall always be ignorant of it. The proverbial obscurity of this passage has given rise to innumerable solutions.

"With brotherly unanimity, Albigenses, Waldenses, Hussites, the disciples of Wycliffe, of Luther and Calvin, and ancient and modern Anglicans, down to the nineteenth century, have seen in Antichrist the Pope and in the obstacle which opposes the triumph of the former, first the Roman Emperor and later the German Emperor. In 1518, when the first ideas of revolt were fermenting in him, Luther had a slight suspicion that the Pope might indeed be Antichrist; in 1519, he was almost sure of it, and at the end of that year, when the rupture with Rome was complete, he had become entirely certain of it. Ten years later, he was indignant that the Augsburg confession had made no mention of such a fundamental article of faith. The mistake was remedied at Smalkalde, where it was declared that 'the Pope is the true Antichrist who has elevated himself against Christ and above him.'

"The only divergence among the Protestants is that some have admitted two Antichrists — one for the East, namely Mohammed and Islam; the other for the West, the Pope and the Papacy. One bolder commentator has even discovered that if the Pope is always Antichrist, of course the mystery of iniquity is Jesuitism, while the temple of God is the pure Lutheran doctrine, and the obstacle which resists the advent, not of Antichrist, as the text of St. Paul requires, but of Jesus, is still the Pope. It is not long since the Lutherans, Calvinists and Anglicans gave up this exegesis, which was for them more sacred than the most solemn definition of faith is for us. So difficult to uproot are the prejudices of sect and caste, strengthened by habit and education!

"As for the rationalists, they all declare that the prophecy of St. Paul has not been fulfilled and never will be. It is only a dream of the Apostle. But when they try to say precisely what the object of this dream is, they are so divided that it is impossible to find two of them with the same opinion.

"Nor can we say that Catholic commentators are any more agreed. However, in spite of infinite divergences of detail, they almost all regard the parousia as the personal return of Jesus Christ coming to judge the living and the dead; they see in Antichrist an individual, although St. Augustine thinks rather of a tendency; in the apostasy they see a defection and a revolt, either religious or political, or both at the same time; in the mystery of iniquity, either Nero and the persecutors, or heretics and schismatics; in the temple of God, either the Temple of Jerusalem rebuilt or the Christian Church; finally, in the obstacle, they see either the Roman Empire or its heir, the Christian State. But what State today constructs a dyke against the invasion of evil? In despair of finding any other solution, some are forced to hold that it is the faith still living in many hearts or the command to preach the Gospel throughout the world.

"Not only is the 'obstacle' not yet found, but we doubt whether it has ever been looked for in the right direction. Paul keeps to the ideas of Jewish and Christian eschatology. Like Daniel and St. John, he describes a conflict between good and evil, which has its echo on the earth, but the scene and principal seat of which are elsewhere. It is, in fact, Satan who begins it and maintains it, helping his tool with all his might. The antagonist must be a power of the same order. In the prophecy of Daniel it is the commander of the heavenly hosts, the chief of the people of God, Michael, who takes up the cause of the holy nation, especially at the time of the great tribulation and on the eve of the resurrection of the dead. In St. John it is still Michael at the head of his angels who fights against the Dragon, the old Serpent, Lucifer, the Devil, Satan, and who finally wins the victory for Christ.

"The struggle between Michael and Satan goes on through the centuries. There is no need of interrogating the Apocrypha — the Book of Enoch, the Testament of the Twelve Patriarchs, or the Apocalypse of Moses — to know what a leading role the Archangel Michael is to play at the last day. It is he, according to St. Paul — the thing is scarcely doubtful — who will give the signal for the resurrection and the judgment. Will it not be also he — the

protector first of the Synagogue and then of the Church -- who with his legions will bar the passage of the powers of held until the fullness of time? All the features of Paul's description are applicable to him; a personal being, he commands an army and represents a force; he is immortal, and his fight against Satan, begun in the apostolic epoch, runs on through history to its final climax. If his

momentary disappearance signified a defeat or a destruction this character would not be applicable to him, but the Apostle's words do not mean this, and need not be thus understood. Until the baffled exegetes have found a better solution it is here that we shall seek for the mysterious 'obstacle' that retards the appearance of Antichrist." (Fernand Prat, S. J., *The Theology of St. Paul*, 1927. Vol. I, pp. 79-83).

## ANTICHRIST ACCORDING TO THE APOCALYPSE

"Despite the fact that the spiritual or ideal interpretation of the Apocalypse, elaborated chiefly by Father Allo, O. P., has gained many adherents in the past forty years, there is an ever increasing number of authors who, along the lines of the earliest Church Fathers, prefer to give an eschatological interpretation to the greater part of that prophetic book of the New Testament. It would be interesting to see what such an interpretation would offer in detail. A summary picture would probably result as follows.

"The Apocalypse is chiefly the grand finale of the Kingdom of God on earth, the completion of all prophecies in a final synthesis.

"Part I (1:9-3:22) depicts the First Age of the Church with its needs and impending trials. Part II (4:1-20 :15) sets forth the Final Age of the Church. Such a combination of events widely separated in time is common to the prophetic vision. However, a connecting bridge between the two eras is probably given in a second fulfillment of Part I, namely, the typical sense of the Seven Letters.

"Part II opens with the Almighty Judge seated in judgment together with His heavenly court (Apoc. 4 :1-5 :14). His final decrees for mankind are in the sealed scroll. But He has given all judgment to the Son (John 5:22), so it is the Lamb, once slain by man, who executes these decrees on man, through the mediation of the angelic world. Part II has two sections.

"Section One (6:1-11:19) portrays the great distress among the nations on account of the calamities which the Lamb allows to overtake the world in punishment for unbelief. These calamities are in origin terrestrial (Ch. 6), celestial (Ch. 8), and infernal (Ch. 9). Even a foretaste of hell is given to mankind before the great day of reckoning. Also in St. Luke's eschatological chapter, there is a clear distinction made between ordinary wars and insurrections

on the one hand, and universal war, calamity, famine and death on the other. The latter is the sign of the coming judgment (Luke 21:9 and 10-11).

"The period of great distress coincides with the 'Major Apostasy' of 2 Thess. 2:3 and with the end of the 'Time of the Gentiles.' After describing the destruction of Jerusalem, Jesus said : 'And Jerusalem will be trodden down by the Gentiles until the times of the nations to be fulfilled' (Luke 21:24). The great distress brought physical death to many on earth, but like in the days of the flood (see 1 Peter 3:20), many found repentance before death and washed their robes in the blood of the Lamb, and an innumerable crowd remained faithful to Him unto death (Apoc. 7:9-14).

"At this juncture there is place for the conversion of the Jews (as a whole) (see Rom. 11:13-25). 'A partial blindness only has befallen Israel until the full number of the Gentile( should enter, and thus all Israel should be saved' (Rom. 11 25). So the Church of the Last Age (represented by the 144,000 of chapter 7, sealed from both spiritual and physic( harm) shall come through unscathed, and shall once more b (predominantly) Israelitic. It shall continue so to the end, marked (sealed) by God, like Israel of old in Egypt, as Hi own people. But the nations fall back into unbelief (Luke 18:8) .

"Israel's conversion is brought about by the preaching and miracles of Elias during the great distress. 'Behold I will send you Elias the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he shall turn the heart of 4, the children to the fathers ; lest I come and strike the earth with anathema' (Mal. 4:5-6). 'Elias is indeed to come and will restore all things' (Mt. 17:11). True Israel is now spiritual; the material-minded and worldly Jews are rejected, as symbolized in the measuring of the Temple (Apoc. 11:1-2).

"Hnoch is the second witness sent back to preach penance in preparation for the coming of the reign of Antichrist. It seems that his mission is to the nations, so that they have an opportunity of salvation to the end (see Sir. 44:16). Jude 14-15 also hints at Hnoch's mission in the latter days. The ministry of the two witnesses lasts 'three and a half years' (Apoc. 11 :3), which coincides with the first half of Daniel's last 'year-week' (Dan. 9:26-27), whereas the second half of that 'year-week' coincides with the reign of Antichrist (who also reigns for three and a half years or 42 months in Apoc. 13:5) and makes desolate all religion, only to sit in the temple of God and give himself out to be God (2 Thess. 2 :4). This is either a typical fulfillment of Daniel's last year-week, or there was a suspension in Daniel's vision after the seven plus sixty-two weeks until the time of the nations be fulfilled, and then the vision is resumed with the last year-week concerning Daniel's own people : Israel.

"Section Two of Part II (12:1-20:15) portrays the godless reign of a personal Antichrist, and the subsequent utter destruction of his kingdom, metropolis, and devotees. The stage is prepared by showing the Church of the Consummation fitted out with the characteristics of the Virgin-Mother, invulnerable in this attire against the attacks of the fierce dragon. Yet the dragon prepares to engulf her in a last supreme onslaught (ch.12).

"Beast number one is collective Antichrist persecuting the People of God from its very beginnings on earth down through the centuries (Ch. 13). This it does through its seven heads but chiefly through him who caps all seven, namely, personal Antichrist, who sums up in himself all the perversity of the seven. Thus he is the eighth (Apoc. 17: 11). Seven heads which endeavored to engulf God's people on earth from the beginning of its existence are: Egypt (Pharaoh), Assyria, Babylonia, Medo-Persia (under Artaxerxes Ochos), Greco-Macedonia (in the Seleucides), Totalitarian pagan Rome (the sixth head) and a world empire of latter times. Symbolism (like in Daniel) fluctuates between a collective and a personal being, namely, an empire and a chief representative of that empire, e.g., the sixth head is represented as both empire and chief head of that empire (see 17:9). Daniel's fourth beast with the ten horns (Dan. 7:17-25) coincides with this beast of the Apocalypse in its sixth head (Apoc. 17:10). Ten horns are those state-kingdoms which fellow upon the break-up of the Roman Empire and (eventually) persecute the Church.

"Beast number two is a false Elias heralding the advent of the false Christ (Antichrist in person). By diabolical signs he succeeds in bringing over the infidel world to Antichrist. St. Paul states that this deception is also a punishment for unbelief in Christ's Gospel of truth and love (2 Thess. 2: 9-12). Antichrist's name is given a numerical value : 666. Fulfillment alone can give certitude to this riddle. The Hebrew letters of Nero (n) Kaiser amount to 666. If this is the meaning of St. John, then Antichrist will come in the spirit of Nero (the sixth head), so that the horrible beast lives again (Apoc. 13:3).

The Marian Church of the Consummation has nothing to fear from the Antichrist, for he cannot extinguish her. God gives her supernatural aid (Apoc. 12:6). She is now virginal in the purity of her conduct and her devotedness to the Lamb. Her imitation of the Lamb is unexcelled (14:4). Mindful of the advice of St. Paul (1 Cor. 7:26-31), all live the virginal ideal. The time is at hand.

"Destruction of Antichrist's metropolis and works is accomplished by angelic powers in the pouring out of the bowls of God's wrath (Ch. 16). Personal Antichrist and False Elias are overcome and cast into hell by the personal coming of Christ in glory (19:11-21).

"Millennium: Since the Holy Office decreed (July 21, 1944) that it cannot be safely taught that Christ at His Second Coming will reign visibly with only some of His saints (risen from the dead) for a period of time before the final and universal judgment, a spiritual millennium is to be seen in Apoc. 20:4-6. St. John gives a recapitulation of the activity of Satan, and the spiritual reign of the saints with Christ in heaven and in His Church on earth. When Christianity triumphed over the Beast (in its sixth head, the pagan Roman empire) Satan was chained. With the reappearance of the Beast in the anti-Christian world empire (the seventh head), he will be unchained, and muster all his forces against the Church until the peak of the persecution under Antichrist (the eighth). Meanwhile, the church enjoyed the millennium with Christ enthroned among the nations.

"Part III (Apoc. 21-22) deals exclusively with the new heaven and the transformed earth, the new Jerusalem, Paradise, and eternal happiness. It harkens back to the first three chapters of Genesis. Mankind is restored forever to God's love and friendship, but through the Lamb and the Virgin (22:1-3). And the river of God's Love shall quench

the thirst of the sons of God forever. And they shall be like unto God (22 :4-5)."

(Bernard J. LeFrois : "Eschatological Interpretation of the Apocalypse" in **The Catholic Biblical Quarterly**, Vol. XIII, pp. 17-20. This text has been added by the editor).

## ANTICHRIST AND THE END OF THE WORLD

"Christ Himself has given the signs which precede the end of the world, adding, 'When you see all these, know that it is near, (yes) at the door'. (Matt. 24:14)

"The chief signs follow:

**I.** The preaching of the Gospel in the entire world—"This Gospel will be preached in testimony to all nations, and then will come the end' (Matt. 24: 33). From this it is certain that the end of the world will not occur before the Gospel has been preached in all nations ; but it does not follow the end will be immediately after that. (Neither do we know what preaching of the Gospel implies ; but it likely means that every community in the world must be given sufficient information on the true and only Church of Christ that the people will be guilty of grave sin if they do not accept the truth).

**II.** The great defection from the Faith and the appearance of Antichrist—"Unless the defection comes first and the man of sin be revealed . . . the day of the Lord is not imminent'. (II Thess. 2 :1-4).

This defection or apostasy is one from God and his Christ, one of nations which will combat and try to abolish the Church. The Church, of course, will be preserved to the very end ; although those who are not among the 'elect' and 'whose names are not written in the book of life' will follow Anti-christ (Matt. 24: 12 ; Luke 18: 8 ; Tim. 4: 1; Apoc. 13: 8).

It is when this apostasy is at its highest that 'there will appear the evil one, whom (however) the Lord Jesus will (a) slay with the breath of His mouth and (b) destroy by the light of His coming' (II Thess. 2: 8). (Whether these two judgments of Christ are one and the same or two different punishments is not clear nor if two is there anything here to indicate that they are contemporary. If one refers to death of the body and the other to a formal condemnation to Hell on the last day, there is nothing indicating the time that is to elapse between the two).

Antichrist has precursors for already from the beginning the fight against Christ was begun; but it will be greatest

at the end of the times when the man of sin appears (This phrase end of time or latter times could mean the whole Christian era or any part of it at least so it used by St. John who told his followers: Because Christ is now opposed, we know we are in the latter times. I Joh 2:18).

This adversary of God will pass himself off as God and 'according to the operation of Satan', he will be strong 'in every power and signs and lying wonders and in every seduction of evil' (II Thess. 2:9-11). Antichrist is not a personification of persecution against the Church; but a special definite person. He is so referred to by St. John and segregated from indefinite antichrists. The Apostle always refers to him in the singular, for example, man of sin, son of perdition, the adversary, the evil one, etc. On the other hand a group could not propose itself for worship in a temple. Moreover, the Fathers and theologians traditionally have referred to him as a single definite person.

**III.** The return of Elias and Enoch—Two witnesses precede the coming of Christ as Judge and fight against Antichrist (Apoc. 11:3ss). One of them is Elias as is clear from Malachias (4:5-6), St. Matthew (1:10ss), and St. Luke (1:17). The other will be Enoch according to many Fathers, based on Ecclesiasticus (44:16) 'Henoch was transferred into Paradise that he may give repentance to the nations.'

Others, however, think the second witness will be Moses or Jeremias.

**IV.** The conversion of the Jews—This conversion will be made chiefly by the preaching of Elias. St. Paul says, 'Blind-ness in part has happened in Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles should come in. And so all Israel should be saved as it is written, He shall come out of Sion and deliver and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob'. This is the origin of the Christian persuasion of the conversion of Israel at the end of the world.

**V.** Many prodigies in the heavens and on earth (Luke 21:25-26)." Father Herve adds, "These signs are, of

course, rather indefinite and the time of Christ's Second Coming cannot be known for certain from them."

(J. M. Herve: *Manuale Theologiae Dogmaticae*, Vol. IV, Sec. 623.)

# CHAPTER I

## PROPHETIC TEXTS FROM THE BIBLE

We have used the Old Testament Scriptures as they exist in English in the Douay Version. This is the translation in common use among Catholics and the only complete Bible in the English language. It is translated from the Latin Vulgate in comparison with the Hebrew and Greek texts as they were recognized in A.D. 1582.

This version has several advantages. First, it is a translation of the whole canonical Old Testament. The non-Catholic versions leave out several books and parts of books. The Protestant divines chose to admit as sacred only those books which the Jewish rabbis, who refused to accept Christ, decided to retain in the Jewish Bible. This selection was made by the rabbis not earlier than two hundred years after the birth of Christ therefore long after Judaism had ceased to be guided by the Holy Ghost, as the true religion must be guided, and by a group of men without authority even under the Mosaic Law. Priests, Prophets, and Kings and not teachers (rabbis) represented Jehovah (Yahwey in Hebrew) in the Old Dispensation.

Modern Jewish authors<sup>1</sup> readily admit that the rabbis of the early Christian times repudiated or reinterpreted all Jewish literature which could be produced in support of the claims of Jesus Christ, himself a Jew, the last of the true Jews, and the one who from the beginning of time was des-tined to turn Judaism into a religion for all men of good will and not for just one particular race irrespective of the will, good or otherwise, of the members of that race.

Second, the Douay version has the approval of the successor of St. Peter and all the bishops of the Church Universal, whereas the chief and basic Protestant Bible contents itself with the approval of King James of England and the parliament of that nation. As is evident even to the most superficial students of Sacred Scripture there is nothing in the Bible, or elsewhere, except the laws made by Englishmen, that gives an English or any other King or any civil government any right whatever over the Word of God. "Thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my church." "Whatsoever thou shalt bind shall be bound." These words refer to Apostles and their successors exactly as they were spoken to Peter alone or Peter with all. Kings, princes and dead limbs cut off into national or

autonomous churches have no authority over God's word and much less so has each man just because he happens to be born.

Third, the Vulgate, from which the Douay derives, not only resulted from manuscripts hundreds of years older than those used by King James' men but derived from a canon (i.e. list of Sacred Books), which the whole Church for 1600 years before Luther held to be Sacred. In fact the Septuagint Greek Bible, the Bible used by Greek speaking Jews and gotten together long before Christ and when no one "had an ax to grind," is the true index to the books which the pre-Christian Jews and all the first Christians held sacred. The Septuagint has the same books as the Vulgate and in fact it was used as a guide by the translators of the Vulgate 1200 years before the first Protestant was born and just about the time that the Jewish rabbis were deciding that they wanted no part of some of the texts their ancestors had venerated.

For these then and many other reasons we use the Douay version considering the King James and its filial versions fit reading for a study of the English language but not for an impartial survey of the Word of God.

While it would have made this book much shorter to have given only the Scriptural references letting each one go to his own Bible, we reproduce the texts here to save time for our readers, and so that standing alone and in the usual paragraph form they may be more easily integrated with each other and with private prophesies.

### **201a. *Genesis On Henoch***

"And Jared lived a hundred and sixty-two years, and begot Henoch . . . And Henoch lived sixty-five years, and begot Mathusala. And Henoch walked with God : and lived after he begot Mathusala, three hundred years, and begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Henoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. And he walked with God, and was seen no more : because God took him." (5: 18-24).

**201b.** This text is used by those who say Antichrist will be from the Tribe of Dan.

"Dan shall judge his people like another tribe in Israel. Let

<sup>1</sup>E.g. Waxman: A History of Jewish Literature, Vol. I.

Dan be a snake in the way, a serpent in the path, that biteth the horse's heels that his rider may fall backward" (49: 16-17). Cf. also Gen. 3: 1 ff; Deut. 13: 1 ff; Job 4: 8 ff. All of Genesis 49 is on the last days but not all on Anti-Christ.

## **202. Deuteronomy On False Prophets**

"If there rise in the midst of thee a prophet or one that saith he hath dreamed a dream, and he foretell a sign and a wonder, and that come to pass which he spoke, and he say to thee: Let us go and follow strange gods, which thou knowest not, and let us serve them : Thou shalt not hear the words of that prophet or dreamer: for the Lord your God trieth you, that it may appear whether you love him with all your heart, and with all your soul, or not" (13: 1-3).

## **203. III Kings**

Chapters 17 to 19 and Chapter 21: 17-29 recount at length the story of Elias the Prophet and his dealings with Achab King of Israel. While a reading of this part of the Bible is essential for a life of the prophet there is little or nothing to be found there concerning the role he is to play in the last days. Subsequent students, however, may have remembered the following words when they dealt with the end of time.

a. And the word of the Lord said to Elias, "go forth, and stand upon the mount before the Lord overthrowing the mountains, and breaking the rocks in pieces : the Lord is not in the wind, and after the wind an earthquake: the Lord is not in the earthquake. And after the earthquake a fire : the Lord is not in the fire, and after the fire a whistling of a gentle air. And when Elias heard it, he covered his face with his mantle, and coming forth stood in the entering in of the cave, and behold a voice unto him, saying: What dost thou here, Elias? And he answered: With zeal have I been zealous for the Lord God of hosts: because the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant: they have destroyed thy altars they have slain thy prophets with the sword, and I alone( am left, and they seek my life to take it away. And the Lord said to him : Go, and return on thy way through the( desert to Damascus: and when thou art come thither, thou shalt anoint Hazael to be king over Syria. And thou shalt anoint Jehu the son of Namsi to be king over Israel: and Eliseus the son of Saphat, of Abelmuela, thou shalt anoint to be prophet in thy room. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall escape the sword of Hazael, shall be slain by Jehu : and whosoever

shall escape the sword of Jehu shall be slain by Eliseus. And I will leave me seven thousand men in Israel, whose knees have not been bowed before Baal, and every mouth that hath not worshipped him . . ." (19: 9-18).

b. "Because he hath humbled himself for my sake I will not bring evil in his days, but in his son's days will I bring the evil upon his house" (21: 29).

## **204. IV Kings**

Chapter 1 continues the life of Elias under the son and successor of Achab and does not enlighten us on the prophet's eschatological role, but the following is, of course, important.

"And it came to pass, when the Lord would take up Elias into heaven by a whirlwind, that Elias and Eliseus were going from Gilgal. And Elias said to Eliseus : Stay thou here, because the Lord hath sent me as far as Bethel. And Eliseus said to him : As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee.

"And when they were come down to Bethel, the sons of the prophets, that were at Bethel, came forth to Eliseus, and said to him: Dost thou know that this day the Lord will take away thy master from thee? And he answered: I also know it : hold your peace. And Elias said to Eliseus Stay here because the Lord hath sent me to Jericho. And he said: As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee.

"And when they were come to Jericho, The sons of the prophets that were at Jericho, came to Eliseus, and said to him: Dost thou know that this day the Lord will take away thy master from thee ? And he said: I also know it: hold your peace. And Elias said to him: Stay here, because the Lord hath sent me as far as the Jordan. And he said: As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee; and they two went on together. And fifty men of the sons of the prophets followed them, and stood in sight at a distance: but they two stood by the Jordan.

"And Elias took his mantle and folded it together, and struck the waters, and they were divided hither and thither, and they both passed over on dry ground. And when they were gone over, Elias said to Eliseus: Ask what thou wilt have me to do for thee, before I be taken away from thee. And Eliseus said: I beseech thee that in me may be thy double spirit. And he answered: Thou hast asked a hard thing: nevertheless if thou see me when I am taken from

thee, thou shalt have what thou hast asked: but if thou see me not, thou shalt not have it.

"And as they went on, walking and talking together behold a fiery chariot, and fiery horses part them both asunder: and Elias went up by a whirlwind into heaven. And Eliseus saw him, and cried: My father, my father, the chariot of Israel, and the driver thereof. And he saw him no more: and he took hold of his own garments, and rent them in two pieces.

"And he took up the mantle of Elias, that fell from him: and going back, he stood upon the bank of the Jordan, And he struck the waters with the mantle of Elias, that had fallen from him, and they were not divided. And he said: Where is now the God of Elias ? And he struck the waters and they were divided, hither and thither, and Eliseus passed over. And the sons of the prophets at Jericho, who were over against him, seeing it said: The spirit of Elias hath rested upon Eliseus: And coming to meet him, they worshipped him, falling to the ground" (2: 1-15).

### **205. II Paralipomenon**

In this book is recorded the story of Elias and Joram, King of Juda (21: 12-19). It is not to our purpose. Prophecy 3 in our first book describes the unsettled conditions that will prevail when Israel is refounded. It too is from this Sacred Book.

### **206. Psalms**

In our former work prophecies 4a to c either refer to the latter times or inspired Christian prophets.

### **207. Wisdom**

Prophecy 5 in the former book describes our modern world quite well and was meant for any age which turns it back on the Creator.

### **208. Ecclesiasticus or Ben Sirach**

This book written about 275 years before Christ is the first known to us which speaks of future roles assigned to the prophets Henoah and Elias. The author, however, is not and does not claim to be, a prophet. He merely sets down the commonly held Jewish teaching of his time.

a. "Henoah pleased God, and was translated into paradise, that he may give repentance to the nations" (44: 16).

b. "No man was born upon earth like Henoah : for he also

was taken up from the earth" (49: 16).

c. "And Elias the prophet stood up, as a fire, and his sword burnt like a torch. He brought a famine upon them, and they that provoked him in their envy, were reduced to a small number, for they could not endure the commandments of the Lord. By the word of the Lord he shut up the heaven, and brought down fire from heaven thrice. Thus was Elias magnified in his wondrous works. And who can glory like to thee? Who raisest up a dead man from below, from the lot of death, by the word of the Lord God. Who broughtest down kings to destruction, and brokest easily their power in pieces, and the glorious from their bed. Who heardest judgment in Sina, and in Horeb the judgments of vengeance. Who anointedst kings to penance, and madest prophets successors after thee. Who wast taken up in a whirlwind of fire, in a chariot of fiery horses. Who art registered in the judgments of times to appease the wrath of the Lord, to reconcile the heart of the father to the son, and to restore the tribes of Jacob. Blessed are they that saw thee, and were honoured with thy friendship. For we live only in our life, but after death our name shall not be such. Elias was indeed covered with the whirlwind, and his spirit was filled in Eliseus." (48: 1-13a).

### **209. Isaias**

In our former book Prophecy 8 contains extracts descriptive of the confusion of the latter days and also a section on the eventual universal peace and unity of faith. There follows here words that have yet to be completely fulfilled. In fact Ecclesiasticus (48: 26, 27) says that Isaias foresaw the things that would come to pass at last.

a. "The noise of a multitude in the mountains, as it were of many people, the noise of the sound of kings, of nations gathered together: The Lord of hosts hath given charge to the troops of war. To them that come from a country afar off, from the end of heaven: the Lord and the instruments of his wrath, to destroy the whole land. Howl ye, for the day of the Lord is near: it shall come as a destruction from the Lord. Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every heart of man shall melt, And shall be broken. Gripings and pains shall take hold of them, they shall be in pain as a woman in labour. Every one shall be amazed at his neighbour, their countenances shall be as faces burnt. Behold, the day of the Lord shall come, a cruel day, and full of indignation, and of wrath, and fury, to lay the land desolate, and to destroy the sinners thereof out of it. For

the stars of heaven, and their brightness shall not display their light : the sun shall be darkened in his rising, and the moon not shine with her light. And I will visit the evils of the world, and against the wicked for their iniquity : and I will make the pride of infidels to cease, and will bring down the arrogancy of the mighty" (13: 4-11) .

b. "Hell below man in an uproar to meet thee at thy coming, it stirred up the giants for thee. All the princes of the earth are risen up from their thrones, all the princes of nations. All shall answer, and say to thee: Thou also art wounded as well as we, thou are become like unto us.

"Thy pride is brought down to hell, thy carcass is fallen down: under thee shall the moth be strewed, and worms shall be thy covering. How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, who didst rise in the morning? how art thou fallen to the earth, that didst wound the nations ? And thou saidst in thy heart: I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God, I will sit in the mountain of the covenant, in the sides of the north. I will ascend above the height of the clouds, I will be like the most High. But yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, into the depth of the pit.

"They that shall see thee, shall turn toward thee, and behold thee. Is this the man that troubled the earth, that shook kingdoms, that made the world a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof, that opened not the prison to his prisoners? All the kinds of the nations have all of them slept in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave, as an unprofitable branch defiled, and wrapped up among them that were slain by the sword, and art gone down to the bottom of the pit, as a rotten carcass" (14: 9-19). cf. 11: 4 ; 66:15 ff.

## **210. *Jeremias***

Prophecy 9 in our earlier work deals at length with false prophets and speaks of terrible chastisements that will follow widespread evils. All the things foretold have not yet been accomplished.

## **211. *Ezechiel***

Prophecy 11 like 9 mentioned above deals with false prophets and chastisements. There follows the extensive ex-tracts whence has flowed subsequent literature on Gog and Magog.

"Son of man, set thy face against God, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Mosoch and Thubal: and prophesy of

him, and say to him: Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I come against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Mosoch and Thubal

"After many days thou shalt be visited: at the end of years thou shalt come to the land that is returned from the sword, and is gathered out of many nations, to the mountains of Israel which have been continually waste: but it hath been brought forth out of the nations, and they shall all of them dwell securely in it. And thou shalt go up and come like a storm, and like a cloud to cover the land, thou and all thy bands and many people with thee.

"Thus saith the Lord God: In that day projects shall enter into thy heart, and thou shalt conceive a mischievous design. And thou shalt say: I will go up to the land which is without a wall, I will come to them that are at rest, and dwell securely: all these dwell without a wall, they have no bars nor gates: To take spoils and lay hold on the prey, to lay thy hand upon them that had been wasted, and afterwards restored, and upon the people that is gathered out of the nations, which hath begun to possess and to dwell in the midst of the earth.

"Saba, and Dedan, and the merchants of Tharsis, and all the lions thereof shall say to thee : Art thou to take spoils ? behold, thou hast gathered thy multitude to take a prey, to take silver, and gold, and to carry away goods and substance, and to take rich spoils.

"Therefore, thou son of man, prophesy and say to Gog: Thus saith the Lord God: Thou shalt not know, in that day, when my people of Israel shall dwell securely? And thou shalt come out of thy place from the northern parts, thou, and many people with thee, all of them riding upon horses, a great company and a mighty army. And thou shalt come upon my people of Israel like a cloud, to cover the earth. Thou shalt be in the latter days, and I will bring thee upon my land: that the nations may know me, when I shall be sanctified in thee, O Gog, before their eyes.

"Thus saith the Lord God: Thou then art he, of whom I have spoken in the days of old, by my servants the prophets of Israel, who prophesied in the days of those times that I would bring thee upon them. And it shall come to pass in that day, in the day of the coming of Gog upon the land of Israel, saith the Lord God, that my indignation shall come up in my wrath. And I have spoken in my zeal, and in the fire of my anger, that in that day there shall be a great commotion upon the land of Israel: So that the fishes of the sea, and the birds of the air, and

the beasts of the field, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the ground, and all men that are upon the face of the earth, shall be moved by my presence: and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the hedges shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground. And I will call in the sword against him in all my mountains, saith the Lord God ; every man's sword shall be pointed against his brother. And I will judge him with pestilence, and with blood, and with violent rain, and vast hailstones: I will rain fire and brimstone upon him, and upon his army, and upon the many nations that are with him. And I will be magnified, and I will be sanctified: and I will be known in the eyes of many nations: and they shall know that I am the Lord.

"And thou, son of man, prophesy against Gog, and say: Thus saith the Lord God: Behold, I come against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Mosoch and Thubal. And I will turn thee round, and I will lead thee out, and will make thee go up from the northern parts: and will bring thee upon the mountains of Israel. And I will break thy bow in thy left hand, and I will cause thy arrows to fall out of thy right hand. Thou shalt fall upon the mountains of Israel, thou and all thy bands, and thy nations that are with thee: I have given thee to the wild beasts, to the birds, and to every fowl, and to the beasts of the earth to be devoured. Thou shalt fall upon the face of the field: for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God.

"And I will send a fire on Magog, and on them that dwell confidently in the islands : and they shall know that I am the Lord. And I will make my holy name known in the midst of my people of Israel, and my holy name shall be profaned no more: and the Gentiles shall know that I am the Lord, the Holy One of Israel ...

"And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will give Gog a noted place for a sepulchre in Israel : the valley of the passengers on the east of the sea, which shall cause astonishment in them that pass by : and there shall they bury Gog, and all his multitude, and it shall be called the valley of the multitude of Gog

"And all the people of the land shall bury him, and it shall be unto them a noted day, wherein I was glorified, saith the Lord God ...

"And I will set my glory among the nations: and all nations shall see my judgment that I have executed, and my hand that I have laid upon them. And the house of

Israel shall know that I am the Lord their God from that day forward" (38: 1 to 39: 22). cf. 7: 11 and 28.

## **212. Daniel**

Neither the Prophet Daniel nor any other pre-Christian author has used the word Antichrist. In fact that word is used in but one context of the New Testament. It does not appear at all in the Apocalypse. Despite this it is universally agreed that in the Book of Daniel we find the earliest un-contested reference to the personage now known as Anti-christ. It is further agreed that the Apocalypse develops ideas that were first given to the world by the Prophet Daniel.

a. "Behold . . . a great statue . . . and the look thereof was terrible. The head . . . was . . . gold . . . the breast . . . silver . . . the belly and thighs . . . brass the legs iron and the feet part iron and part clay. A stone cut out of a mountain without hands struck the statue and the feet and broke them. Then the iron, clay, brass, silver and gold was broken and became like chaff and were carried away by the wind but the stone became a mountain which filled the whole earth.

"This is ... the interpretation ... Thou (Nabuchodonosor King of Babylon) art the head . . . after thee shall rise up another kingdom (Medes and Persians), and a third kingdom shall rule all the world (Alexander the Great), and the fourth kingdom shall be as iron . . . (and) shall break and destroy all these (Roman Empire) .

"And whereas thou sawest the feet and the toes, part of potter's clay and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided, but yet it shall take its origin from the iron, according as thou sawest the iron mixed with the miry clay. And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay, they shall be mingled indeed together with the seed of man, but they shall not stick fast one to another, as iron cannot be mixed with clay.

"But in the days of those kingdoms the God of heaven will set up a kingdom (the Church of Christ) that shall never be destroyed, and his kingdom shall not be delivered up to another people ; and it shall break in pieces, and shall consume all these kingdoms, and itself shall stand forever. According as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and broke in pieces the clay, and the iron, and the brass, and the silver, and the gold, the

great God hath shown the king what shall come to pass hereafter, and the dream is true, and the interpretation thereof is faithful." (2:31-45).

**b.** "Four great beasts . . . came up out of the sea. The first was like a lioness and had wings (Chaldean Empire) . . . another beast like a bear (Persian Empire) . . . another like a Leopard (Grecian Empire) . . . a fourth beast terrible and wonderful . . . It had great iron teeth (Roman Empire) . . . It had ten<sup>1</sup> horns. I considered the horns, and behold another little horn<sup>2</sup> sprung out of the midst of them: and three of the first horns were plucked up at the presence thereof . . . and behold eyes like the eyes, of a man were in this horn, and a mouth speaking great things . . .

"I beheld because of the voice of the great words which that horn spoke, and I saw that the beast was slain, and the body thereof was destroyed, and given to the fire to be burnt; and that the power of the other beasts was taken away, and that times of life were appointed them for a time, and a time.

### *The Messianic Kingdom*

"I beheld therefore in the vision of the night, and lo, one like the son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and he came even to the Ancient of days, and they presented him before him. And he gave him power, and glory, and a kingdom, and all peoples, tribes and tongues shall serve him. His power is an everlasting power that shall not be taken away, and his kingdom that shall not be destroyed.

"My spirit trembled: I Daniel was affrighted at these things, and the visions of my head troubled me. I went near to one of them that stood by, and asked the truth of him concerning all these things. And he told me the interpretation of the words, and instructed me: These four great beasts are four kingdoms, which shall arise out of the earth. But the saints of the most high God shall take the kingdom, and they shall possess the kingdom forever and ever.

"After this I would diligently learn concerning the fourth beast, which was very different from all, and exceedingly

<sup>1</sup>Ten kingdoms, as in Apoc. 17: 12, among which the empire of the fourth beast shall be parceled. Or ten kings of the number of the successors of Alexander, as figures of such as shall be about the time of Antichrist. (Bishop Challoner note).

<sup>2</sup>This is commonly understood of Antichrist. It may also be applied to that great persecutor Antiochus Epiphanes, figure of Antichrist. (Bishop Challoner note).

terrible. His teeth and claws were of iron: he devoured and broke in pieces, and the rest he stamped upon with his feet; and concerning the ten horns that he had on his head; and concerning the other that came up, before which three horns fell; and of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth speaking great things, and was greater than the rest. I beheld, and lo, that horn made war against the saints, and prevailed over them, till the Ancient of days came and gave judgment to the saints of the Most High, and the time came, and the saints obtained the kingdom.

"And thus he said: The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be greater than all the kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns of the same kingdom, shall be ten kings. And another shall rise up after them, and he shall be mightier than the former, and he shall bring down three kings. And he shall speak words against the High One, and shall crush the saints of the Most High ; and he shall think himself able to change times and laws, and they shall be delivered into his hand until a time, and times, and half a time.<sup>1</sup> And judgment shall sit, that his power may be taken away, and be broken in pieces, and perish even to the end, and that the kingdom, and power, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, may be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all kings shall serve him, and shall obey him.

"Hitherto is the end of the word. I Daniel was much troubled with my thoughts, and my countenance was changed in me, but I kept the word in my heart." (7: 3-28).

**c.** "And out of one of them came forth a little horn: and it became great against the south, and against the east, and against the strength. And it was magnified even unto the strength of heaven: and it threw down of the strength, and of the stars, and trod upon them. And it was magnified even to the prince of the strength: and it took away from him the continual sacrifice, and cast down the place of his sanctuary. And strength was given him against the continual sacrifice, because of sins : and truth shall be cast down to the ground, and he shall do and shall prosper. And I heard one of the saints speaking, and one saint said to an-other, I know not to whom that was speaking: How long shall be the vision, concerning the continual sacrifice, and the sin of desolation that is made: and the sanctuary,

<sup>1</sup>Three years and a half, which is supposed to be the length of the duration of the persecution of Antichrist. (Bishop Challoner note).

and the strength be trodden under foot? And he said to him: Unto evening and morning two thousand three hundred days : and the sanctuary shall be cleansed ...

"And he said to me: I will show thee what things are to come to pass in the end of the malediction: for the time hath its end ...

"When iniquities shall be grown up, there shall arise a king of a shameless face, and understanding dark sentences. And his power shall be strengthened, but not by his own force: and he shall lay all things waste and shall prosper, and do more than can be believed. And he shall destroy the mighty, and the people of the saints, According to his will, and craft shall be successful in his hand : and his heart shall be puffed up, and in the abundance of all things he shall kill many: and he shall rise up against the prince of princes, and shall be broken without hand. And the vision of the evening and the morning, which was told, is true : thou therefore seal up the vision, because it shall come to pass after many days" (8: 9-26).

d. "Seventy Weeks<sup>1</sup> are shortened upon thy people and upon thy holy city, that transgression may be finished, and sin may have an end, and iniquity may be abolished, and everlasting justice may be brought, and vision and prophecy may be fulfilled, and the Saint of saints may be anointed. Know thou therefore, and take notice: that from the going forth of the word<sup>2</sup> to build up Jerusalem again, unto Christ the prince, there shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; and the street shall be built again, and the walls in straitness of times. And after sixty-two weeks Christ shall be slain; and the people that shall deny him shall not be his, And a people with their leader<sup>3</sup> that shall come, shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall, be waste, and after the end of the war the appointed desolation. And he shall confirm the covenant with many in one week, and in the half of the week<sup>4</sup> the

<sup>1</sup>That is, of years or seventy times seven, that is 490 years.

<sup>2</sup>That is from the twentieth year of King Artaxerxes, when by his commandment Nehemias rebuilt the walls of Jerusalem.

<sup>3</sup>The Romans under Titus.

<sup>4</sup>Because Christ preached three years and a half, and then by His sacrifice upon the Cross abolished all the sacrifices of the Law. The abomination of desolation: some understand this of the profanation of the temple by the crimes of the Jews, and by the bloody faction of the zealots; others think it refers to bringing the ensigns and standards of the pagan Romans to the temple. Others distinguish three different times of desolation: that under Antiochus, the destruction of the temple by the Romans, and the last near the end of the world under Antichrist. (Bishop Challoner note).

victim and the sacrifice shall fail, and there shall be in the temple the abomination of desolation. And the desolation shall continue even to the consummation, and to the end." (9 : 24-27).

e. "And there shall stand up in his place one despised, <sup>1</sup> and the kingly honor shall not be given him, and he shall come privately, and shall obtain the kingdom by fraud ...

"The king shall do according to his will, and he shall be lifted up, and shall magnify himself against every god: and he shall speak great things against the God of gods, and shall prosper, till the wrath be accomplished. For the determination is made. And he shall make no account of the God of his fathers : and he shall follow the lust of women, and he shall not regard any gods : for he shall rise up against all things. But he shall worship the God Maozim in his place: and a god whom his fathers knew not, he shall worship with gold, and silver, and precious stones, and things of great price. And he shall do this to fortify Maozim with a strange god, whom he hath acknowledged, and he shall increase glory and shall give them power over many, and shall divide the land gratis.

"And at the time prefixed the king of the south shall fight against him, and the king of the north shall come against him like a tempest, with chariots, and with horsemen, and with a great navy, and he shall enter into the countries, and shall destroy, and pass through. And he shall enter into the glorious land, and many shall fall: and these only shall be saved out of his hand, Edom, and Moab, and the principality of the children of Ammon. And he shall lay his hand upon the lands : and the land of Egypt shall not escape. And he shall have power over the treasures of gold, and of silver, and all the precious things of Egypt: and he shall pass through Libya, and Ethiopia. And tidings out of the east, and out of the north shall trouble him : and he shall come with a great multitude to destroy and slay many. And he shall fix his tabernacle in Apadno between the seas, upon a glorious and holy mountain : and shall come even to the top thereof, and none shall help him" (11: 21, 36-45).

f. "But<sup>2</sup> at that time shall Michael rise up, the great prince,

<sup>1</sup>Antiochus Epiphanes, who at first was despised and not received as king. What is here said of this prince, is regarded by St. Jerome and others to pre-figure Antichrist. (Bishop Challoner note).

<sup>2</sup>Bishop Challoner heads this chapter of Daniel thus: (The Archangel) Michael shall stand up for the people of God: with other things relating to Antichrist, and the end of the world.

who standeth for the children of thy people. And a time shall come such as never was from the time that nations began even until that time. And at that time shall thy people be saved, everyone that shall be found written in the book.

"And many of those that sleep in the dust of the earth, shall awake; some unto life everlasting, and others reproach, to see it always. But they that are learned shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that instruct many to justice, as stars for all eternity.

"But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time appointed. Many shall pass over, and knowledge shall be manifold.

"And I Daniel looked, and behold as it were two others stood: one on this side upon the bank of the river, and another on that side, on the other bank of the river. And I said to the man that was clothed in linen, that stood upon the waters of the river: How long shall it be to the end of these wonders? And I heard the man that was clothed in linen, that stood upon the waters of the river, when he had lifted up his right hand, and his left hand to heaven, and had sworn, by him that liveth forever, that it should be unto a time, and times, and half a time. And be when the scattering of the band of the holy people shall accomplished, all these things shall be finished. And I heard, after and understood not. And I said: O my Lord, what shall be these things? And he said: Go, Daniel,

because the words are shut up, and sealed until the appointed time. Many shall be chosen, and made white, and shall be tried as fire; and the wicked shall deal wickedly, and none of the wicked shall understand, but the learned shall understand. And from the time when the continual sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination unto desolation shall be set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred ninety days. Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh unto a thousand three hundred thirty-five days. But go thou thy ways until the time appointed, and thou shalt rest, and stand in thy lot unto the end of the days.' (12:1-13).

### **213-216. *The Minor Prophets***

In the former book will be found the relative prophecies from Joel (14), Amos (15), Micheas (16), and Zacharias (17). They deal with divine chastisements, false prophets and the reestablishment of Israel.

### **217. *Malachias***

"Behold I will send you Elias the prophet, before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord. And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers: lest I come, and strike the earth with anathema" (4: 5-6).

### **218. *Maccabees***

17. "Elias, while he was full of zeal for the law, was taken up into heaven" (1 Mac. 2: 58).

## **THE NEW TESTAMENT**

In quoting this part of the Bible we have as a rule used the most recent and to our mind the best English version, namely the Confraternity or version issued by the Catholic Bishops of the United States. We shall change the arrangement of the prophecies somewhat so that those which fit together may be more readily understood.

### **Henoch and Elias In The New Testament**

We do not give here the texts concerning these two unless they have a prophetic content, e.g. St. Luke, 4: 25-26; St. James 5: 17-18; Hebrews 11: 5.

It will be noted that the Gospels identify St. John the Baptist with the Elias that was to precede the coming of Christ, but in that case St. John merely typified the Elias

that is to appear before Christ's second coming.

**219.** "Suddenly he saw an angel of the Lord, standing at the right of the altar where incense was burnt. Zachary was bewildered at the sight, and overcome with fear; but the angel said, Zachary, do not be afraid; thy prayer has been heard, and thy wife Elizabeth is to bear thee a son, to whom thou shalt give the name of John. Joy and gladness shall be thine, and many hearts shall rejoice over his birth, for he is to be high in the Lord's favour; he is to drink neither wine nor strong drink; and from the time when he is yet a child in his mother's womb he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost. He shall bring back many of the sons of Israel to the Lord their God, ushering in his advent in the spirit and power of an Elias. He shall unite the hearts of all, the fathers with the children, and teach the disobedient

the wisdom that makes men just, preparing for the Lord a people fit to receive him" (Luke, 1: 5-17).

**220a.** "Whereas all the prophets and the law, before John's time, could only speak of things that were to come. And this I tell you, if you will make room for it in your minds, that he is that Elias whose coming was prophesied. Listen, you that have ears to hear with" (Matthew 11: 13-15).

**b.** "And his disciples asked him, Tell us, why is it that the scribes say Elias must come before Christ? He answered, Elias must needs come and restore all things as they were; but I tell you this, that Elias has come already, and they did not recognize him, but misused him at their pleasure, just as the Son of Man is to suffer at their hands. Then the disciples understood that he had been speaking to them of John the Baptist" (Mathew 17 : 10-13).

**221.** "And they asked him, Tell us, why do the Pharisees and scribes say Elias must come before Christ? He answered them, Elias must needs come and restore all things as they were ; and now, what is written of the Son of Man? That he must be much ill-used, and despised. Elias too, I tell you, has already come, and they have misused him at their pleasure, as the scriptures tell of him" (Mark 9: 10-12).

**222.** "Of these, (Godless men) among others, Henoah was speaking, Adam's descendant in the seventh degree, when he prophesied, Behold, the Lord came with his saints in their thousands, to carry out his sentence on all men, and to convict the godless. Godless and sinners, with how many ungodly acts they have defied God, with how many rebellious words have they blasphemed him" (Jude 14-15).

**223.** "Then I was given a reed, shaped like a wand, and word came to me, Up, and measure God's temple, and the altar, and reckon up those who worship in it. But leave out of thy reckoning the court which is outside the temple ; do not measure that, because it has been made over to the Gentiles, who will tread the holy city under foot for the space of forty-two months. Meanwhile I will give the power of prophecy to my two witnesses; for twelve hundred and sixty days they shall prophecy, dressed in sackcloth; these are the two olive-trees, the two candlesticks thou knowest of, that stand before him who is Lord of the earth. Does anyone try to hurt them ? Fire will come out from their mouths and devour such enemies of theirs ; that will be the end of all who try to do them hurt.

These two have it in their power to shut the doors of heaven, and let no rain fall during the days of their ministry ; they can turn the waters into blood, and smite the earth with any other plague, whenever they will. Then, when they have borne me witness to the full, the beast which comes up out of the abyss will make war on them, and defeat and kill them. Their bodies will lie in the open street, in that great city which is called Sodom or Egypt in the language of the prophecy ; there, too, their Lord was crucified. For three days and a half, men of every tribe and people and language and race will gaze at their bodies, those bodies to which they refuse burial ; and all who dwell on earth will triumph over them, and take their ease, and send presents to one another ; such a torment were these two prophets to all that dwell on the earth. Then, after three and a half days, by God's gift the breath of life entered into them, and they rose to their feet, while great dread fell on all who watched them. Then they heard a loud voice from heaven, Come up to my side ; and, while their enemies watched them, they went up, amid the clouds, to heaven. At that hour there was a great earthquake, which overthrew a tenth of the city ; the count of those who were killed by the earthquake was seven thousand, and the rest were filled with dread, and acknowledged the glory of God in heaven' (Apoc. 11: 1-13).

#### **224. *St. Mathew On The Latter Days***

**a.** "Yes, and you will be brought before governors and kings on my account, so that you can bear witness before them, and before the Gentiles. Only, when they hand you over thus, do not consider anxiously what you are to say or how you are to say it: words will be given you when the time comes ; it is not you who speak, it is the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you. Brothers will be given up to execution by their brothers, and children by their fathers ; children will rise up against their parents and will compass their deaths, and you will be hated by all men because you bear my name ; that man will be saved, who endures to the last. Only, if they persecute you in one city, take refuge in another ; I promise you, the Son of Man will come before your task with the cities of Israel is ended" (10: 18-23).

**b.** "Afterwards, while he was sitting down on Mount Olivet, the disciples came to him privately, and said, "Tell us, when will this be? And what sign will be given of thy coming, and of the world being brought to an end? Jesus answered them, Take care that you do not allow anyone to

deceive you. Many will come making use of my name ; they will say, I am Christ, and many will be deceived by it

... .

"In those days, men will give you up to persecution, and will put you to death ; all the world will be hating you because you bear my name ; whereupon many will lose heart, will betray and hate one another. Many false prophets will arise, and many will be deceived by them ; and the charity of most men will grow cold, as they see wickedness abound everywhere ...

c. "And now, when you see that which the prophet Daniel called the abomination of desolation, set up in the holy place (let him who reads this, recognize what it means), then those who are in Judaea must take refuge in the mountains; not going down to carry away anything from the house, if they are on the housetop ; not going back to pick up a cloak, if they are in the fields. It will go hard with women who are with child, or have children at the breast, in those days ; and you must pray that your flight may not be in the winter, or on the Sabbath day, for there will be distress then such as has not been since the beginning of the world, and can never be again. There would have been no hope left for any human creature, if the number of those days had not been cut short ; but those days will be cut short for the sake of the elect. At such time, if a man tells you See, here is Christ, or, See he is there, do not believe him There will be false Christs and false prophets, who will rise up and shew great signs and wonders, so that if it were possible, even the elect would be deceived ...

"Immediately after the distress of those days, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will refuse her light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven will rock ...

"So you, when you see all this come about, are to know that it is near, at your very doors ...

"And you too must stand ready ; the Son of Man will come at an hour when you are not expecting him" (24: 3-44). cf. Mark 13: 14 ; Luke 21: 25 ff.

### **225. St. Luke On The Latter Days**

a. "Henceforward five in the same house will be found at variance, three against two and two against three ; the father will be at variance with his son, and the son with his father, the mother against her daughter, and the daughter

against her mother, the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law" (12: 52-53).

b. "And to his own disciples he said, The time will come when you will long to enjoy for a day, the Son of Man's presence, and it will not be granted you. Men will be saying to you, See, he is here, or See, he is there ; do not turn aside and follow them ; the Son of Man, when his time comes, will be like the lightning which lightens from one border of heaven to the other. But before that, he must undergo many sufferings, and be rejected by this generation. In the days when the Son of Man comes, all will be as it was in the days of Noe; they ate, they drank, they married and were given in marriage, until the day when Noe went into the ark, and the flood came and destroyed them all. So it was, too, in the days of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought and sold, they planted and built; but on the day when Lot went out of Sodom, a rain of fire and brimstone came from heaven and destroyed them all. And so it will be, in the day when the Son of Man is revealed. In that day, if a man is on the house-top and his goods are in the house, let him not come down to take them with him; and if a man is in the fields, he too must beware of turning back. Remember Lot's wife. The man who tries to save his own life will lose it; it is the man who loses it that will keep it safe. I tell you, on that night, where two men are sleeping in one bed, one will be taken and the other left ; where two women are grinding together, one will be taken and the other left. Then they answered him, Where, Lord ? And he told them, It is where the body lies that the eagles gather" (17: 22-37). cf. Matt. 24: 37 ff.

c. "But ah, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith left on the earth?" (18: 8).

d. "And they asked him, Master, when will this be? What sign will be given, when it is soon to be accomplished? Take care, he said, that you do not allow anyone to deceive you. Many will come making use of my name ; they will say, Here I am, the time is close at hand ; do not turn aside after them. And when you hear of wars and revolts, do not be alarmed by it; such things must happen first, but the end will not come all at once. Then he told them, Nation will rise in arms against nation, and kingdom against kingdom ; there will be great earthquakes in this region or that, and plagues and famines ; and sights of terror and great portents from heaven. Before all this, men will be laying hands on you and persecuting you ; they

will give you up to the synagogues, and to prison, and drag you into the presence of kings and governors on my account ...

"And Jerusalem will be trodden under the feet of the Gentiles, until the time granted to the Gentile nations has run out" (21: 7-24).

e. "Behold, a time is coming when men will say, It is well for the barren, for the wombs that never bore children, and the breasts that never suckled them. It is then that they will begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us, and to the hills, Cover us. If it goes so hard with the tree that is still green, what will become of the tree that is already dried up?" (23: 29-31).

### **226. St. John's Gospel**

a. "I have come in my Father's name, and you give me no welcome, although you will welcome some other, if he comes in his own name. How should you learn to believe, you who are content to receive honor from one another, and are not ambitious for the honour which comes from him, who alone is God?" (5: 43-44).

b. "They will forbid you the synagogue; nay, the time is coming when anyone who puts you to death will claim that he is performing an act of worship to God; such things they will do to you, because they have no knowledge of the Father, or of me, And I have told you this, so that when the time comes for it to happen, you may remember that I told you of it" (16: 2-4).

### **227. St. Paul's Epistles**

a. "Do not allow anyone to cheat you with empty promises; these are the very things which bring down God's anger on the unbelievers" (Eph. 5:6).

b. "You must not allow anyone to cheat you by insisting on a false humility which addresses its worship to angels. Such a man takes his stand upon false visions; his is the ill-founded confidence that comes of human speculation" (Col. 2: 18).

c. "But there is one entreaty we would make of you, brethren, as you look forward to the time when our Lord Jesus Christ will come, and gather us in to himself. Do not be terrified out of your senses all at once, and thrown into confusion, by any spiritual utterance, any message or letter purporting to come from us, which suggests that the day of the Lord is close at hand. Do not let anyone find the

means of leading you astray. The apostasy must come first; the champion of wickedness must appear first, destined to inherit perdition. This is the rebel who is to lift up his head above every divine name, above all that men hold in reverence, till at last he enthrones himself in God's temple, and proclaims himself as God. Do not you remember my telling you of this, before I left your company ? At present there is a power (you know what I mean) which holds him in check, so that he may not shew himself before the time appointed to him ; meanwhile, the conspiracy of revolt is already at work ; only, he who checks it now will be able to check it, until he is removed from the enemy's path. Then it is that the rebel will shew himself ; and the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the breath of his mouth, overwhelming him with the brightness of his presence. He will come, when he comes, with all of Satan's influence to aid him; there will be no lack of power, of counterfeit signs and wonders ; and his wickedness will deceive souls that are doomed, to punish them for refusing that fellowship in the truth which would have saved them. That is why God is letting loose among them a deceiving influence, so that they give credit to falsehood ; he will single out for judgment all those who refused credence to the truth, and took their pleasure in wrongdoing" (2 Thes. 2: 1-11). cf. Eph. 6: 11 ff.

d. "We are expressly told by inspiration that, in later days, there will be some who abandon the faith, listening to false inspirations, and doctrines taught by the devils. They will be deceived by the pretensions of impostors, whose conscience is hardened as if by a searing-iron. Such teachers bid them abstain from marriage, and from certain kinds of food, although God has made these for the grateful enjoyment of those whom faith has enabled to recognize the truth. All is good that God has made, nothing is to be rejected ; only we must be thankful to him when we partake of it" (1 Tim. 4: 1-4).

e. "It is for thee, Timothy, to keep safe what has been entrusted to thee, avoiding these new, intruding forms of speech, this quibbling knowledge that is knowledge only in name; there are those who profess them, and in professing them have shot wide of the mark which faith sets us. Grace be with thee, Amen" (1 Tim. 6: 20-21).

f. "Be sure of this, that in the world's last age there are perilous times coming. Men will be in love with self, in love with money, boastful, proud, abusive; without reverence for their parents, without gratitude, without scruple, without love, without peace; slanderers,

incontinent, strangers to pity and to kindness ; treacherous, reckless, full of vain conceit, thinking rather of their pleasures than of God. They will preserve all the outward form of religion, although they have long been strangers to its meaning. From these, too, turn away. They count among their number the men that will make their way into house after house, captivating weak women whose consciences are burdened by sin" (2 Tim. 3: 1-6).

**g.** "And indeed, all those who are resolved to live a holy life in Christ Jesus will meet with persecution; while the rogues and the mountebanks go on from bad to worse, at once imposters and dupes" (2 Tim. 3: 12-13).

**h.** "The time will surely come, when men will grow tired of sound doctrine, always itching to hear something fresh; and so they will provide themselves with a continuous succession of new teachers, as the whim takes them, turning a deaf ear to the truth, bestowing their attention on fables instead" (Tim. 4:3-4).

**i.** "There are many rebellious spirits abroad, who talk of their own fantasies and lead men's minds astray; those especially who hold by circumcision; and they must be silenced. They will bring ruin on entire households by false teaching, with an eye to their own base profits. Why, one of themselves, a spokesman of their own, has told us, The men of Crete were ever liars, venomous creatures, all hungry belly and nothing besides; and that is a true account of them. Be strict, then, in taking them to task, so that they may be soundly established in the faith, instead of paying attention to these Jewish fables, these rules laid down for them by human teacher who will not look steadily at the truth" (Titus 1: 10-14).

### **228. St. Peter**

"Remember always that in the last days mocking deceivers must needs come, following the rule of their own appetites, who will ask, What has become of the promise that he would appear? Ever since the fathers went to their rest, all is as it was from the foundation of the world. They are fain to forget how, long ago, heaven stood there, and an earth which God's word had made with water for its origin, water for its frame; and those were the very means by which the world, as it then was, came to perish overwhelmed by water. That same word keeps heaven and earth, as they now are, stored up, ready to feed the fire on the day when the godless will be judged, and perish. But one thing, beloved, you must keep in mind, that with the Lord a day counts as a thousand years, and a thousand

years count as a day. The Lord is not being dilatory over his promise, as some think; he is only giving you more time, because his will is that all of you should attain repentance, not that some should be lost" (2 Peter 3: 3-9).

### **229. St. John's Epistles**

It is only in these two short missives that, the name Antichrist appears in Biblical literature. Moreover these are the earliest works in which that name is found. The very words of St. John, however, indicate that the Apostle did not coin the expression nor originate the idea. He says that his readers have already been told that Antichrist will come. In these epistles too we find the first clear indication that we are to distinguish between Antichrists of minor stature and the Antichrist.

**a.** "Not all prophetic spirits, brethren, deserve your credence; you must put them to the test, to see whether they come from God. Many false prophets have made their appearance in the world. This is the test by which God's Spirit is to be recognized ; every spirit which acknowledges Jesus Christ as having come to us in human flesh has God for its author; and no spirit which would disunite Jesus comes from God. This is the power of Antichrist, whose coming you have been told to expect ; now you must know that he is here in the world already. You, little children, who take your origin from God, have gained the mastery over it; there is a stronger power at work in you, than in the world. Those other, belonging to the world, speak the world's language, and the world listens to them ; we belong to God, and a man must have knowledge of God if he is to listen to us ; if he does not belong to God, he does not listen to us at all. That is the test by which we distinguish the true Spirit from the false spirit. Beloved, let us love one another; love springs from God ; no one can love without being born of God, and knowing God. How can the man who has no love have any knowledge of God, since God is love ? (1 John 4: 1-8).

**b.** "Many false teachers have appeared in the world, who will not acknowledge that Jesus Christ has come in human flesh; here is the deceiver you were warned against, here is Antichrist' (2 John 7).

### **230. St. Jude**

"What defilement there is in their banquets, as they fare sumptuously at your side, shepherds that feed themselves without scruple ! They are clouds with no water in them,

driven before the winds, autumn trees that bear no fruit, given over anew to death, plucked up by the roots ; they are fierce waves of the sea, with shame for their crests, wandering stars, with eternal darkness and storm awaiting them. Of these, among others, Henoah was speaking, Adam's descendant in the seventh degree, when he prophesied, Behold, the Lord came with his saints in their thousands, to carry out his sentence on all men, and to convict the godless. Godless and sinners, with how many ungodly acts they have defied God, with how many rebellious words have they blasphemed him! Such men go about whispering and complaining, and live by the rule of their own appetites ; meanwhile, their mouths are ready with fine phrases, to flatter the great when it serves their ends.

But as for you, beloved, keep in mind the warnings given you long since by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ ; how they told you, that mocking spirits must needs appear in the last age, who would make their own ungodly appetites into a rule of life. Such are the men who now keep themselves apart ; animal natures, without the life of the Spirit" (12-19).

### **231. *The Apocalypse***

As we have noted before the chief Biblical source of information on the reign of Antichrist is this last book by the Apostle St. John. In a way his work is a commentary on what the Old Testament, especially Daniel, has to say about the last days. But of course it is much more. It completes all the Biblical prophesies concerning events that had not yet happened when it was written, namely some sixty-five years after the death of Our Lord.

Many commentaries have been written on this last book of Sacred Scripture and it is without doubt the most difficult book to understand. This is quite natural. The prophet him-self need not have understood and most likely did not understand anything more about the material than what he actually committed to writing. As a result there was very little that he could explain to his disciples by word of mouth so that they could form a traditional method of interpretation such as was the case with non-prophetic books.

This is about what one would expect. Most of the book had little or no message for the author or his contemporaries. It spoke to generations yet unborn just as had the Great Isaias, Jeremias and Daniel. When the generations for whom it was chiefly intended would come

into being the true author of all true prophesy, the Holy Spirit, would in his own ways allow his elect to take from the text the knowledge that had from the beginning been concealed therein. In this then is to be found the reason why the magisterium of the Church which is based directly on tradition in all matters of doctrine and morals must depend largely on experience and the interpretation of signs when there is a question of unfulfilled or only partially fulfilled prophesy.

In choosing a commentary for reproduction in this book we have selected one written by a twentieth century personage, who seems to be a humble, realistic man and whose work is declared of Church Authority to contain nothing contrary to the Faith. It must, naturally, be remembered that most parts of his commentary, as well as those of other authors, are purely private opinions.<sup>1</sup>

a. "Then, in my vision, he broke the sixth seal ; and with that there was a great earthquake, and the sun grew dark as sackcloth, and the whole moon blood-red ; the stars of heaven fell to earth, like unripe fruit shaken from a fig tree, when a high wind rocks it ; the sky folded up like a scroll, and disappeared ; no mountain, no island, but was removed from its place. The kings of the world with their noblemen and their captains, men of wealth and of strength, all alike, slaves and free men, took shelter in caves and rockfastnesses among the hills. Fall on us, they said to the hills and the rocks, and hide us from the presence of Him who sits on the throne, and from the vengeance of the Lamb. Which of us can stand his ground, now that the great day, the day of their vengeance, has come? (6: 12-17).

b. "And when the second angel sounded, it was as if a great mountain, all in flames, fell into the sea, turning a third part of the sea into blood, (cf. Ex. 7:20 ff) and killing a third of all the creatures that live in the sea, and wrecking a third of the ships. And when the third angel sounded, a great star fell from heaven, (cf. Is. 14-12) burning like a torch, fell upon a third part of the rivers, and on the springs of the water. The name of this star is Wormwood : (cf. Jer. 9:15) and it changed a third of the water into wormwood, till many died of drinking the water, so bitter had it become. And when the fourth angel sounded, a third of the sun and a third of the moon and a

<sup>1</sup>This commentary will be found below under Prophecy Number 359. It may be well to read it in conjunction with the Sacred text, that is to read after each section of the text the section of the commentary that relates to it.

third of the stars were smitten with darkness, so that the day must go without light for a third of its length, and the night too. (cf. Ex. 10:21-23) And I heard, in my vision, words spoken by an eagle that flew across the middle part of heaven, crying aloud, Woe, woe, woe to all that dwell on earth, when those other calls are sounded by the three angels whose trumpets have yet to sound" (8:8-13).

c. "They were not to injure the grass on the land, the green things that grew there, or the trees ; they were to attack men, such men as did not bear God's mark on their foreheads. These they had no power to kill, only to inflict pain on them during a space of five months ; such pain as a man feels when he has been stung by a scorpion. (When those days come, men will be looking for the means of death, and there will be no finding it ; longing to die, and death will always give them the slip). The semblance of these locusts was that of horses caparisoned for war ; on their heads they wore a kind of circlet that shone like gold, and their faces were like human faces ; they had their hair like women's -hair, and teeth like lions' teeth. They wore breast-plates that might have been of iron, and the noise of their wings was like the noise of chariots, drawn at full speed by many horses into battle. It was their tails and the stings in their tails that made them like scorpions, and with these they were empowered to do men hurt for a space of five months. And they fought under a king; their king was the angel of the abyss, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, in Greek Apollyon, that is, in Latin, the Exterminator. Of the three woes that were pronounced, one is now past ; the two others are still to come.

And when the sixth angel sounded, I heard a voice that came from the four corners of the golden altar which stands in the presence of God. It said to the sixth angel, as he stood there with his trumpet, Release the four angels who are imprisoned by the great river, the river Euphrates. So these were released, four angels who were awaiting for the year, the month, the day, the hour, when they were to destroy a third part of mankind. And the muster of the armies that followed them on horseback (for I heard their muster called) was twenty thousand armies of ten thousand. This is what I saw in my vision of the horses and of their riders ; the riders had breastplates of fiery red, and blue, and brim-tone yellow, and the horses' heads seemed like the heads of lions, with fire and smoke and brimstone coming out of their mouths. This fire, this smoke, this brimstone that came out of their mouths were three plagues, from which a third part of mankind perished. The power these horses have to do mischief lies

in their mouths and in their tails; their tails are like serpents, with serpent's heads, and they use them to do hurt. The rest of mankind, that did not perish by these plagues, would not turn away from the things their own hands fashioned ; still worshipped evil spirits, false gods of gold and silver and brass and stone and wood, that can neither see, nor hear, nor move. Nor would they repent of the murders, the sorceries, the fornications, and the thefts which they committed" (9:4-21).

d. "And now I saw a second angel of sovereign strength coming down from heaven, with a cloud for his vesture, and a rainbow about his head ; with a face bright as the sun, and feet like pillars of fire. He carried in his hand an open book. Setting his right foot on the sea, and his left on the dry land, he cried with a loud voice, like the roaring of a lion ; and as he cried, the seven thunders of heaven made their voices heard. And I, when the seven thunders had finished their utterance, was making as if to write it down, when I heard a voice say from heaven, Do not write down the message of the seven thunders, keep it sealed. Then that angel, whom I had already seen with his feet on the sea and on the dry land, lifted up his right hand towards heaven, and swore an oath by him who lives through endless ages, who made heaven and all that is in heaven, earth and all that is on earth, the sea and all that is in the sea. He swore that there should be no more waiting; when the time came for the seventh angel to make himself heard, as he stood ready to sound his trumpet, God's secret design, made known by his servants the prophets, would be accomplished. Then once more I heard the voice speaking to me from Heaven, thus : Go and take the open book from the hand of that angel, whose feet are on the sea and on the dry land. So I went to the angel, bidding him give me the book. Take it, he said, and eat it ; it will turn thy belly sour, though in thy mouth it be as sweet as honey. So I took the book from the angel's hand and ate it; it was sweet as honey in my mouth, but my belly turned sour once I had eaten it" (10: 1-10).

e. "Then, when they have borne me witness to the full, the beast which comes up out of the abyss will make war on them, and defeat and kill them.

"At that hour there was a great earthquake, which overthrew a tenth of the city; the count of those who were killed by the earthquake was seven thousand, and the rest were filled with dread, and acknowledged the glory of God in heaven (11: 7-13).

**f.** "And now, in heaven, a great portent appeared; a woman that wore the sun for her mantle, with the moon under her feet, and a crown of twelve stars about her head. She had a child in her womb and was crying out as she travailed, in great pain of her delivery. Then a second portent appeared in heaven; a great dragon was there, fiery red, with seven heads and ten horns, and on each of the seven heads a royal diadem; his tail dragged down a third part of the stars in heaven, and flung them to earth. And he stood fronting the woman who was in childbirth, ready to swallow up the child as soon as she bore it. She bore a son, the son who is to herd the nations like sheep with a crook of iron ; and this child of hers was caught up to God, right up to his throne, while the mother fled into the wilderness, where God had prepared a place of refuge for her, and there, for twelve hundred and sixty days, she is to be kept safe.

"Fierce war broke out in heaven, where Michael and his angels fought against the dragon. The dragon and his angels fought on their part, but could not win the day, or stand their ground in heaven any longer ; the great dragon, serpent of the primal age, was flung down to earth, and his angels with him" (12: 1-9).

**g.** "Rejoice over it, heaven, and all you that dwell in heaven ; but woe to you, earth and sea, now that the devil has come down upon you, full of malice, because he knows how brief is the time given him. So the dragon, finding himself cast down to earth, went in pursuit of the woman, the boy's mother; but the woman was given two wings, such as the great eagle has, to speed her flight into the wilderness, to her place of refuge, where for a year, and two years, and half a year she will be kept hidden from the serpent's view. Thereupon the serpent sent a flood of water out of his mouth in pursuit of the woman, to carry her away on its tide ; but the earth came to the woman's rescue. The earth gaped wide, and swallowed up this flood which the dragon had sent out of his mouth. So, in his spite against the woman, the dragon went elsewhere to make war on the rest of her children, the men who keep God's commandments, and hold fast to the truth concerning Jesus. And he stood there waiting on the sea beach" (12: 12-18).

**h.** "And out of the sea, in my vision, a beast came up to land, with ten horns and seven heads, and on each of its ten horns a royal diadem ; and the names it bore on its heads were names of blasphemy. This beast which I saw was like a leopard, but it had bear's feet and a lion's

mouth. To it the dragon gave the strength that was his, and great dominion. One of his heads, it seemed, had been mortally wounded, but this deadly wound had been healed. And now the whole world went after the beast in admiration, falling down and praising the dragon for giving the beast all this dominion ; praising the beast too.

"Who is a match for the beast? they asked ; Who is fit to make war upon him ? And he was given power of speech, to boast and blaspheme with, and freedom to work his will for a space of forty-two months. So he began to utter blasphemy against God, blasphemy against his name, against his dwelling-place and all those who dwell in heaven. He was allowed, too, to levy war on the saints, and to triumph over them. The dominion given to him extended over all tribes and peoples and languages and races ; all the dwellers on earth fell down in adoration of him, except those whose names the Lamb has written down in his book of life, the Lamb slain in sacrifice ever since the world was made.

"Listen to this, you that have ears to hear with. The captor will go into captivity ; he who slays with the sword must him-self be slain with the sword. Such good ground have the saints for their endurance. and for their faithfulness (13: 1-10).

**i.** "Then, from the land itself, I saw another beast come up; it had two horns like a lamb's horns, but it roared like a dragon. And it stood in the presence of the former beast, to carry out all that it was empowered to do, bidding the world and all its inhabitants worship the former beast, that beast whose deadly wound was healed. Such wonders could it accomplish, that it brought down fire, before men's eyes, from heaven to earth ; and by these wonders, which it was enabled to do in its masters' presence, it deluded the inhabitants of the world, bidding those who dwell in it set up an image to that beast which was smitten with the sword, and lived. Further, it was able to put life into that beast's image, so that even the beast's image uttered speech; and if anyone refused to worship the image of the beast, it had him put to death. All alike, little and great, rich and poor, free men and slaves, must receive a mark from him on their right hands, or on their foreheads, and none might buy or sell, unless he carried this mark, which was the beast's name, or the number that stands for his name. Here is room for discernment; let the reader, if he has the skill, cast up the sum of the figures in the beast's name, after our human fashion, and the number will be six hundred and sixty-six" (13: 11-18).

**j.** "And these were followed by a third angel, who cried aloud, Whoever worships the beast and his image, or wears the beast's mark on forehead or hand, he too shall drink; but the wine he shall drink is God's anger, untempered wine poured out in the cup of his vengeance. Fire and brimstone shall be his torment, in the presence of the holy angels, in the presence of the Lamb. The smoke of their torment goes up for ever and ever; day and night no rest is theirs, who worshipped the beast and his image, who bore the mark of his name" (14: 9-11).

**k.** "Then, in my vision, a white cloud appeared ; and on this cloud sat one who seemed like a son of man, with a crown of gold on his head, and a sharp sickle in his hand. And now, from the temple, came another angel, crying out to him who sat on the cloud, Put in thy sickle, and reap; the crop of earth is dry, and the time has come to reap it. So he who sat on the cloud put in his sickle, and earth's harvest was reaped.. Then another angel came from the heavenly temple; he too had a sharp sickle. And from the altar came another angel, the same that had power over the fire on it, and cried out to the angel with the sharp sickle, Put in thy sharp sickle, and gather the grapes from the earth's vine-yard; its clusters are ripe. So the angel put in his sickle over the earth, and gathered in earth's vintage, which he drew into the great winepress of God's anger; and when the winepress was trodden out, away from the city, blood came from the winepress, and reached as high as a horse's bridle, sixteen hundred furlongs off" (14: 14-20).

**l.** "The first angel went on his errand, pouring out his cup on to the earth; whereupon an ulcer broke out, malignant and troublesome, upon all the men who bore the beast's mark, and worshipped his image. And the second angel poured out his cup over the sea, where it turned into blood, as if murder had been done there, till every living creature in the sea was dead. And the third poured out his cup over the rivers and the springs of water where it turned into blood. Then I heard the angel of the waters cry out, Holy thou art, O Lord, and wast ever holy, and this is a just award of thine, blood to drink for those who have shed the blood of thy saints and prophets ; it is their due" (16: 2-6).

**m.** "The fourth angel poured out his cup over the sun, which thereupon was given the power to afflict mankind with burning heat; and in the great heat which burned them, men blasphemed the name of God, who disposes of these plagues, instead of repenting and giving praise to

him. And the fifth angel poured out his cup where the beast's throne was ; and with that, all the beast's kingdom was turned into darkness, in which men sat biting their tongues in pain, finding cause to blaspheme the God of heaven in their pains and their ulcers, instead of finding cause for repentance in their ill deeds. And the sixth angel poured out his cup over the great river Euphrates, whose waters were dried up, to make a passage for the kings that march from the East.

"Then, in my vision, three unclean spirits appeared in the form of frogs; one from the mouth of the dragon, one from the mouth of the beast, and one from the mouth of the false prophet. These are the devilish spirits that can do miracles, and find access to all the kings of the world, bidding them meet in battle when the great day comes, the day of the almighty God. (Behold, I come as the thief comes ; blessed is he that keeps watch, and is ready clad, so that he has no need to go naked, and be ashamed in men's sight) The place where they are bidden to meet is the place called in Hebrew, Armageddon." (16: 8-6).

**n.** "And the seventh angel poured out his cup over the air. Then a loud voice came out of the shrine, a voice which cried from the throne, It is over ; and there were lightnings and mutterings and thunder, and a violent earthquake; since men came into the world there was never an earthquake so great and so violent as this. The great city broke in three pieces, while the cities of the heathen came down in ruins. And God did not forget to minister a draught of his wine, his avenging anger, to Babylon, the great city" (16: 17-19).

**o.** "And now one of the angels that bear the seven cups came and spoke to me. Come with me, he said, and I will show thee how judgment is pronounced on the great harlot, that sits by the meeting place of many rivers. The kings of the world have committed fornication with her; all the dwellers on earth have been drunk with the wine of her dalliance.

"Then, in a trance he carried me off into the wilderness, where I saw a woman riding on a scarlet beast, scrawled over with the names of blasphemy; it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman went clad in purple and scarlet, all hung about with gold and jewels and pearls, and held a golden cup in her hand, full to the brim with those abominations of hers, with the lewdness of her harlot's ways. There was a title written over her forehead, The mystic Babylon, great mother-city of all harlots, and all

that is abominable on earth. I saw this woman drunk with the blood of saints, the blood of those who bore witness to Jesus; and I was filled with great wonder at the sight.

"But the angel said to me, Why dost thou find cause for wonder? I will disclose to thee the mystery of this woman, and of the beast she rides, with its seven heads and ten horns. The beast thou sawest is that which lived once, and now is dead ; soon it must rise from the abyss, and find its way to utter destruction. The sight of this beast which lived once, and now is dead, will strike awe into every dweller on earth, except those whose names have been written, before the world was, in the book of life. Here is need for a discerning mind. These seven heads are seven hills; upon these the woman sits enthroned. They are also seven kings; of these, five have fallen already, one is reigning now; the last has not yet come, but when he does, his reign will be a short one. And the beast which lived once and now is dead must be reckoned as the eighth, yet it is one of the seven; now it is to find its way to utter destruction.

"And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, who have not yet received their royal title, but are to enjoy such power as kings have, for one hour, in succession to the beast. All of them have a single policy; they surrender to the beast the power and the dominion which is theirs. And they will fight against the Lamb, but the Lamb will have the mastery of them; he is Lord of all lords, King of all kings; whoever is called, is chosen, is faithful, will take his part.

"Then he told me, These waters in thy vision at whose meeting the harlot sits enthroned, are all her peoples, nations, and languages. And the ten horns, which the beast had in thy vision, will become the harlot's enemies; they will lay her waste, and strip her quite bare, eat her flesh away, and then burn what is left of her. God has put it into their hearts to carry out his design, and to give their dominion over to the beast, so that at last all the words of God may be fulfilled. And as for the woman of thy vision, she is that great city that bears rule over the rulers of the earth" (17: 1-18).

**p.** "After this I saw another angel, entrusted with great power, come down from heaven ; earth shone with the glory of his presence. And he cried aloud, Babylon, great

Babylon is fallen; she has become the abode of devils, the stronghold of all unclean spirits, the eyrie of all birds that are unclean and hateful to man. The whole world has drunk the maddening wine of her fornication; the kings of the earth have lived in dalliance with her, and its merchants have grown rich through her reckless pleasures. And now I heard another voice from heaven, say, Come out of her, my people, that you may not be involved in her guilt, nor share the plagues that fall upon her. Her guilt mounts up to heaven; the Lord has kept her sins in remembrance. Deal with her as she has dealt with you; repay her twice for all she has done amiss; brew double measure for her in the cup she has brewed for others; requite her with anguish and sorrow for all her pride and luxury. She tells herself, Here I sit enthroned like a queen, widowhood is not for me, I shall never know what it is to mourn; and all her plagues shall come upon her in one day, death and mourning and famine, and she will be burned to the ground; such power has the God who is her judge. How they will weep over her and beat their breasts, those kings of the earth who once lived in dalliance and took their pleasures with her, as they see the smoke rise where she burns! Standing at a distance, for fear of sharing her punishment, they will cry out, Alas, Babylon the great, alas, Babylon the strong, in one brief hour judgment has come upon thee!" (18: 1-10).

**q.** "After this I heard, as it seemed, the voices of countless multitudes crying out in heaven, Alleluia; salvation and glory and power belong to our God; his sentence is ever true and just, and now he has given sentence against the great harlot, who poisoned the earth with her harlot's ways ; now he has called her to account for the blood of his servants. And again they cried, Alleluia, the smoke of her burning goes up everlastingly" (19 : 1-3).

**r.** "And then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth muster their armies, to join battle with the rider on the white horse and the army which followed him. The beast was made prisoner and with it the false prophet that did miracles in its presence, deluding all those who bore the beast's mark and worshipped its image; and both were thrown alive into the fiery lake that burns with brimstone. All the rest were slain by the sword of that horseman, the sword that comes from his mouth; and all the birds feasted royally on their flesh" (19: 19-21).

# EARLIEST PRIVATE PROPHECY

## INTRODUCTORY REMARKS

In dividing the prophetic texts into Scriptural and nonScriptural instead of Scriptural, Patristic and Private prophecies we have been influenced by the Theologians who claim that there are very few notions about Antichrist on which the Fathers of the Church agree. Since such is the case we must consider all that matter on which they disagree or seem to disagree as private interpretation of Scriptural prophecy and therefore as open to question.

The fact, however, that the sayings of the Fathers, which in fact have the value of Tradition, are found in this section is not to be taken to mean any disrespect on our part. We have chosen for the reason given above and for convenience to put all non-Scriptural prophesy in chronological order. Our readers will readily distinguish the ideas on which all agree from those which are controverted or at least expressed by only one or other prophet or commentator.

Likewise we have put all texts on one level, so to speak : Those who do not claim the gift of prophesy and those who do, those who most certainly merit our attention and those of quite doubtful nature. This too is necessitated not only by convenience but by the fact that our purpose is to give our readers all the texts we could lay our hands on so that within the compass of one book it would be possible for all to survey at first hand the thinking of the whole Christian world on the Antichrist through the ages. We

have only this caution to add: Be very careful not to put great faith in statements of a private nature emanating from only one source unless you have the proper Ecclesiastical guarantee that the source in question merits special credence.

We have deliberately omitted the ravings of the 16th and 17th Century fanatics who wasted much good paper trying to absolve themselves by making the papacy Antichrist. Even all their own followers have long since repudiated their bigotry. And likewise we omit the rantings of certain sect leaders of our own day who try to revive the papal Antichrist legend by choosing some letters alleged to be on the tiara and omitting others. Let us take all or none.

We finally consign to the ash can the trash ground out on sectarian presses which chooses dates for the second coming of Christ and changes them as the fixed dates arrive. We even turn a deaf ear to sectarian speeches which put the Second Coming just around the corner and the preachers and their flock in white robes waiting with out-stretched arms while the rest of mankind are gathered up by the Avenger. The reason is evident: God has reserved for himself a knowledge of exact dates and we believe even of approximate times. Signs he tells us, he will give, Signs which the elect alone, but all the elect, high and low, will recognize. So let us be content to do exactly as He says "Watch and pray, for ye know not the day nor the hour."

## JEWISH APOCRYPHA

### 233. *Book of Enoch* (170 B.C.)

a. "The Lord said unto Michael: Go, bind Semjaza and his associates who have united themselves with women so as to have defiled themselves with them in all their uncleanness. And when their sons have slain one another, and they have seen the destruction of their beloved ones, bind them fast for seventy generations in the valleys of the earth, till the day of their judgment and of their consummation, till the judgment that is forever and ever is consummated. In those days they shall be led to the abyss of fire: (and) to the torment and the prison in which they shall be confined forever. And whosoever shall be condemned and destroyed will from henceforth be bound

together with them to the end of all generations. And destroy all the spirits of the reprobate and the children of the Watchers, because they have wronged mankind. Destroy all wrong from the face of the earth and let every evil work come to an end: and let the plant of righteousness and truth appear: and it shall prove a blessing; the works of righteousness and truth shall be planted in truth and joy for evermore (10: 11-16).

b. "Enoch was hidden, and no one of the children men knew where he was hidden ... His activities had to with the Watchers and his days were with the holy ones . . . (12: 1).

c. "And Enoch was raised aloft on the chariots of the spirit and his name vanished among them . . ." (70: 1, 2).

**d.** "When sin and righteousness, blasphemy and violence and all kind of deeds increase, and apostasy in transgression and uncleanness increase, a great chastisement shall come from heaven" (91: 7).

**e.** "I was born the seventh in the first week, when justice reigned yet upon the earth.

"And after me, in the second week will come a great evil (the deluge) and in that week the first consummation will take place. Then one man will be saved. And after this week, injustice will again grow.

"And then, in the third week, towards its end, a man shall be chosen, (Abraham) as a plant of just judgment, and he will then grow as a plant in justice for all eternity.

"Then, in the fourth week, towards its end, the visions of the holy and just will appear, and a law for all generations, and an ark (enclos?) shall be prepared for them.

"Then, in the fifth week, towards its end, a House of Glory and domination shall be built for eternity.

"Then, in the sixth week, those who live in that time shall be all blinded and their hearts shall fall into iniquity, far from wisdom, and then, a Man will ascend to Heaven; and at the end of this week the house of domination shall be destroyed by fire, and the race of the powerful root shall be dispersed.

"Then, in the seventh week, a perverse generation shall arise, — many will be their works, but all shall be works of abomination. And at the end of this week the just branches of the plant of just shall be chosen, for the end that the science of God's Creation shall be given them a hundred-fold — for who is the child of man who can hear the voice of the Holy One without being moved, and who can think His thoughts, and who can contemplate all the works of heaven? Who is he who can see the heavens, and who is he that may know the works of heaven? And how could he see a soul or a spirit, and how could he speak of such, how could he rise to see their workings or act as they do? And who is the child of man who may know the length or the breadth of heaven, or upon what base it is founded, how great is the number of stars and where they rest, the lights of heaven.

"Then there will be another week, the eighth. This week shall be that of justice, and a sword shall be given (to justice?) that judgment may be accomplished and the oppressors and the sinners will be broken by the hands of

the just, and towards the end of this week, the just shall acquire dwelling-places because of their justice, and a house shall be erected for the great King, of an eternal splendor.

"And after this, in the ninth week, the judgment of the just shall be unveiled to all men, throughout the universe, and all the works of the impious shall disappear from the earth and the number inscribed for perdition, and all men shall see the path of righteousness.

"And then, in the tenth week, at its seventh part, will take place the great eternal Judgment. He shall exercise judgment and vengeance amid the angels. And then the first heaven shall disappear and pass away, and a new heaven will appear, and all the powers of heaven shall shine eternally, seven times greater, and after this week shall come weeks, numerous weeks, which shall pass on, innumerable, and eternal, for kindness and justice, and from thence, sin will be no longer named forever." (93: 1-14; 91: 12-17).

**f.** "Woe to you, ye rich, for ye have trusted in your riches, and from your riches shall ye depart, because ye have not remembered the Most High in the days of your riches."

**g.** "Woe to you who work godlessness, and glory in lying and extol them: ye shall perish, and no happy life shall be yours. Woe to them who pervert the words of uprightness, and transgress the eternal law, and transform themselves into what they were not (into sinners) : they shall be trodden under foot and upon the earth. In those days make ready, ye righteous, to raise your prayers as a memorial, and place them as a testimony before the angels, that they may place the sin of the sinners for a memorial before the Most High. In those days the nations shall be stirred up, and the families of the nations shall arise on the day of the Most High. In those days the nations shall be stirred up, and the families of the nations shall arise on the day of destruction. And in those days the destitute shall go forth and carry off their children, and they shall abandon them, so that their children shall perish through them: Yea, they shall abandon their children (that are still) sucklings, and not return to them, and shall have no pity on their beloved ones. And again I swear to you, ye sinners, that sin is prepared for a day of unceasing bloodshed. And they who worship stones, and grave images of gold and silver and wood (and stone) and clay, and those who worship impure spirits and demons and all kinds of idols not according to knowledge, shall get no

manner of help from them. And they shall become godless by reason of the folly of their hearts, and their eyes shall be blinded through the fear of their hearts and through visions in their dreams. Through these they shall become godless and fearful; for they shall have wrought all their work in a lie, and shall have worshipped a stone: therefore in an instant shall they perish. But in those days blessed are all they who accept the words of wisdom, and understand them, and observe the paths of the Most High, and walk in the path of His righteousness, and become not godless with the godless; for they shall be saved. Woe to you who spread evil to your neighbors; for you shall be slain in Sheol. Woe to you who make deceitful and false measures, and (to them) who cause bitterness on the earth; for they shall thereby be utterly consumed. Woe to you who build your houses through the grievous toil of others, and all their building materials are the bricks and stones of sin; I tell you ye shall have no peace. Woe to them who reject the measure and eternal heritage of their fathers and whose souls follow after idols; for they shall have no rest. Woe to them who work unrighteousness and help oppression, and slay their neighbors until the day of the great judgment. For He shall cast down your glory, and bring affliction on your hearts, and shall arouse His fierce indignation and destroy you all with the sword; and all the Holy and righteous shall remember your sins" (99: 1-16).

**h.** "And in those days in one place the fathers together with their sons shall be smitten and brothers one with another shall fall in death till the streams flow with their blood. For a man shall not withhold his hand from slaying his sons and his sons' sons, and the sinner shall not withhold his hand from his honoured brother; from dawn till sunset they shall slay one another. And the horse shall walk up to the breast in the blood of sinners, and the chariot shall be submerged to its height. In those days the angels shall descend into the secret places and gather together into one place all those who brought down sin, and the Most High will arise on that day of judgment to execute great judgment amongst sinners" (100:1-4).

**i.** "Sinners will alter and pervert the words of righteousness in many ways, and will speak wicked words, and lie, and practice great deceits, and write books concerning their words" (104: 10) .

**j.** "Another book . . . Enoch wrote for his son Mathusala and for those who will come after him, and keep the law in the last days. Ye who have done good shall wait for those days till an end is made of those who work evil, and

an end of the might of the transgressors. And wait ye indeed till sin has passed away, for their names shall be blotted out of the book of life and out of the holy books, and their seed shall be destroyed forever, and their spirits shall be slain, and they shall cry and make lamentation in a place that is a chaotic wilderness, and in the fire shall they burn ; for there is no earth there" (108: 1-3).

### **234. *Book of Jubilees* (105 B.C.)**

"And Enoch was the first among men that are born on earth who learnt writing and knowledge and wisdom and who wrote down the signs of heaven according to the order of their months in a book, that men might know the seasons of the years.

"And what was and what will be he saw in a vision of his sleep, as it will happen to the children of men throughout their generations until the day of judgment ; he saw and understood everything, and wrote his testimony, and placed the testimony on earth for all the children of men ..

"And he was taken from amongst the children of men and we conducted him into the Garden of Eden in majesty and honour, and behold there he writes down the condemnation and judgment of the world, and all the wickedness of the children of men. And on account of it (God) brought the waters of the flood upon all the land of Eden; for there he was set as a sign and that he should testify against all the children of men, that he should recount all the deeds of the generations until the day of condemnation.

"Enoch's office was ordained for a testimony to the generations of the world, so that he should recount all the deed: of generation unto generation, till the day of judgment' (4: 17-24).

### **235. *Book of the Secrets of Enoch* (cir. 25 A.D.)**

**a.** "It came to pass, when Enoch had told his sons, that the angels took him on to their wings and bore him up on to the first heaven and placed him on the clouds. And there I looked, and again I looked higher, and saw the ether, and they placed me on the first heaven and showed me a very great sea, greater than the earthly sea." (3: 1-3).

**b.** "And I fell prone and bowed down to the Lord, and the Lord with his lips said to me: 'Have courage, Enoch, do not fear, arise and stand before my face into eternity.' And the archistratege Michael lifted me up, and led me to before the Lord's face. And the Lord said to his servants

tempting them: 'Let Enoch stand before my face into eternity,' and the glorious ones bowed down to the Lord, and said: 'Let Enoch go according to Thy word.' And the Lord said to Michael: 'Go and take Enoch from out his earthly garments, and anoint him with my sweet ointment, and put him into the garments of My glory.' And Michael did thus, as the Lord told him. He anointed me, and dressed me, and the appearance of that ointment is more than the great light, and his ointment is like sweet dew, and its smell mild, shining like the sun's ray, and I looked at myself, and was like one of his glorious ones. And the Lord summoned one of his archangels by name Pravuil, whose knowledge was quicker in wisdom than the other archangels, who wrote all the deeds of the Lord ; and the Lord said to Pravuil: 'Bring out the books from my storehouses, and a reed of quick writing, and give it to Enoch, and deliver to him the choice and comforting books out of thy hand.'" (22: 4-12).

c. "When Enoch had talked to the people, the Lord sent out darkness on to the earth, and there was darkness, and it covered those men standing and talking with Enoch, and they took Enoch up on to the highest heaven, where the Lord is; and he received him and placed him before his face, and the darkness went off from the earth, and light came again. And the people saw and understood not how Enoch had been taken, and glorified God, and found a roll in which was traced: 'the invisible God,' and all went to their homes . . . He was taken up to heaven on the first day of the month of Tsivan and remained in heaven sixty days. He wrote all these signs of all creation, which the Lord created, and wrote three hundred and sixty-six books, and handed them over to his sons and remained on earth thirty days, and was again taken up to heaven on the sixth day of the month of Tsivan .. All the sons of Enoch, made haste, and erected an altar at the place called Achuzan, whence and where Enoch had been taken up to heaven. And they took sacrificial oxen and summoned all people and sacrificed the sacrifice before the Lord's face. All people, the elders of the people and the whole assembly came to the feast and brought gifts to the sons of Enoch. And they made a great feast, rejoicing and making merry three days, praising God, who had given them such a sign through Enoch, who had found favour with him, and that they should hand it on to their sons from generation to generation, from age to age" (67:1 — 68: 7).

#### **236. IV Esdras (1st Century A.D.)**

a. "The Day of Judgment is decisive, and displays unto all

the seal of truth. None shall pray for another on that Day, neither shall one lay a burden on another; for then every one shall bear his own righteousness or unrighteousness. And I answered and said: How is it that we now find that Elias prayed for those who received the rain, and for the dead, that he might live? And he answered me and said: The present age is not the End; the glory of God abides not therein continuously: therefore have the strong prayed for the weak. But the Day of Judgment shall be the end of this age and the beginning of the eternal age that is to come."

b. "Concerning the signs of the end: Behold, the days come when the inhabitants of the earth shall be seized with great panic, and the way of truth shall be hidden, and the land be barren of faith. And iniquity shall be increased above that which thou thyself now seest or that thou hast heard of long ago. And the land that thou seest now to bear rule shall be a pathless waste; and men shall see it forsaken: if the Most High grant thee to live, thou shalt see it after the third (period) in confusion. Then shall the sun suddenly shine forth by night and the moon by day; and blood shall trickle forth from wood, and the stone utter its voice: The peoples shall be in commotion, the movements ( ?) (of the stars) shall change, and one whom the dwellers upon earth do not look for shall wield sovereignty, and the birds shall take to general flight, and the sea shall cast forth its fish. And one whom the many do not know will make his voice heard by night; and all shall hear his voice. And the earth o'er wide regions shall open, and fire burst forth for a long period: The wild beasts shall desert their haunts, and women bear monsters. (And one-year old children shall speak with their voice; pregnant women shall bring forth untimely births at three or four months, and these shall live and dance. And suddenly shall the sown places appear unsown, and the full storehouse shall suddenly be found empty.) Salt waters shall be found in the sweet; friends shall attack one another suddenly. Then shall intelligence hide itself, and wisdom withdraw to its chamber — by many shall be sought and not found. And unrighteousness and incontinency shall be multiplied upon the earth. One land shall also ask another and say: Is Righteousness — that doeth the right — passed through thee ? And it shall answer, No. And it shall be in that time men shall hope and not obtain, shall labour and not prosper" (5: 1-12).

c. "Behold the days come, and it shall be, when I am about to draw nigh to visit the dwellers upon earth, and when I require from the doers of iniquity (the penalty of)

their iniquity ; (and when the humiliation of Sion shall be complete,) and when the Age which is about to pass away shall be sealed then (will I show these signs)" (6: 18-20).

**d.** "Measure (the matter) carefully in thy mind, and when thou seest that a certain part of the predicted signs are past, then shalt thou understand that it is the very time when the Most High is about to visit the world which he has made. When in the world there shall appear quakings of places, tumult of peoples, scheming of nations, confusion of leaders, disquietude of princes, then shalt thou understand that it is of these things the Most High has spoken since the days that were aforetime from the beginning. For just as with respect to all that has happened in the world the beginning is obscure ( ?) but the end (issue) manifest, so also are the times of the Most High: the beginnings are (visible) in portents and secret signs, and the end in effects and marvels"

**e.** "In the last days thereof the Most High will raise up three kings ; and they shall change many things therein, and shall exercise lordship over the earth and over the dwellers therein with much oppression, above all those that were before them. Therefore are they called the heads of the eagle : for these are they that shall bring to a head his wickedness, and consummate his last end. And whereas thou didst see that the great head disappeared — one of them shall die upon his bead, but yet with pain. But as for the two who remain the sword shall devour them. For the sword of the one shall devour him that was with him ; nevertheless this one also shall fall by the sword in the last days. And whereas thou didst see two under-wings passing over to the head that is upon the right side ; this is the interpretation: These are they whom the Most High hath kept for his (i.e. the eagle's) end ; and their rule shall be short and full of uproar, as thou hast seen. And as for the lion whom thou didst see roused from the wood and roaring, and speaking to the eagle and reproving him for his unrighteousness and all his deeds, as thou hast heard: This is the Messiah whom the Most High hath kept unto the end (of the days, who shall spring from the seed of David, and shall come and speak) unto them ; he shall reprove them for their ungodliness, rebuke them for their unrighteousness, reproach them to their faces with their treacheries. For at the first he shall set them alive for judgment; and when he hath rebuked them he shall destroy them." (12: 23-33).

**f.** "These are the interpretations of the vision: Whereas thou didst see a Man coming up from the heart of the Sea :

this is he whom the Most High is keeping many ages (and) through whom he will deliver his creation and the same shall order the survivors. And whereas thou didst see that out of his mouth there came wind, and fire, and storm; and whereas he held neither spear, nor any warlike weapon, but destroyed the assault of that multitude which had come to fight against him — this is the interpretation: (Behold, the days come when the Most High is about to deliver them that are upon earth. And there shall come astonishment of mind upon the dwellers on earth: and they shall plan to war one against another, city against city, place against place, people against people, and kingdom against kingdom. And it shall be when these things shall come to pass, and the signs shall happen which I showed thee before, then shall my Son be revealed whom thou didst see as a Man ascending). It shall be, when all the nations hear His voice, every man shall leave his own land and the warfare which they have one against another; and an innumerable multitude shall be gathered together, as thou didst see, desiring to come and to fight against him. But he shall stand upon the summit of Mount Sion. (And Sion shall come and shall be made manifest to all men, prepared and builded, even as thou didst see the mountain cut without hands. But he, my Son, shall reprove the nations that are come for their ungodliness — which things (i.e., the rebukes) are like unto a storm—; and shall reproach them to their face with their evil thoughts and with the tortures with which they are destined to be tortured — which are compared unto a flame —; and then shall he destroy them without labour by the Law which is compared unto fire" (13:25-38).

**g.** "For still worse evils than those which thou hast seen happen shall yet take place. For the weaker the world grows through age, so much the more shall evils increase upon the dwellers on earth. Truth shall withdraw further off, and falsehood be right at hand: for already the Eagle is hastening to come whom thou sawest in vision" (14: 15-17).

### **237. II Baruch (1st Century A.D.)**

**a.** "God answered and said unto me: 'Into twelve parts is that time (end) divided, and each one of them is reserved for that which is appointed for it . . . In the eighth part a multitude of spectres and attacks of Shedim. . And in the ninth part the fall of fire. And in the tenth part rapine and much oppression. And in the eleventh part wickedness and unchastity. And in the twelfth part confusion from the

mingling together of all those things aforesaid. For these parts of that time are reserved, and shall be mingled one with another and minister one to another. For some shall leave out some of their own, and receive (in its stead) from others, and some complete their own and that of others, so that those may not understand who are upon the earth in those days that this is the consummation of the times" (27: 1-15).

**b.** "For that time shall arise which brings affliction; for it shall come and pass by with quick vehemence, and it shall be turbulent coming in the heat of indignation. And it shall come to pass in those days that all the inhabitants of the earth shall be moved one against another, because they know not that My judgment has drawn nigh. For there shall not be found many wise at that time, and the intelligent shall be but a few ; Moreover, even those who know shall most of all be silent. And there shall be many rumours and tidings not a few, and the doings of phantasmata shall be manifest, and promises not a few be recounted, some of them shall prove idle, and some of them shall be confirmed. And honour shall be turned into shame, and strength humiliated into contempt, and probity destroyed, and beauty shall become ugliness. And many shall say to many at that time: 'Where hath the multitude of intelligence hidden itself, and whither hath the multitude of wisdom removed itself?' And whilst they are meditating these things, then envy shall arise in those who had not thought aught of themselves and passion shall seize him that is peaceful, and many shall be stirred up in anger to injure many, and they shall rouse up armies in order to shed blood, and in the end they shall perish together with them. And it shall come to pass at the self-same time, that a change of times shall manifestly appear to every man, because in all those times they polluted themselves and they practiced oppression, and walked every man in his own works, and re-membered not the law of the Mighty One. Therefore a fire shall consume their thoughts, and in flame shall the meditations of their reins be tried: for the Judge shall come and will not tarry. Because each of the inhabitants of the earth knew when he was transgressing. But My law they knew not by reason their pride. But many shall then assuredly weep, Yea, over the living more than over the dead. And I /answered and said: O Adam, what hast thou done to all those who are born from thee?' And what will be said to the first Eve who hearkened to the serpent? For all this multitude are going to corruption, nor is there any numbering of those whom the fire devours" (48: 31-43).

**c.** "Behold! the days come, and it shall be when the time of the age has ripened, and the harvest of its evil and good seeds has come, that the Mighty One will bring upon the earth and its inhabitants and upon its rulers perturbation of spirit and stupor of heart. And they shall hate one another, and provoke one another to fight" (2 Bar. 70: 2-3).

**d.** "And when those things which were predicted have come to pass, then shall confusion fall upon all men, and some of them shall fall in battle, and some of them shall perish in anguish, and some of them shall be destroyed by their own. Then the Most High will reveal those peoples whom He has prepared before, and they shall come and make war with the leaders that shall then be left. And it shall come to pass that whosoever gets safe out of the war shall die in the earthquake, and whosoever gets safe out of the earthquake shall be burned by the fire, and whosoever gets safe out of the fire shall be destroyed by famine . . . For all the earth shall devour its inhabitants" (70: 6-10).

### **238. *Martyrdom of Isaias (1st Century A.D.)***

"The angel of lawlessness, who is the ruler of this world, is Beliar, whose name is Matanbuchus. And he delighted in Jerusalem because of Manasseh, and he made him strong in apostatizing and in the lawlessness which was spread abroad in Jerusalem. And witchcraft and magic increased and divination and auguration, and fornication (and adultery), and the persecution of the righteous by Manasseh and (Belachira, and) Tobia the Canaanite, and John of Anathoth, and by (Zadok) the chief of the works. And the rest of the acts, behold they are written in the book of the Kings of Judah and Israel. And when Isaiah the son of Amoz saw the lawlessness which was being perpetrated in Jerusalem and the worship of Satan and his wantonness, he withdrew from Jerusalem and settled in Bethlehem of Judah" (2: 4b-6)

### **239. *Testament of Abraham (1st Century A.D.)***

"He that bears witness here is the teacher of heaven and earth, and the scribe of righteousness, Enoch, for the Lord sent him hither to write down the sins and righteousness of each one. Abraham said, And how can Enoch bear the weight of the souls, riot having seen death? or how can he give sentence to all the souls? Michael said, If he gives sentence concerning the souls, it is not permitted ; but Enoch himself does not give sentence, but it is the Lord who does so, and he has no more to do than only to write.

For Enoch prayed to the Lord saying, I desire not, Lord, to give sentence on the souls, lest I be grievous to anyone ; and the Lord said to Enoch, I shall command thee to write down the sins of the soul that makes atonement and it shall enter every breath and every creature. But the third time they shall be judged by the Lord God of all, and then, indeed, the end of that judgment is near, and the sentence terrible, and there is none to deliver"

#### **240. *Testament of Isaias* (1st Century A.D.)**

"In the last times your sons will forsake singleness and will cleave unto insatiable desires; and leaving guilelessness will draw near to malice; and forsaking the commandment of the Lord they will cleave unto beliar

(Satan); and leaving husbandry they will follow after their own wicked devices" (6:1 ss).

#### **241. *Revelation of Esdras* (1st Century A.D.)**

"God said : 'First I will make an earthquake for the fall of four-footed beasts and of men; and when you see that brother gives up brother to death, and that children shall rise up against their parents, and that a woman forsake her own husband, and when nation shall rise up against nation in war, then you will know that the end is near. For then neither brother pities brother, nor man wife, nor children parents, nor friends friends, nor a slave his master, for he who is the adversary of men shall come up from Tartarus (Hell), and shall show men many things."

### **CHRISTIAN APOCRYPHA**

The books quoted here date from the second and third centuries after Christ. None of them has any other value than to illustrate the notions of Antichrist which were current in some Christian circles during these centuries.

#### **242. *History of Joseph***

a. "I say to you, O my brethren, that they also, Enoch and Elias, must towards the end of time return into the world and die — in the day, namely, of commotion, of terror, of perplexity, and affliction. For Antichrist will slay four bodies, and will pour out their blood like water, because of the reproach to which they shall expose him, and the ignomy with which they, in their lifetime, shall brand him when they reveal his impiety. And we said : O our Lord, our God and Saviour, who are those four whom Thou hast said Antichrist will cut off from the reproach they bring upon him? The Lord answered : They are Enoch, Elias, Schila, and Tabitha. When we heard this from our Saviour, we rejoiced and exulted ; and we offered all glory and thanksgiving to the Lord God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ. He it is to whom is due glory, honour, dignity, dominion, power, and praise, as well as to the good Father with Him, and to the Holy Spirit that giveth life, henceforth and in all time for evermore"

b. "We asked why Joseph should not have been exempted from death like Enoch and Elias. Jesus speaks of the inevitableness of death, and tells how Enoch and Elias still have to die, and are in trouble until their death is over.

Antichrist will shed the blood of two men like a cup of water, because of the reproaches they will heap upon him. We asked: Who are the two whom he will slay? Answer: Enoch and Elias"

#### **243. *Acts of Pilate***

a. "And the apostles have told you with an oath, saying: We saw Jesus upon the Mount Mamilch with his disciples and that he taught them all things that ye heard of them, and, say they, we saw him taken up into heaven. And no man asked them in what manner he was taken up. For like as the book of the holy scriptures hath taught us that Elias also was taken up into heaven, and Eliseus cried out with a loud voice, and Elias cast his hairy cloak upon Eliseus, and Eliseus cast the cloak upon Jordan and passed over and went unto Jericho. And the sons of the prophets met him and said: Eliseus, where is thy lord Elias ? And he said that he was taken up into heaven"

b. "But the Lord holding the hand of Adam delivered him unto Michael the archangel, and all the saints followed Michael the archangel, and he brought them all into the glory and beauty (grace) of paradise. And there met with them two men, ancients of days, and when they were asked of the saints: Who are ye that have not yet been dead in hell with us and are set in paradise in the body? then one of them answering, said: I am Enoch which was translated hither by the word of the Lord, and this that is with me is Elias the Thesbite which was taken up in a

chariot of fire: and up to this day we have not tasted death, but we are received unto the coming of Antichrist to fight against him with signs and wonders of God, and to be slain of him in Jerusalem, and after three days and a half to be taken up again alive on the clouds" ("hell" here means "abode of the dead").

#### **244. *Book of Bartholomew***

"The angels cried unto the powers, saying: Remove your gates, ye princes, remove the everlasting doors, for behold the King of glory cometh down. Hades said: Who is the King of Glory, that cometh down from heaven unto us?"

"The devil said unto Hades: Why affrightest thou me, Hades? It is a prophet, and he hath made himself like unto God: this prophet will we take and bring him hither unto those that think to ascend into heaven. And Hades said: Which of the prophets is it? Show me: Is it Enoch the scribe of righteousness? But God hath not suffered him to come down upon the earth before the end of the six thousand years. Sayest thou that it is Elias, the avenger? But before the end he cometh not down. What shall I do, whereas the destruction is of God: for surely our end is at hand? For I have the number of the years in mine hands."

#### **245. *Book of John the Evangelist***

a. "I asked the Lord and said: What shall be in that time? And he said to me: From the time when the devil fell from the glory of the Father and lost his own glory, he sat upon the clouds, and sent his ministers, even angels flaming with fire, unto men from Adam even unto Henoch his servant. And he raised up Henoch upon the firmament and showed him his godhead, and commanded pen and ink to be given him: and he sat down and wrote threescore and seven books. And he commanded that he should take them to the earth and deliver them unto his sons, and began to teach them to perform the custom of sacrifice, and uprighteous mysteries, and so did he hide the kingdom of heaven from men. And he said unto them: Behold that I am your god and beside me is none other god. And therefore did my Father send me into the world that I might make it known unto men, that they might know the evil device of the devil."

b. "I asked the Lord concerning the day of judgment: What shall be the sign of thy coming? And he answered and said unto me: When the numbers of the righteous shall

be accomplished, that is, the number of the righteous that are crowned, then shall Satan be loosed out of his prison, having great wrath, and shall make war with the righteous, and they shall cry unto the Lord with a loud voice. And immediately the Lord shall command an angel to blow with the trumpet, and the voice of the archangel shall be heard in the trumpet from heaven even unto hell. And then shall the sun be darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall, and the four winds shall be loosed from their foundations, and shall cause the earth and the sea and the mountains to quake together. And the heaven shall immediately shake and the sun shall be darkened, and it shall shine even to the fourth hour"

#### **246. *Apocalypse of Peter***

a. "Hast thou not understood that the fig-tree is the house of Israel? Verily I say unto thee, when the twigs thereof have sprouted forth in the last days, then shall feigned Christs come and awake expectation, saying: I am the Christ, that am now into the world. And when they (Israel) shall perceive the wickedness of their deeds they shall turn away after them and deny him (whom our fathers did praise), even the first Christ whom they crucified and therein sinned a great sin. But this deceiver is not the Christ. And when they reject him he shall slay with the sword, and there shall be many martyrs. Then shall the twigs of the fig-tree, that is, the house of Israel, shoot forth: many shall become martyrs at his hand. Enoch and Elias shall be sent to teach them that this is the deceiver which must come into the world and do signs and wonders to deceive. And therefore shall they that die by his hand be martyrs, and shall be reckoned among the good and righteous martyrs who have pleased God in their life."

b. "Many of them shall be false prophets, and shall teach ways and diverse doctrines of perdition. And they shall become sons of perdition. And then shall God comp unto my faithful ones that hunger and thirst and are of flitted and prove their souls in this life, and shall judge the sons of iniquity. Take heed that no man deceive you and you be not doubters and servers of other gods. Many shall come in My name, saying: I am the Christ: believe them not, neither draw near unto them...."

"And this shall come at the day of judgment upon their that have fallen away from faith in God and that have committed sin: Floods (cataracts) of fire shall be let loose;

and darkness and obscurity shall come and clothe and veil the whole world; and the waters shall be changed and turned into coals of fire, and all that is in them shall burn, and the sea shall become fire. Under the heaven shall be a sharp fire that cannot be quenched, and floweth to fulfill the judgment of wrath. And the stars shall fly in pieces by flames of fire, as if they had not been created, and the powers (firmaments) of the heaven shall pass away for lack of water and shall be as though they had not been.

"Woe unto all them that are found great with child in that day, and to them that give suck to infant children, and to them that dwell by the sea (the waves). Woe to them that shall behold that day. For a dark mist shall cover the boundless world, of the east and west, the south and north."

#### **247. *Apocalypse of Paul***

"Straightway the gate was opened, and there came forth a hoary-headed man to meet us ; and he said to me: Welcome, Paul, beloved of God ! and, with a joyful countenance, he kissed me with tears. And I said to him: Father, why weepest thou ? And he said to me: Because God hath prepared many good things for men, and they do not His will in order that they may enjoy them. And I asked the angel: My Lord, who is this? And he said to me: This is Enoch, the witness of the last day.

"Looking away, I saw other two from afar off. And I asked the angel: Who are these, my Lord? And he said to me: These are Enoch and Elias. And they came and saluted me, saying: Welcome, Paul, beloved of God! And I said to them: Who are you? And Elias the prophet answered and said to me: I am Elias the prophet, who prayed to God, and He caused that no rain should come down upon the earth for three years and six months, on account of the unrighteousness of the sons of men. For often, of a truth, even the angel besought God on account of the rain ; and I heard, be patient until Elias my beloved shall pray, and I send rain upon the earth."

#### **248. *Revelation of John***

"Then shall appear the denier, and he who is set apart in the darkness, who is called Antichrist. And again I said: Lord, reveal to me what he is like. And I heard a voice saying to me: The appearance of his face is dusky; the hairs of his head are sharp like darts; his eyebrows like a

wild beast's; his right eye like the star which rises in the morning, and the other like a lion's; his mouth about one cubit; his teeth a span long; his fingers like scythes; the print of his feet of two spans; and on his face an inscription, Antichrist; he holds in his hand a cup of death; and all that worship him drink of it. His right eye is like the morning star, and his left like a lion's; because he was taken prisoner by the archangel Michael, and he took his godhead from him. And I was sent from the bosom of my Father, and I drew up the head of the polluted one, and his eye was consumed. And when they worship him, he writes on their right hands, that they may sit with him in the outer fire ; and for all who have not been baptized, and have not believed, have been reserved all anger and wrath. And I said: My Lord, and what miracles does he do? Hear righteous John: He shall remove mountains and hills, and he shall beckon with his polluted hand, Come all to me; and through his displays and deceits they will be brought together to his own place. He will raise the dead, and show in everything like God. He shall be exalted even to heaven, and shall be cast down even to Hades, making false displays. And then will I make the heaven brazen, so that it shall not give moisture upon the earth; and I will hide the clouds in secret places, so that they shall not bring moisture upon the earth ; and I will command the horns of the wind, so that the wind shall not blow upon the earth.

"And again I said: Lord, and how many years will he do this upon the earth ? And I heard a voice saying to me: Hear, righteous John. Three years shall those times be; and I will make the three years like three months, and the three months like three weeks, and the three weeks like three days, and the three days like three hours, and the three hours like three seconds, as said the prophet David, His throne hast Thou broken down to the ground; Thou hast shortened the days of his time; Thou hast poured shame upon him. And then I shall send forth Enoch and Elias to convict him ; and they shall show him to be a liar and a deceiver and he shall kill them at the altar, as said the prophet, Then shall they offer calves upon Thine altar."

#### **249. *Epistle of Barnabas***

And God made in six days the works of his hands; and he finished them on the seventh day, and he rested the seventh day, and sanctified it. Consider, my children, what that signifies, he finished them in six days. The meaning of it is this; that in six thousand years the Lord God will

bring all things to an end. For with him one day is a thousand years; as himself testifieth, saying, Behold this day shall be as a thousand years. Therefore, children, in six days, that is, in six thousand years, shall all things be accomplished. And what is that he saith, And he rested the seventh day: he meaneth this ; that when his Son shall come, and abolish the season of the Wicked One, and judge the ungodly; and shall change the sun and moon, and the stars; then he shall gloriously rest in that seventh day."

### **250. *Epistle of the Apostles (Ethiopic Text)***

"Take heed that no man deceive you, and that ye be not doubters and serve other gods. Many shall come in My name, saying: I am the Christ. Believe them not, neither draw near unto them . . . Verily I say unto thee, when the twigs of the fig tree have sprouted forth in the last days (the fig tree is the House of Israel) then shall feigned Christs awake expectations, saying: I am the Christ that am now come into the world."

### **251. *Epistle of the Apostles***

"In the last days the kinsman shall show no favor to his kinsman, nor any man to his neighbor. And they that were overthrown shall rise up and behold them that over-threw them; and men shall take from one and give to another . . . But they that are deceivers in the world and enemies of righteousness, upon them shall come the fulfillment of the prophecy of David, who said: Their feet are swift to shed blood, their tongue uttereth slander, adders' poison is under their lips. I behold thee companying with thieves, and partaking with adulterers, thou continuest speaking against thy brother and puttest stumbling-blocks before thine own mother's son . . . And there shall be many that believe on my name and yet follow after evil and spread vain doctrine. And men shall follow after them and their riches, and be subject unto their wide, and lust for drink, and bribery, and there shall be respect of persons among them . . . There shall come forth another doctrine, and because they shall strive after their own advancement, they shall bring forth an unprofitable doctrine. And therein shall be a deadly corruption (of uncleanness), and they shall teach it, and shall turn away them from eternal life. But woe unto them that falsify this my word and commandment, and draw away them that hearken to the commandment of life ; for together with them they shall come into everlasting judgment."

### **252. *Epistle of James***

"There shall be wonders and strange appearances in heaven and on earth before the end of the world come. 'Tell us now, how shall we perceive it?' And he answered us: 'I will teach it to you; and not that which believe, as well as them who shall hear that man and believe in me. In those years and days shall it come to pass.'

"The sun and moon fighting one with the other, a continual rolling and noise of thunders and lightnings, thunder and earthquakes; cities falling and men perishing in their over-throw, a continual drouth for lack of rain, a terrible pestilence and great mortality, mighty and untimely, so they that die lack burial: and the bearing forth of brethren and sisters and kinsfolk shall be upon one bier. The kinsman shall show no favour to his kinsman, nor any man to his neighbor. And they that were overthrown shall rise up and behold them that overthrew them, that they lack burial, for the pestilence shall be full of hatred and pain and envy: and man shall take from one and give to another, and thereafter shall it wax yet worse than before. Then shall my Father be wroth at the wickedness of men, for many are their transgressions and the abominations of their uncleanness weigheth heavy upon them in the corruption of their life.

"Lord will not then the nations say: 'Where is their God?' And he answered and said unto us: 'Thereby shall the elect be known, that they, being plagued with such afflictions, come forth.' We said: Will then their departure out of the world be by a pestilence which giveth them pain?' He answered us: 'Nay, but if they suffer much affliction, it will be a proving of them.'

"In those years and days shall war be kindled upon war, the four ends of the earth shall be in commotion and fight against each other. Thereafter shall be quakings of clouds, darkness, and drouth and persecutions of them that believe in me and against the elect. Thereupon shall come doubt and strife and transgressions against one another."

### **253. *Gospel of Bartholomew***

"Antichrist said: I will tell thee. And a wheel came up out of the abyss, having seven fiery knives. The first knife hath twelve pipes. Antichrist answered: The pipe of fire in the first knife, in it are put the casters of lots and diviners and enchanters, and they that believe in them or have

sought them, because in the iniquity of their heart they have in-vented false divinations. In the second pipe of fire are first the blasphemers . . . suicides . . . idolaters . . . In the rest are the first perjurers: And Bartholomew said: Dost thou then do these things by thyself alone? And Satan said: If I were able to go forth by myself, I would have destroyed the whole world in three days : but neither I nor any of the six hundred go forth. For we have other swift ministers whom we command, and we furnish them with an hook of many points and send them forth to hunt, and they catch for us souls of men, enticing them with sweetness of divers baits, that is by drunkenness and laughter, by backbiting, hypocrisy, pleasures, fornication, and the rest of the trifles that come out of their treasures."

#### **254. *Apocalypse of Thomas***

"Hear thou, Thomas, the things which must come to pass in the last times: there shall be famine and war and earthquakes in divers places, snow and ice and great drought shall there be, and many dissensions among the peoples, blasphemy, iniquity, envy and villainy, indolence, pride and intemperance, so that every man shall speak that which pleaseth him. And my priests shall not have peace among themselves, but shall sacrifice unto me with deceitful mind ; therefore will I not look upon them. Then shall the priests behold the people departing from the House of the Lord and turning unto the world, as well as transgressing in the House of God . . . The House of the Lord shall be desolate and her altars be abhorred . . . The place of holiness shall be corrupted, the priesthood polluted, distress shall increase, virtues shall be overcome (i.e., vices made to appear as virtues?), joy perish, and gladness depart (i.e., without holiness there can be no peace — without peace no real happiness) . . . In those days evils shall abound: there shall be respecters of persons, hymns shall cease out of the House of the Lord, truth shall be no more, covetousness shall abound among the priests ; an upright man shall not be found. And they shall vindicate for themselves many things.

"At that time shall be very great rising of the sea, (common people?) so that no man shall tell news to any man. The kings of the earth and the princes and the captains shall be troubled, and no man shall speak freely. Grey hairs shall be seen upon boys, and the young shall not give place unto the aged. After that shall arise another king, a crafty man, who shall hold rule for a short space: in whose days they shall be all manner of evils, even the

death of the race of men from the east even unto Babylon. And thereafter death and famine and sword in the land of Chanaan even unto Rome. Then shall all the fountains of waters and wells boil over and be turned into blood (or into dust and blood). The heaven shall be moved, the stars shall fall upon the earth the sun shall be cut in half like the moon, and the moon shall not give her light. There shall be great signs and wonder in those days when Antichrist draweth near. These are the signs unto them that dwell in the earth. In those days the pains of great travail shall come upon them. Woe unto them that build, for they shall not inhabit. Woe unto them that break up the fallow, for they shall labour without cause. Woe unto them that make marriages, for unto famine and need shall they beget sons. Woe unto them that join house to house or field to field, for all things shall be consumed with fire. Woe unto them that look not unto themselves while time alloweth, for hereafter shall they be condemned for ever. Woe unto them that turn away from the poor when he asketh.

"And on the third day of judgment, about the second hour, shall be a voice from the four corners of the world. The first heaven shall be rolled up like a book and shall straightaway vanish. And because of the smoke and stench of the brimstone of the abyss the days shall be darkened unto the tenth hour. Then shall all men say : I think that the end draweth near, that we shall perish. These are the signs of the third day.

"And on the fourth day at the first hour, the earth of the east shall speak, the abyss shall roar: then shall all the earth be moved by the strength of an earthquake. In that day shall all the idols of the heathen fall, and all the buildings of the earth. These are the signs of the fourth day.

"And on the fifth day, at the sixth hour, there shall be great thunderings suddenly in the heaven, and the powers of light and the wheel of the sun shall be caught away, and there shall be great darkness over the world until evening, and the stars shall be turned away from their ministry. In that day all nations shall hate the world and despise the life of this world. These are the signs of the fifth day.

"After a little space there shall arise a king out of the east, a lover of the law, who shall cause all good things and necessary to abound in the house of the Lord: he shall show mercy unto the widows and to the needy, and

command a royal gift to be given unto the priests : in his

days shall be abundance of all things"

## OTHER ANCIENT ORACLES

### **255. *Sibylline Oracle***

"In a ring around the city the accursed kings shall place each one his throne with his infidel people by him. And then with a mighty voice God shall speak unto all the undisciplined empty-minded people, and judgment shall come upon them from the mighty God, and all shall perish at the hand of the Eternal. From heaven shall fall fiery swords down to the earth: lights shall come bright and great, flashing into the midst of men. And earth, the universal Mother, shall shake in those days at the hand of the Eternal, and the fishes in the sea, and all the beasts of the earth and the countless tribes of flying things, and all souls of men and every sea shall shudder at the presence of the Eternal and there shall be panic. And the towering mountain peaks and the hills of the giants He shall rend, and the murky abyss shall be visible to all. And the high-hung ravines in the lofty mountains shall be full of dead bodies : the rocks shall flow with blood, and each torrent shall flood the plain. The well-built walls of the disaffected men shall all fall to the ground, because they knew not the law nor the judgment of the Mighty God, but with witless mind with one united onslaught ye cast your spears against the Holy One. And God shall judge all with war and sword, and with fire and cataclysms of rain. And there shall be brimstone from heaven, yea stones and hail

incessant and grievous: and death shall be upon the four-footed beasts. And then shall they know the Immortal God, who ordains these things. Wailing and lamenting through the length and breadth of the land shall come with the perishing of men: and all the shameless shall be washed with blood. Yea, the land itself shall drink of the blood of the perishing: the beasts shall eat their fill of flesh." (cf also Prophecy 63).

### **256. *Sibylla Tiburtina***

"A prince of iniquity shall come forth from the tribe of Dan, who will be called Antichrist. Child of perdition, full of arrogance, and of an insane malice, he shall work upon earth a number of prodigies in order to support his erroneous doctrines. Through his magical arts he will surprise the good faith of many persons. At his command fire shall come from above.

"At that time the years shall be shortened as well as the months, the weeks, and the days and hours. God will shorten, not the measure or duration, but the number of those terrible days.

"For the sake of God's elect, Antichrist shall be killed upon Mount Olivet by Michael (the Archangel). Then the dead shall rise." (cf Prophecy 96)

## CHAPTER III

### EARLY PATRISTIC WRITERS

#### 257. *St. Clement* (d. 97)

a. "Let us be imitators also of those who in goatskins and sheepskins went about proclaiming the coming of Christ; I mean Elijah, Elisha, and Ezekiel among the prophets."

"But that He might show that these things were done on account of the ungrateful, He translated to immortality a certain one of the first race of men, because He saw that he was not unmindful of His grace, and because he hoped to call on the name of God ; while the rest who were so ungrateful that they could not be amended and corrected even by labours and tribulations, were condemned to a terrible death."

b. "Let us steadfastly contemplate those who have perfectly ministered to God's excellent glory. Let us take (for instance) Enoch, who, being found righteous in obedience, was translated, and death was never known to happen to him."

#### 258. *Didache* (90-100)

"In the last days false prophets and corrupters shall be multiplied and the sheep shall be turned into wolves and love into hate. When their iniquity shall have increased they shall hate each other and persecute and betray ; and then shall appear the deceiver of the world as the son of God. And he shall do signs and wonders and the earth shall be given into his hands and he shall do evil such as has not been done through the ages. Then shall come the creature of men in fire of probation and many shall be scandalized (meaning led into evil doing) and they shall perish.

"He however who shall have persevered in his faith shall be saved from that accursed one. And then shall appear the signs of truth : first the sign of the heavens opened, secondly the sign of the trumpet, and third the resurrection of the dead ; but by no means the resurrection of all, but as is said, 'The Lord shall come and all the saints with Him. Then the world shall see the Lord coming upon the clouds of heaven'."

The above quotation from the *Didache* is found incorporated in the Seventh Book of the so-called CONSTITUTIONS OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES (cir.

325 A. D., section XXXII) but so embellished that it departs considerably from the sense of the original. As an example of the interpretation of the redactor, I quote the changed parts, "and then shall appear the enemy of truth, the prince of lies (2 Thes. 2) whom the Lord Jesus shall destroy with the spirit of his mouth, who takes away the wicked with His lips ; and many shall be offended at Him. But they that endure to the end, the same shall be saved. And then shall appear the sign of the son of man in heaven (Isa. 9: 4; Matt. 24) ; and afterwards shall be the voice of a trumpet by the archangel (1 Thes. 4: 16) and in that interval shall be the revival of those that were asleep. And then shall the Lord come, and all his saints with Him, with a great concussion above the clouds, with the angels of His power (Matt. 16: 27) in the throne of his kingdom, to condemn the devil, the deceiver of the world, and to render to everyone according to his deeds." (Note: as is evident this commentator shies from the idea of a "first resurrection" as given in the *Didache*).

#### 259. *Pastor of Hermes* (2nd Century)

"When these things thus come to pass then He who is Lord, looking upon what is done and opposing His own will to the disorder, He cleanses the wickedness, partly by inundating the world with much water, and partly by burning it with most rapid fire, and sometimes pressing it with wars and pestilences, He will bring His world to its ancient state." (cf also Prophecy 34)

#### 260. *St. Irenaeus* (130-200)

a. "By means of the events which shall occur in the time of Antichrist it is shown that he, being an apostate and a robber, is anxious to be adored as God; and that although a mere slave, he wishes himself to be proclaimed as a king. For he (Antichrist) being endued with all the power of the devil, shall come, not as a righteous king, nor as a legitimate king, (i.e. one) in subjection to God, but an impious, unjust, and lawless one; as an apostate, iniquitous and murderous; as a robber, concentrating in himself (all) satanic apostasy, and setting aside idols to persuade (men) that he himself is God, raising up himself as the only idol, having in himself the multifarious errors of the other idols. This he does, in order that they who do (now) worship the devil by means of many abominations,

may serve himself by this one idol, of whom the apostle thus speaks in the second Epistle to the Thessalonians: "Unless there shall come a falling away first, and the man of sin shall be revealed, the son of perdition who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped ; so that he sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself as if he were God." The apostle therefore clearly points out his apostasy, and that he is lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped — that is, above every idol — for these are indeed so called by men, but are not (really) gods ; and that he will endeavour in a tyrannical manner to set himself forth as God."

**b.** "Daniel, looking forward to the end of the last kingdom, i.e., the ten last kings, amongst whom the kingdom of those men shall be partitioned, and upon whom the son of perdition shall come, declares that ten horns shall spring from the beast, and that another little horn shall arise in the midst of them, and that three of the former shall be rooted up before his face. He says: 'And, behold, eyes were in this horn as the eyes of a man, and a mouth speaking great things, and his look was more stout than his fellows. I was looking, and this horn made war against the saints, and prevailed against them, until the Ancient of days came and gave judgment to the saints of the most high God, and the time came, and the saints obtained the kingdom.' Then, further on, in the interpretation of the vision, there was said to him: 'The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall excel all other kingdoms, and devour the whole earth, and tread it down, and cut it in pieces. And its ten horns are ten kings which shall arise, and after them shall arise another, who shall surpass in evil deeds all that were before him, and shall overthrow three kings ; and he shall speak words against the most high God, and wear out the saints of the most high God, and shall purpose to change times and laws ; and (everything) shall be given into his hand until a time, times and a half time, that is, for three years and six months, during which time, when he comes, he shall reign over the earth. Of whom also the Apostle Paul again, speaking in the second Epistle to the Thessalonians, and at the same time proclaiming the cause of his advent, thus says: 'And then shall the wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord Jesus shall slay with the spirit of His mouth, and destroy by the presence of His coming; whose coming (i.e., the wicked one's) is after the working of Satan, in all power, and signs, and portents of lies, and with all deceivableness of wickedness for those who perish ; because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they

might be saved. And therefore God will send them the working of error, that they may believe a lie; that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth, but gave consent to iniquity'."

**c.** "The Lord also spoke as follows to those who did not believe in Him: 'I have come in my Father's name, and ye have not received Me: when another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive,' calling Antichrist the ether, because he is alienated from the Lord. This is also the unjust judge, whom the Lord mentioned as one 'who feared not God, neither regarded man,' to whom the widow fled in her forgetfulness of God, — that is, the earthly Jerusalem, —to be avenged for her adversary. Which also he shall do in the time of his kingdom: he shall remove his kingdom into that (city), and shall sit in the temple of God, leading astray those who worship him, as if he were Christ. To this purpose Daniel says again: 'And he shall desolate the holy place; and sin has been given for a sacrifice, and righteousness been cast away in the earth, and he has been active and gone on prosperously.' And the angel Gabriel, when explaining his vision, states with regard to this person: 'And towards the end of their kingdom a king of a most fierce countenance shall arise, one understanding (dark) questions, and exceedingly powerful, full of wonders ; and he shall corrupt, direct, influence, and put strong men down, the holy people likewise ; and his yoke shall be directed as a wreath (round their neck); deceit shall be in his hand, and he shall be lifted up in his heart: he shall also ruin many by deceit, and lead many to perdition, bruising them in his hand like eggs.' And then he points out the time that his tyranny shall last, during which the saints shall be put to flight, they who offer a pure sacrifice unto God: 'And in the midst of the week,' he says, 'the sacrifice and the libation shall be taken away, and the abomination of desolation (shall be brought) into the temple: even unto the consummation of the time shall the desolation be complete.' Now three years and six months constitute the half-week."

**d.** "In a still clearer light has John, in the Apocalypse, indicated to the Lord's disciples what shall happen in the last times, and concerning the ten kings who shall then arise, among whom the empire which now rules (the earth) shall be partitioned. He teaches us what the ten horns shall be which were seen by Daniel, telling us that thus it had been said to him: 'And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, who have received no kingdom as yet, but shall receive power as if kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and give their strength

and power to the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them, because He is the Lord of lords and the King of kings.' It is manifest, therefore, that of these (potentates), he who is to come shall slay three, and subject the remainder to his power, and that he shall be himself the eighth among them. And they shall lay Babylon waste and burn her with fire, and shall give their kingdom to the beast, and put the Church to flight. After that they shall be destroyed by the coming of our Lord. For that kingdom must be divided, and thus come to ruin, the Lord (declares when he) says:, 'Every kingdom divided against itself shall not stand'."

e. "It must be therefore, that the kingdom, the city, and the house be divided into ten; and for this reason He has already foreshadowed the partition and division (which shall take place). Daniel also says particularly, that the end of the kingdom consists in the toes of the image seen by Nebuchadnezzar, upon which came the stone cut out without hands ; and as he does himself say: The feet were indeed the one part iron, the other part clay, until the stone was cut without hands, and struck the image upon the iron and clay feet, and dashed them into pieces, even to the end.' Then afterwards, when interpreting this, he says: 'And as thou sawest the feet and the toes, partly indeed of clay, and partly of iron, the kingdom shall be divided, and there shall be in it a root of iron, as thou sawest the iron mixed with baked clay. And the toes were indeed the one part iron, but the other part clay.' The ten toes, therefore, are these ten kings, among whom the kingdom shall be partitioned, of whom some indeed shall be strong and active, or energetic ; others, again, shall be sluggish and useless, and shall not agree ; as also Daniel says: 'Some part of the kingdom shall be strong, and part shall be broken from it. As thou sawest the iron mixed with the baked clay, there shall be minglings among the human race, but no cohesion one with the other, just as iron cannot be welded on to pottery ware.' And since an end shall take place, he says: "And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven raise up a kingdom which shall never decay, and His kingdom shall not be left to another people. It shall break in pieces and shatter all kingdoms, and shall itself be exalted for ever. As thou sawest that the stone was cut without hands from the mountain, and brake in pieces the baked clay, the iron, the brass, the silver, and the gold, God has pointed out to the king what shall come to pass after these things; and the dream is true, and the interpretation trustworthy."

f. "The apostle John says: 'Because they received not the

love of God, that they might be saved, therefore God shall also send them the operation of error, that they may believe a lie, that they all may be judged who have not believed the truth, but consented to unrighteousness.' For when he (Antichrist) is come, and of his own accord concentrates in his own person the apostasy, and accomplishes whatever he shall do according to his own will and choice, sitting also in the temple of God, so that his dupes may adore him as the Christ ; wherefore also shall he deservedly 'be cast into the lake of fire:' (this will happen according to divine appointment), God by his prescience foreseeing all this, and at the proper time sending such a man, 'that they may believe a lie, that they all may be judged who did not believe the truth, but consented to unrighteousness;' whose coming John has thus described in the Apocalypse:

g. "And the beast which I had seen was like unto a leopard, and his feet as of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion ; and the dragon conferred his own power upon him, and his throne, and great might. And one of his heads was as it were slain unto death ; and his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon because he gave power to the beast; and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto this beast, and who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemy and power was given to him during forty and two months. And he opened his mouth for blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name and His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. And power was given him over every tribe, and people, and tongue, and nation. And all who dwell upon the earth worshipped him, (every one) whose name was not written in the book of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. If any one have ears, let him hear. If any one shall lead into captivity, he shall go into captivity. If any shall slay with the sword, he must be slain with the sword. Here is the endurance and the faith of the saints.

"After this he likewise describes his armour-bearer, whom he also terms a false prophet: 'He spake as a dragon, and exercised all the power of the first beast in his sight, and caused the earth, and those that dwell therein, to adore the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he shall perform great wonders, so that he can even cause fire to descend from heaven upon the earth in the sight of men, and he shall lead the inhabitants of the earth astray.' Let no one imagine that he performs these wonders by divine power, but by the working of magic. And we must not be

surprised if, since the demons and apostate spirits are at his service, he through their means performs wonders, by which he leads the inhabitants of the earth astray. John says further: 'And he shall order an image of the beast to be made, and he shall give breath to the image, so that the image shall speak ; and he shall cause those to be slain who will not adore it.' He says also: 'And he will cause a mark (to be put) in the forehead and in the right hand, that no one may be able to buy or sell, unless he who has the mark of the name of the beast or the number of his name ; and the number is six hundred and sixty-six,' that is, six times a hundred, six times ten, and six units. (He gives this) as a summing up of the whole of that apostasy which has taken place during six thousand years.

**h.** "In the end the Church shall be suddenly caught up from this, it is said, 'There shall be tribulation such as has not been since the beginning, neither shall be.' For this is the last contest of the righteous, in which, when they overcome, they are crowned with incorruption.

**i.** "And there is therefore in this beast, when he comes, a recapitulation made of all sorts of iniquity and of every deceit, in order that all apostate power, flowing into and being shut up in him, may be sent into the furnace of fire. Fittingly, therefore, shall his name possess the number six hundred and sixty-six, since he sums up in his own person all the commixture of wickedness which took place previous to the deluge, due to the apostasy of the angels. For Noah was six hundred years old when the deluge came upon the earth, sweeping away the rebellious world, for the sake of that most infamous generation which lived in the times of Noah. And (Antichrist) also sums up every error of de-vised idols since the flood, together with the slaying of the prophets and the cutting off of the just. For that image which was set up by Nebuchadnezzar had indeed a height of sixty cubits, while the breadth was six cubits ; on account of which Ananias, Azarias, and Misael, when they did not worship it, were cast into a furnace of fire, pointing out prophetically, by what happened to them, the wrath against the righteous which shall rise towards the (time of the) end. For that image, taken as a whole, was a prefiguring of this man's coming, decreeing that he should undoubtedly himself alone be worshipped by all men. Thus, then, the six hundred years of Noah, in whose time the deluge occurred because of the apostasy, and the number of cubits of the image for which these just men were sent into the fiery furnace, do indicate the number of the name of that man in whom is concentrated the whole apostasy of six thousand years, and

unrighteousness, and wickedness, and false prophecy, and deception, for which things' sake a cataclysm of fire shall also come (upon the earth).

**j.** "Such, then, being the state of the case, and this number being found in all the most approved and ancient copies (of the Apocalypse), and those men who saw John face to face bearing their testimony (to it) ; while reason also leads us to conclude that the number of the name of the beast, {if reckoned}, according to the Greek mode of calculation by the (value of) the letters contained in it, will amount to six hundred and sixty and six ; that, the number of tens shall be equal to that of the hundreds, and the number of hundreds equal to that of the units for that number which (expresses) the digit six being adhered to throughout, indicates the recapitulations of that apostasy, taken in its full extent which occurred at the beginning, during the intermediate periods, and which shall take place at the end, — I do not know how it is that some have erred following the ordinary mode of speech, and have vitiated the middle number in the name, deducting the amount of fifty from it, so that instead of the six decades they will have it that there is but one. (I am inclined to think that this occurred through the fault of the copyists, as is wont to happen, since numbers also are expressed by letters; so that the Greek letter which expresses the number sixty was easily expanded into the letter Iota of the Greeks.) Others then received this reading without examination; some in their simplicity, and upon their own responsibility, making use of this number expressing one decade; while some, in their inexperience, have ventured to seek out a name which should contain the erroneous and spurious number. Now, as regards those who have done this in simplicity, and without evil intent, we are at liberty to assume that pardon will be granted them by God. But as for those, who for the sake of vainglory, lay it down for certain that names containing the spurious number are to be accepted, and affirm that this name, hit upon by themselves, is that of him who is to come ; such persons shall not come forth without loss, because they have led into error both themselves and those who have confided in them. Now, in the first place, it is loss to wander from the truth, and to imagine that as being the case which is not ; then again, as there shall be no light punishment (inflicted) upon him who either adds or subtracts anything from the Scripture, under that such a person must necessarily fall. Moreover, another danger, by no means trifling, shall overtake those who, falsely presume that they know the name of Antichrist. For if

these men assume one (number), when this (Antichrist) shall come having another, they will be easily led away by him, as supposing him not to be the expected one, who must be guarded against.

"These men, therefore, ought to learn (what really is the state of the case), and go back to the true number of the name, that they be not reckoned among false prophets. But, knowing the sure number declared by Scripture, that is, six hundred sixty and six, let them await, in the first place, the division of the kingdom into ten ; then, in the next place, when these kings are reigning, and beginning to set their affairs in order, and advance their kingdom, (let them learn) to acknowledge that he who shall come claiming the kingdom for himself, and shall terrify those men of whom we have been speaking, having a name containing the aforesaid number, is truly the abomination of desolation. This, too, the apostle affirms : 'When they shall say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction shall come upon them.' And Jeremiah does not merely point out his sudden coming, but he even indicates the tribe from which he shall come, where he says, 'We shall hear the voice Of his swift horses from Dan ; the whole earth shall be moved by the voice of the neighing of his galloping horses: he shall also come and devour the earth, and the fullness thereof, the city also, and they that dwell therein.' This, too, is the reason that this tribe is not reckoned in the Apocalypse along with those which are saved.

**I.** "It is therefore more certain, and less hazardous, to await the fulfillment of the prophecy, than to be making surmises, and casting about for any names that may present themselves, inasmuch as many names can be found possessing the number mentioned ; and the same question will, after all, remain unsolved. For if there are many names found possessing this number, it will be asked which among them shall the coming man bear. It is not through a want of names containing the number of that name that I say for the truth: for the name *Evanthas* contains the number, but I make no allegation regarding it. Then also *Lateinos* has the number six hundred and sixty-six; and it is very probable (solution), this being the name of the last kingdom (of the four seen by Daniel). For the Latins are they who at present bear rule: I will not, however, make any boast over this (coincidence). *Teitan* too, among all the names which are found among us, is rather worthy of credit. For it has in itself the predicted number, and is composed of six letters, each syllable containing three letters; and (the word itself) is ancient, and removed from ordinary use; for among our kings we

find none bearing this name *Titan*, nor have any of the idols which are worshipped in public among the Greeks and barbarians this appellation. Among many persons, too, this name is accounted divine, so that even the sun is termed "*Titan*" by those who do now possess (the rule). This word, too, contains a certain outward appearance of vengeance, and of one inflicting merited punishment because he (Antichrist) pretends that he vindicates the oppressed. And besides this, it is an ancient name, one worthy of credit, of royal dignity, and still further, a name belonging to a tyrant. Inasmuch, then, as this name "*Titan*" has so much to recommend it, there is a strong degree of probability, that from among the many (names suggested), we infer, that perchance he who is to come shall be called "*Titan*." We will not, however, incur the risk of pronouncing positively as to the name of Antichrist ; for if it were necessary that his name should be distinctly revealed in this present time, it would have been announced by him who beheld the apocalyptic vision. For that was seen no very long time since, but almost in our day, towards the end of Domitian's reign.

**m.** "But he indicates the number of the name now, that when this man comes we may avoid him, being aware who he is : the name, however, is suppressed, because it is not worthy of being proclaimed by the Holy Spirit. For if it had been declared by Him, he (Antichrist) might perhaps continue for a long period. But now as 'he was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the abyss, and goes into perdition,' as one who has no existence ; so neither has his name been declared, for the name of that which does not exist is not proclaimed. But when this Antichrist shall have devastated all things in this world he will reign for three years and six months, and sit in the temple at Jerusalem ; and then the Lord will come from heaven in the clouds, in the glory of the Father, sending this man and those who follow him into the lake of fire ; but bringing in for the righteous the times of the kingdom, that is, the rest, the hallowed seventh day ; and restoring to Abraham the promised inheritance, in which kingdom the Lord declared, that 'many coming from the east and from the west should sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob'."

#### **261. *St. Justin* (d. 165)**

"And Trypho said, 'Those who affirm him to have been a man, and to have been anointed by election, and then to have become Christ, appear to me to speak more plausibly than you who hold those opinions which you express. For we all expect that Christ will be a man (born) of men, and

that Elijah when he comes will anoint him. But if this man appear to be Christ, he must certainly be known as man (born) of men ; but from the circumstance that Elijah has not yet come, I infer that this man is not He (the Christ).' Then I inquired of him, 'Does not Scripture, in the book of Zechariah, say that Elijah shall come before the great and terrible day of the Lord?' And he answered, 'Certainly.' 'If therefore Scripture compels you to admit that two advents of Christ were predicted to take place, — one in which He would appear suffering, and dishonoured, and without comeliness; but the other in which He would come glorious, and Judge of all, as has been made Manifest in many of the forecited passages, — shall we not suppose that the word of God has proclaimed that Elijah shall be the pre-cursor of the great and terrible day, that is, of His second advent?' 'Certainly,' he answered.

'And, accordingly, our Lord in his teaching,' I continued, 'proclaimed that this very thing would take place, saying that Elijah would also come. And we know that this shall take place when our Lord Jesus Christ shall come in glory from heaven ; whose first manifestation the Spirit of God who was in Elijah preceded as herald in (the person of) John, a prophet among your nation ; after whom no other prophet appeared among you. He cried, as he sat by the river Jordan: 'I baptize you with water to repentance ; but He that is stronger than I shall come, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire: whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and will gather the wheat into the barn ; but the chaff He will burn up with unquenchable fire.' And this very prophet your king Herod had shut up in prison ; and when his birthday was celebrated, and the niece of the same Herod by her dancing had pleased him, he told her to ask the head of John, who was in prison ; and having asked it, (Herod) sent and ordered the head of John to be brought in on a charger. Wherefore also our Christ said, (when He was on earth) to those who were affirming that Elijah must come before Christ: 'Elijah shall come, and restore all things : but I say unto you, that Elijah has already come, and they knew him not, but have done to him whatsoever they chose.' And it is written, 'Then the disciples understood that He spake to them about John the Baptist.'

And Trypho said, 'This statement also seems to me paradoxical; namely, that the prophetic Spirit of God, who was in Elijah, was also in John.' To this I replied, 'Do you not think that the same thing happened in the case of Joshua the son of Nave (Nun), who succeeded to the

command of the people after Moses, when Moses was commanded to lay his hands on Joshua, and God said to him, 'I will take of the spirit which is in thee, and put it on him ?' And he said, 'Certainly.'

'As therefore,' I say, 'while Moses was still among men, God took of the spirit which was in Moses and put it on Joshua, even so God was able to cause (the spirit) of Elijah to come upon John ; in order that, as Christ at His first coming appeared inglorious, even so the first coming of the spirit, which remained always pure in Elijah like that of Christ, might be perceived to be inglorious. For the Lord said He would wage war against Amalek with concealed hand ; and you will not deny that Amalek fell. But if it is said that only in the glorious advent of Christ war will be waged with Amalek, how great will the fulfillment of Scripture be which says, 'God will wage war against Amalek with concealed hand !' You can perceive that the concealed power of God was in Christ the crucified, before whom demons, and all the principalities and powers of the earth, tremble."

#### **262. *St. Clement of Alexandria (d. 215)***

"Enoch, too, pleasing God, without circumcision, discharged the office/God's legate to the angels although he was a mat, and /was translated, and is preserved until now as a witness of the just judgment of God, because the angels when they had transgressed fell to the earth for judgment, but the man who pleased (God) was translated for salvation.

"In order to learn that bodies did continue in existence for a lengthened period, as long as it was God's good pleasure that they should flourish let these heretics read the Scriptures, and they will find that our predecessors advanced beyond seven hundred, eight hundred, and nine hundred years of age; and that their bodies kept pace with the protracted length of their days, and participated in life as long as God willed that they should live. But why do I refer to these men? For Enoch, when he pleased God, was translated in the same body in which he did please Him, thus pointing out by anticipation the translation of the just. Elijah, too, was caught up when he was yet in the substance of the natural form; thus exhibiting in prophecy the assumption of those who are spiritual, and that nothing stood in the way of their body being translated and caught up. For by means of the very same hands through which they were moulded at the beginning, did they receive this translation and assumption. For in Adam the hands of God

had become accustomed to set in order, to rule, and to sustain His own workmanship, and to bring it and place it where they pleased. Where, then, was the first man placed? In paradise certainly, as the Scripture declares: 'And God planted a garden (paradisum) eastward in Eden, and there He placed the man whom he had formed.' And then afterwards, when man proved disobedient, he was cast out thence into this world. Wherefore also the elders who were disciples of the apostles tell us that those who were translated were transferred to that place (for paradise has been prepared for righteous men, such as have the Spirit) ; in which place also Paul the apostle, when he was caught up, heard words which are unspeakable as regards us in our present condition, and that there shall they who have been translated remain until the consummation of all things, as a prelude to immortality.

"If, however, anyone imagine it impossible that men should survive for such a length of time, and that Elias was not caught up in the flesh, but that his flesh was consumed in the fiery chariot, let him consider that Jonah, when he had been cast into the deep, and swallowed down into the whale's belly, was by the command of God again thrown out safe upon the land.

"Look, for instance, to Elias the Thesbite, in whom we have a beautiful example of frugality, when he sat down beneath the thorn, and the angel brought him food. 'It was a cake of barley and a jar of water.' Such the Lord sent as the best for him."

### **263. Tertullian (d. 220)**

a. "Enoch had preceded, predicting that the demons, and the spirits of the angelic apostates, would turn into idolatry all the elements, all the garniture of the universe, all things contained in the heaven, in the sea, in the earth, that they might be consecrated as god, in opposition to God.' All things, therefore, does human error worship, except the Founder of all Himself. The images of those things are idols, the consecration of the images is idolatry. Whatever guilt idolatry incurs, must necessarily be imputed to every artificer of every idol. In short, the same Enoch fore-condemns in general menace both idol-worshippers and idol-makers together. And again: 'I swear to you, sinners, that against the day of perdition of blood repentance is being prepared. Ye who serve stones, and ye who make images of gold, and silver, and wood, and stones and clay, and serve phantoms, and demons, and spirits in fanes, and

all errors not according to knowledge, shall find no help from them.'

b. "Enoch and Elias were transported hence without suffering death, which was only postponed. The day will come when they will actually die that they may extinguish Antichrist-with their blood." (On the Soul, 51: 5)

### **264. St. Hippolytus (d. 235)**

a. "But since the Saviour was the beginning of the resurrect on of all men, it was meet that the Lord alone should rise from the dead, by whom too the judgment is to enter for the whole world, that they who have wrestled worthily may be also crowned worthily by Him, by the illustrious Arbiter, to wit, who Himself first accomplished the course, and was received into the heavens, and was set down on the right hand of God the Father, and is to be manifested again at the end of the world as Judge. It is a matter of course that His forerunners must appear first, as He says by Malachi and the angel, 'I will send you Elias the Tishbite before the day of the Lord, the great and notable day, comes; and he shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, lest I come and smite the earth utterly.' These, then, shall come and proclaim the manifestation of Christ that is to be from heaven; and they shall also perform signs and wonders, in order that men may be put to shame and turned to repentance for their surpassing wickedness and impiety.

"For John says, 'And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophecy a thousand and two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth.' That is the half of the week whereof Daniel spake. 'These are the two olive trees and the two candlesticks standing before the Lord of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire will proceed out of their mouth and devour their enemies ; and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy ; and have power over waters, to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues as often as they will. And when they shall have finished their course and their testimony,' what saith the prophet? 'The beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them,' because they will not give glory to Antichrist. For this is meant by the little horn that grows up. He, being now elated in heart, begins to exalt himself,

and to glorify himself as God, persecuting the saints and blaspheming Christ.

"For this is what the prophets Enoch and Elias will preach: Believe not the enemy who is to come and be seen ; for he is an adversary and corrupter and son of perdition, and deceives you; and for this reason he will kill you, and smite them with the sword."

**b.** 'And I inquired about the fourth beast. It is to the fourth kingdom, of which we have already spoken, that he here refers ; that kingdom, than which no greater kingdom of like nature has arisen upon the earth; from which also ten horns are to spring, and to be apportioned among ten crowns. And amid these another little horn shall rise, which is that of Antichrist. And it shall pluck by the roots the three others before it; that is to say, he shall subvert the three kings of Egypt, Libya, and Ethiopia, with the view of acquiring for himself universal dominion. And after conquering the remaining seven horns, he will at last begin, inflated by a strange and wicked spirit, to stir up war against the saints, and to persecute all everywhere, with the aim of being glorified by all, and being worshipped as god. (Antichrist)

**c.** 'There shall be a time of trouble.' For at that time there shall be great trouble, such as has not been from the foundation of the world, when some in one way, and others in another, shall be sent through every city and country to destroy the faithful ; and the saints shall travel from the west to the east, and shall be driven in persecution from the east to the south, while others shall conceal themselves in the mountains and caves ; and the abomination shall war against them everywhere, and shall cut them off by sea and by land by his decree, and shall endeavour by every means to destroy them out of the world ; and they shall not be able any longer to sell their own property, nor to buy from strangers, unless one keeps and carries with him the name off the beast, or bears its mark upon his forehead. For then they shall be driven out from every place, and dragged from their own homes and haled into prison, and punished with all manner of punishment, and cast out from the whole world.

'These shall awake to everlasting life.' That is, those who have believed in the true life, and who have their names written in the book of life. 'And these to shame.' That is, those who are attached to Antichrist, and who are cast with him into everlasting punishment.

**e.** 'And they that be wise shall shine.' And the Lord has said the same thing in the Gospel: 'Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun.'

**f.** 'For a time, times, and an half.' By this he indicated the three and half years of Antichrist. For by a time he means a year; and by times, two years ; and by an half time, half a year. These are the "one thousand two hundred and ninety days" of which Daniel prophesied.

**g.** "The abomination of desolation shall be given (set up).'  
Daniel speaks, therefore, of two abominations: the one of destruction, which Antiochus set up in its appointed time, and which bears a relation to that of desolation, and the other universal, when Antichrist shall come. For, as Daniel says, he too, shall be set up for the destruction of many. When the iron legs that now hold the sovereignty have given place to the feet and the toes, in accordance with the representation of the terrible beast, as has also been signified in the former times, then from heaven will come the stone that smites the image, and breaks it ; and it will subvert all the kingdoms, and give the kingdom to the saints of the Most High.

**h.** "Now, as our Lord Jesus Christ, who is also God, was prophesied of under the figure of a lion, on account of his royalty and glory, in the same way have the Scriptures also aforetime spoken of Antichrist as a lion, on account of his tyranny and violence. For the deceiver seeks to liken himself in all things to the Son of God. . . .

**i.** "Thus did the Scriptures preach before time of this lion and lion's whelp. And in like manner also we find it written regarding Antichrist. For Moses speaks thus : 'Dan is a lion's whelp, and he shall leap from Bashan.' But that no one may err by supposing that this is said of the Saviour, let him attend carefully to the matter. 'Dan,' he says, 'is a lion's whelp ;' and in naming the tribe of Dan, he declared clearly the tribe from which Antichrist is destined to spring. For as Christ springs from the tribe of Judah, so Antichrist is to spring from the tribe of Dan. And that the case stands thus, we see also from the words of Jacob: 'Let Dan be a serpent, lying upon the ground, biting the horse's heel.' What, then, is meant by the serpent but Antichrist, that deceiver who is mentioned in Genesis, who deceived Eve and supplanted Adam.

**j.** "These words then being thus presented, let us observe somewhat in detail what Daniel says in his visions. For in distinguishing the kingdoms that are to rise after these

things, he showed also the coming of Antichrist in the last times, and the consummation of the whole world.

**k.** "Now since these things, spoken as they are with a mystical meaning, may seem to some hard to understand, we shall keep back nothing fitted to impart an intelligent apprehension of them to those who are possessed of a sound mind.

**l.** "The golden head of the image and the lioness denoted the Babylonians ; the shoulders and arms of silver, and the bear, represented the Persians and Medes; the belly and thighs of brass, and the leopard, meant the Greeks, who held the sovereignty from Alexander's time; the legs of iron, and the beast dreadful and terrible, expressed the Romans, who hold the sovereignty at present; the toes of the feet which were part clay and part iron, and the ten horns, were emblems of the kingdoms that are yet to rise; the other little horn that grows up among them meant the Antichrist in their midst; the stone that smites the earth and brings judgment upon the world was Christ.

**m.** "Daniel says: 'And one week will make a covenant with many, and it shall be that in the midst (half) of the week my sacrifice and oblation shall cease.' By one week, therefore, he meant the last week which is to be at the end of the whole world ; of which week the two prophets Enoch and Elias will take up the half. For they will preach 1,260 days clothed in sackcloth, proclaiming repentance to the people and to all the nations.

**n.** "Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast ; for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

"By the beast, then, coming up out of the earth, he (John) means the kingdom of Antichrist and by the two horns he means him and the false prophet with him. And in speaking of 'the horns being like a lamb,' he means that he will make himself like the Son of God, and set himself forward as king. And the terms, 'he spake like a dragon,' mean that he is a deceiver, and not truthful. And the words, 'he exercised the power of the beast before him, and caused the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed,' signify that, after the manner of the law of Augustus, by whom the empire of Rome was established, he too will rule and govern, sanctioning everything by it, and taking greater glory to himself. For this is the fourth beast, whose head was wounded and healed again, in its being broken up or even dishonoured, and partitioned into four crowns;

and he then (Antichrist) shall with knavish skill heal it, as it were, and restore it. For this is what is meant by the prophet when he says, 'He will give life unto the image, and the image of the beast will speak.' For he will act with vigour again, and prove strong by reason of the laws established by him ; and he will cause all those who will not worship the image of the beast to be put to death.

**p.** "For, being full of guile, and exalting himself against the servants of God, with the wish to afflict them and persecute them out of the world, because they give not glory to him, he will order incense-pans to be set up by all everywhere, that no man among the saints may be able to buy or sell without first sacrificing; for this is what is meant by the mark received upon the right hand. And the word — 'in their forehead' — indicates that all are crowned, and put on a crown of fire, and not of life, but of death.

**q.** "With respect to his name, it is not in our power to explain it exactly, as the blessed John understood it and was instructed about it, but only to give a conjectural account of it; for when he appears, the blessed one will show us what we seek to know. Yet as far as our doubtful apprehension of the matter goes, we may speak. Many names indeed we find, the letters of which are the equivalent of this number: such as, for instance, the word Titan, an ancient and notable name ; or Evanthas, for it too makes up the same number; and many others which might be found. But, as we have already said, the wound of the first beast was healed, and he (the second beast) was to make the image speak, that is to say, he should be powerful ; and it is manifest to all that those who at present still hold the power are Latins. If, then, we take the name as the name of a single man, it becomes Latinus. Wherefore we ought neither to give it out as if this were certainly his name, nor again ignore the fact that he may not be otherwise designated. But having the mystery of God in our heart, we ought in fear to keep faithfully what has been told us by the blessed prophets, in order that when those things come to pass, we may be prepared for them, and not deceived. For when the times advance, he too, of whom these things are said; will be manifested.

**r.** "In those times, then, he shall arise and meet them. And when he has overmastered three horns out of the ten in the array of war, and has rooted these out, viz., Egypt, and Libya, and Ethiopia, and has got their spoils and trappings, and has brought the remaining horns which suffer into subjection, he will begin to be lifted up in heart, and to

exalt himself against God as master of the whole world. And his first expedition will be against Tyre and Berytus, and the circumjacent territory. For by storming these cities first he will strike terror into the others.

s. "These things, then, shall be in the future, beloved; and when the three horns are cut off, he will begin to show himself as God.

t. "He will call together all the people to himself, out of every country of the dispersion, making them his own, as though they were his own children, and promising to restore their country and establish again their kingdom and nation, in order that he may be worshipped by them as God.

u. "He will allure mankind to himself, wishing to gain possession of those who are not his own, and promising deliverance to all, while he is unable to save himself. He then, having (gathered to himself the unbelieving everywhere throughout the world, comes at their call to persecute the saints, their enemies and antagonists, as the apostle and evangelist says: 'There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: and there was a widow in that city, who came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterwards he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her.' (cf. Luke 18: 2-5)

v. "By the unrighteous judge, who fears not God, neither regards man, he means without doubt Antichrist, as he is a son of the devil and a vessel of Satan. For when he has the power, he will begin to exalt himself against God, neither in truth fearing God, nor regarding the Son of God, who is the Judge of all. And in saying that there was a widow in the city, he refers to Jerusalem itself, which is a widow indeed, forsaken of her perfect, heavenly spouse, God. She calls Him her adversary, and not her Saviour.

w. "And he, being puffed up with pride by their subserviency, will begin to despatch missives against the saints, commanding to cut them all off everywhere, on the ground of their refusal to reverence and worship him as God.

x. "Concerning the tribulation of the persecution which is to fall upon the Church from the adversary, John also speaks. (cf. Apoc. 12: 1 ff)

y. "By the 'woman clothed with the sun,' he meant most

manifestly the Church, endued with the Father's word, whose brightness is above the sun. And by 'the moon under her feet' he referred to her being adorned, like the moon, with heavenly glory. And the words, 'upon her head a crown of twelve stars,' refer to the twelve apostles by whom the Church was founded. And those, 'she, being with child, cries, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered,' mean that the Church will not cease to bear from her heart the Word that is persecuted by the unbelieving in the world. 'And she brought forth,' he says, 'a man-child, who is to rule all the nations ;' by which is meant that the Church, always bringing forth Christ, the perfect man-child of God, who is declared to be God and man, becomes the instructor of all the nations. And the words, 'her child was caught up unto God and to His throne,' signify that he who is always born of her is a heavenly king, and not an earthly one.

z. 'And the dragon,' he says, 'saw and persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-child. And to the woman were given two wings of the great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.' That refers to the one thousand two hundred and threescore days (the half of the week) during which the tyrant is to reign and persecute the Church, which flees from city to city, and seeks concealment in the wilderness among the mountains, possessed of no other defense than the two wings of the great eagle, that is to say, the faith of Jesus Christ, who, in stretching forth His holy hands on the holy tree, unfolded two wings, the right and the left, and called to Him all who believed upon Him, and covered them as a hen her chickens.

aa. "In every respect that deceiver seeks to make himself appear like the Son of God. Christ is a lion, and Antichrist is a lion. Christ is King of things celestial and things terrestrial, and Antichrist will be king upon earth. The Saviour was manifested as a lamb; and he, too, will appear as a lamb, while he is a wolf within. The Saviour was circumcised, and he in like manner will appear in circumcision. The Saviour sent the apostles unto all the nations, and he in like manner will send false apostles. Christ gathered together the dispersed sheep, and he in like manner will gather together the dispersed people of the Hebrews. Christ gave to those who believed in Him the honourable and life giving cross, and he in like manner will give his own sign. Christ appeared in the form of man, and he in like manner will come forth in the form of man. Christ arose from among the Hebrews, and he will

spring from among the Jews. Christ displayed His flesh like a temple, and raised it up on the third day 'and he too will raise up again the temple of stone in Jerusalem. And these deceits fabricated by him will become quite intelligible to those who listen to us attentively, from what shall be t forth next in order.

**bb.** "When Daniel says, 'I shall make my covenant for one week,' he indicated even years ; and the one half of the week is for the preaching of the prophets, and for the other half of the week — that is to say, for three years and a half — Antichrist will reign upon the earth. And after this his kingdom and his glory shall be taken away. Behold, ye who love God, what manner of tribulation there shall rise in those days, such as has not been from the foundation of the world, no, nor ever shall be, except in those days alone. Then the lawless one, being lifted up in heart, will gather together his demons in man's form, and will abominate those who call him to the kingdom, and will pollute many souls.

**cc.** "For he will appoint princes over them from among the demons. And he will no longer seem to be pious, but altogether and in all things he will be harsh, severe, passionate, wrathful, terrible, inconstant, dread, morose, hateful, abominable, savage, vengeful, iniquitous. And, bent on casting the whole race of men into the pit of perdition, he will multiply false signs. For when all the people greet him with the acclamations at his displays, he will shout with a strong voice, so that the place shall be shaken in which the multitudes stand by him: 'Ye peoples, and tribes, and nations, acquaint yourselves with my mighty authority and power, and the strength of my kingdom. What prince is there so great as I am? What great God is there but I? Who will stand up against my authority?' Under the eye of the spectators he will remove mountains from their places, he will walk on the sea with dry feet, he will bring down fire from heaven, he will turn the day into darkness and the night into day, he will turn the sun about wheresoever he pleases; and, in short, in the presence of those who behold him, he will show all the elements of earth and sea to be subject to him in the power of his specious manifestation. For if, while as yet he does not exhibit himself as the son of perdition, he raises and excites against us open war even to battles and slaughters, at that time when he shall come in his own proper person, and men shall see him as he is in reality, what machinations and deceits and delusions will he not bring into play, with the purpose of seducing all men, and

leading them off from the way of truth, and from the gate of the kingdom?

**dd.** "Then, after all these things, the heavens will not give their dew, the clouds will not give their rain, the earth will refuse to yield its fruits; the sea will be filled with stench, the rivers shall be dried up, the fish of the sea shall die, men shall 'perish of hunger and thirst; and father embracing son, and mother embracing daughter, will die together, and there will be none to bury them. But the whole earth will be filled with the stench arising from the dead bodies cast forth. And the sea, not receiving the floods of the rivers, will become like mire, and will be filled with an unlimited smell and stench. Then there will be a mighty pestilence upon the whole earth, and then, too, inconsolable lamentation, and measureless weeping, and unceasing mourning. Then men will deem those happy who are dead before them, and will say to them, 'Open your sepulchres, and take us miserable beings in; open your receptacles for the reception of your wretched kinsmen and acquaintances. Happy are ye, in that ye have not seen our days. Happy are ye, in that ye have not had to witness this painful life of ours, nor this irremediable pestilence, nor these straits that possess our souls.'

**ee.** "Then that abominable one will send his commands throughout every government by the hand at once of demons and of visible men, who shall say, 'A mighty king has arisen upon the earth; come ye all to worship him; come ye all to see the strength of his kingdom; for, behold, he will give you corn; and he will bestow upon you wine, and great riches, and lofty honours. For the whole earth and sea obeys his command. Come ye all to him.' And by reason of the scarcity of food, all will go to him and worship him; and he will put his mark on their right hand [or] on his forehead, that no one may put the sign of the honourable cross upon his forehead with his right hand; but his hand is bound. And from that time he shall not have power to seal any one of his members, but he shall be attached to the deceiver, and shall serve him; and in him there is no repentance. But such a one is lost at once to God and to men, and the deceiver will give them scanty food by reason of his abominable seal. And his seal upon he forehead and upon the right hand is the number, 'Six hundred threescore and six.' And I have an opinion as to this number, though I do not know the matter for certain; for many names have been found in this number when it is expressed in writing. Still we say that perhaps the scription of this same seal will give us the word "I deny." For even in recent days, by means of his ministers

— that is to say, the idolaters — that bitter adversary took up the word deny, when the lawless pressed upon the witnesses of Christ, with the adjuration, 'Deny thy God, the crucified One.'

**ff.** "Of such kind, in the time of that hater of all good, will be the seal, the tenor of which will be this: I deny the Maker of heaven and earth, I deny the baptism, I deny my (former) service, and attach myself to thee, and I believe in thee.

**gg.** "Behold the deceit of the enemy, know the machinations of the beguiler, how he seeks to darken the mind of men utterly. For he will show forth his demons brilliant like angels, and he will bring in hosts of the incorporeal without number. And in the presence of all he exhibits himself as taken up into heaven with trumpets and sounds, and the mighty shouting of those who hail him with indescribable hymns; the heir of darkness himself shining like light, and at one time soaring to the heavens, and at another descending to the earth with great glory, and again charging the demons, like angels, to execute his behests with much fear and trembling. Then he will send the cohorts of the demons among mountains, and caves and dens of the earth, to track out those who have been concealed from his eyes, and to bring them forward to worship him. And those who yield to him he will seal with his seal; but those who refuse to submit to him he will consume with incomparable pains and bitterest torments and machinations, such as never have been, nor have reached the ear of man, nor have been seen by the eye of mortals.

**hh.** "Blessed shall they be who overcome the tyrant then. For they shall be set forth as more illustrious and loftier than the first witnesses; for the former witnesses overcame his minions only, but these overthrow and conquer the accuser himself, the son of perdition. With what eulogies and crowns, therefore, will they not be adorned by our King, Jesus Christ!

**ii.** "But let us revert to the matter in hand. When men have received the seal, then, and find neither food nor water, they will approach him with a voice of anguish, saying, Give us to eat and drink, for we all faint with hunger and all manner of straits; and bid the heavens yield us water, and drive off from us the beasts that devour men. Then will that crafty one make answer, mocking them with absolute inhumanity, and saying, The heavens refuse to give rain, the earth yields not again its fruits; whence then

can I give you food? Then on hearing the words of this deceiver, these miserable men will perceive that this is the wicked accuser, and will mourn in anguish, and weep vehemently, and beat their face with their hands, and tear their hair, and lacerate their cheeks with their nails, while they say to each other: Woe for the calamity! Woe for the bitter contract! Woe for the deceitful covenant! Woe for the mighty mischance! How have we been beguiled by the deceiver! How have we been joined to him! How have we been caught in his toils! How have we been taken in his abominable net! How have we heard the Scriptures, and understood them not ! For truly, those who are engrossed with the affairs of life, and with the lust of this world, will be easily brought over to the accuser then, and sealed by him.

**jj.** "But many who are hearers of the divine Scriptures, and have them in their hand, and keep them in mind with understanding, will escape his imposture. For they will see clearly through his insidious appearance and his deceitful imposture, and will flee from his hands, and betake themselves to, the mountains, and hide themselves in the caves of the earth ; and they will seek after the Friend of man with tears and a contrite heart ; and He will deliver them out of his toils, and' with His right hand He will save those from his snares who in a worthy and righteous manner make their supplication to Him.

**kk.** "You see in what manner of fasting and prayer the saints will exercise themselves at that time. Observe, also, how hard the season and the times will be that are to come upon those in city and country alike. At that time they will be brought from the east even unto the west; and they will come up from the west even unto the east, and will weep greatly and wail vehemently. And when the day begins to dawn they will long for the night, in order that they may find rest from their labours; and when the night descends upon them, by reason of the continuous earthquakes and the tempests in the air, they will desire even to behold the light of the day, and will seek how they may hereafter meet a bitter death. At that time the whole earth will bewail the life of anguish, and the sea and the air in like manner will bewail it ; and the sun, too, will wail ; and the wild beasts, together with the fowls will wail ; mountains and hills, and the trees of the plain, will wail on account of the race of man, because all have turned aside from the holy God, and obeyed the deceiver, and received the mark of that abominable one, the enemy of God, instead of the quickening cross of the Saviour.

**ll.** "And the churches, too, will wail with a mighty lamentation, because neither 'oblation nor incense' is attended to, nor a service acceptable to God; but the sanctuaries of the churches will become like a garden-watcher's hut, and the holy body and blood of Christ will not be shown in those days. The public service of God shall be extinguished, psalmody shall cease, the reading of the Scriptures shall not be heard; but for men there shall be darkness, and lamentation on lamentation, and woe on woe. At that time silver and gold shall be cast out in the streets, and none shall gather them; but all things shall be held an offence. For all shall be eager to escape and to hide themselves, and they shall not be able anywhere to find concealment from the woes of the adversary; but as they carry his mark about them, they shall be readily recognized and declared to be his. Without there shall be fear, and within trembling, both by night and by day. In the street and in the houses there shall be the dead; in the streets and in the houses there shall be hunger and thirst; in the streets there shall be tumults, and in the houses lamentations. And beauty of countenance shall be withered, for their forms shall be like those of the dead; and the beauty of women shall fade, and the desire of all men shall vanish.

**mm.** "Notwithstanding, not even then will the merciful and benignant God leave the race of men without all comfort; but He will shorten even those days and the period of three years and a half, and He will curtail those times on account of the remnant of those who hide themselves in the mountains and the caves, that the phalanx of all those saints fail not utterly. But these days shall run their course rapidly; and the kingdom of the deceiver and Antichrist shall be speedily removed. And then, in fine, in the glance of an eye shall the fashion of this world pass away, and the power of men shall be brought to naught, and all these visible things shall be destroyed."

### **265. Origen (d. 254)**

After quoting St. Paul (2 Thes. 2: 1-12), Origen continues:

**a.** "To explain each particular here referred to does not belong to our present purpose. The prophecy also regarding Antichrist is stated in the book of Daniel, and is fitted to make an intelligent and candid reader admire the words as truly divine and prophetic; for in them are mentioned the things relating to the coming kingdom, beginning with the times of Daniel, and continuing to the

destruction of the world. Anyone who chooses may read it. Observe, however, whether the prophecy regarding Antichrist be not as follows: 'And at the latter time of their kingdom, when their sins are coming to the full, there shall arise a king, bold in countenance, and understanding riddles. And his power shall be great, and he shall destroy mighty men, and the holy people. And the yoke of his chain shall prosper: there is craft in his hand, and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by craft shall destroy many; and he shall stand up for the destruction of many, and shall crush them as eggs in his hand.' What is stated by Paul in the words quoted from him, where he says, 'so that he sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God,' is in Daniel referred to in the following fashion: 'And on the temple shall be the abomination of desolations, and at the end of the time an end shall be put to the desolation.' So many, out of a greater number of passages, have I thought it right to adduce, that the hearer may understand in some slight degree the meaning of holy Scripture, when it gives us information concerning the devil and Antichrist.

**b.** "When the close of the times draws nigh, a great prophet (Elias) shall be sent from God to turn men to the knowledge of God, and he shall receive the power of doing wonderful things. Wherever men shall not hear him, he will shut up the heavens, and cause it to withhold its rains; he will turn their water into blood, and torment them with thirst and hunger; and if any one shall endeavour to injure him, fire shall come forth out of his mouth, and shall burn that man. By these prodigies and powers he shall turn many to the worship of God; and when his works shall be accomplished, another king shall arise out of Syria, born from an evil spirit, the overthrower and destroyer of the human race, (Antichrist) who shall destroy that which is left by the former evil, together with himself. He shall fight against the prophet of God, and shall overcome, and slay him, and shall suffer him to lie unburied; but after the third day he shall come to life again; and while all look on and wonder, he shall be caught up into heaven. But that king will not only be most disgraceful of himself, but will also be a prophet of lies; and he will constitute and call himself God, and will order himself to be worshipped as the Son of God; and power will be given him to do signs and wonders, by the sight of which he may entice men to adore him. He will command fire to come down from heaven, and the sun to stand and leave his course, and an image to speak; and these things shall be done at his word, — by which miracles many

even of the wise shall be enticed by him. Then he will attempt to destroy the temple of God, and persecute the righteous people; and there will be distress and tribulation, such as there never has been from the beginning of the world.

**c.** "As many as shall believe him and unite themselves to him, shall be marked by him as sheep; but they who shall refuse his mark will either flee to the mountains, or, being seized, will be slain with studied tortures. He will also enwrap righteous men with books of the prophets, and thus burn them; and power will be given him to desolate the whole earth for forty-two months. That will be the time in which righteousness shall be cast out, and innocence be hated; in which the wicked shall prey upon the good as enemies; neither law, nor order, nor military discipline shall be preserved; no one shall reverence hoary locks, nor recognize the duty of piety, nor pity sex or infancy; all things shall be confounded and mixed together against right, and against the laws of nature. Thus the earth shall be laid waste, as though by one common robbery. When these things shall so happen, then the righteous and the followers of truth shall separate themselves from the wicked, and flee into solitude. And when he hears of this, the impious king, inflamed with anger, will come with a great army, and bringing up all his forces, will surround all the mountains in which the righteous shall be situated, that he may seize them. But they, when they shall see themselves to be shut in on all sides and besieged, will call upon God with a loud voice, and implore the aid of heaven; and God shall hear them, and send from heaven a great king to rescue and free them, and destroy all the wicked with fire and sword."

#### **266. *St. Cyprian* (d. 258)**

**a.** "Nor let any one of you, beloved brethren, be so terrified by the fear of future persecution, or the coming of the threatening Antichrist, as not to be found armed for all things by the evangelical exhortations and precepts, and by the heavenly warnings. Antichrist is coming, but above him comes Christ also. The enemy goeth about and rageth, but immediately the Lord follows to avenge our sufferings and our wounds. he adversary is enraged and threatens, but there is One who can deliver us from his hands.

**b.** "For even Antichrist, when he shall begin to come, shall not enter into the Church because he threatens; neither shall we yield [to] his arms and violence, because he declares that he will destroy us if we resist. Heretics arm

us when they think that we are terrified by their threatenings."

#### **267. *Commodianus* (d. 260)**

**a.** "The wicked king who possesses her, (Church) when he hears, flies into the parts of the north, and collects all his followers. Moreover, when the tyrant shall dash himself against the army of God, his soldieries are overthrown by the celestial terror; the false prophet is seized with the wicked one, by the decree of the Lord; they are handed over alive to Gehenna. From him chiefs and leaders are bidden to obey; then will the holy ones enter into the breasts of their of their ancient mother, that moreover, they also may be refreshed whom he has evil persuaded. With various punishments he will torment those who trust in him; they come to the end, whereby offences are taken away from the' world. The Lord will begin to give judgment by fire.

**b.** "The trumpet gives the sign in heaven, the lion being taken away, and suddenly there is darkness with the din of heaven. The Lord casts down His eyes, so that the earth trembles. He cries out, so that all may hear throughout the world: Behold, long have I been silent while I bore your doings in such a time. They cry out together, complaining and groaning too late. They howl, they bewail; nor is there room found for the wicked. What shall the mother do for the sucking child, when she herself is burnt up? In the flame of fire the Lord will judge the wicked. But the fire shall not touch the just."

#### **268. *St. Zenobius* (d. 285)**

**a.** "Antichrist, the son of perdition, will be born in Corozain, will be brought up in Bethsaida, and shall begin to reign in Capharnaum,' according to what our Lord Jesus Christ said in the gospel. 'Woe to thee Corozain . . . Woe to thee Bethsaida . . . and thou Capharnaum, that are exorted up to heaven, thou shalt be thrust down to hell. (cf. Luke 10: 13)

**b.** "Antichrist shall work a thousand prodigies on earth. He will make the blind see, the deaf hear, the lame walk, the dead rise, so that even the elect, if possible, shall be deceived by his magical arts. Swollen with pride, Antichrist shall enter in triumph the city of Jerusalem, and will sit on a throne in the temple to be adored as if he were the Son of God. His heart being intoxicated with arrogance, he will forget his being mere man, and the son

of a woman of the tribe of Dan. He shall seduce many credulous persons through his deceitful errors ..."

c. "Elias and Henoah will attack him bodily in the presence of the people, and shall convict him of imposture and lies. Then the Jews of all the tribes of Israel will be converted to the faith of Jesus Christ, and shall suffer martyrdom for his sake. In consequence of this Antichrist shall be seized with rage, and will put to death the two saints of God, and all those who have believed them.

"Then the Son of God, our Lord Jesus Christ, shall come in person. He shall appear on the clouds of heaven surrounded by legions of angels, and shining with glory He will put to death Antichrist, the beast, the enemy, the seducer, and all his followers. This shall be the end of time and the beginning of the general judgment."

### **269. St. Victorinus (d. 303)**

a. "They shall tread the holy city down for forty and two months; and I will give to my two witnesses, and they shall predict a thousand two hundred and threescore days clothed in sackcloth." That is, three years and six months: these make forty-two months. Therefore their preaching is three years and six months, and the kingdom of Antichrist as much again.

"If any many will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies." That fire proceedeth out of the mouth of those prophets against the adversaries bespeaks the power of the world. For all afflictions, however, many there are, shall be sent by their messengers in their word. Many think that there is Elisha, or Moses, with Elijah; but both of these died; while the death of Elijah is not heard of, with whom all our ancients have believed that it was Jeremiah. For even the very word spoken to him testifies to him, saying: "Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations." But he was not a prophet unto the nations; and thus the truthful word of God makes it necessary, which it has promised to set forth, that he should be a prophet to the nations.

"These are the two candlesticks standing before the Lord of the earth." These two candlesticks and two olive trees He has to this end spoken of, and admonished you that if, when ' you have read of them elsewhere, you have not understood, you may understand here. For in Zechariah, one of the twelve prophets, it is thus written: "These are

the two olive trees and two candlesticks which stand in the presence of the Lord of the earth;" that is, they are in paradise. Also, in another sense, standing in the presence of the lord of the earth, that is, in the presence of Antichrist. Therefore they must be slain by Antichrist."

b. "'And I saw a beast rising up from the sea, like unto a leopard.' This signifies the kingdom of that time of Antichrist, and the people mingled with the variety of nations. 'His feet were as the feet of a bear.' A strong and most unclean beast, the feet are to be understood as his leaders. 'And his mouth as the mouth of a lion.' That is, his mouth armed for blood is his bidding, and tongue which will proceed to nothing else than to the shedding of blood.

c. "'His number is the name of a man, and his number is six hundred three score and six.' As they have it reckoned from the Greek characters, they thus find it among many to be. In Latin DICLUX, which letters are reckoned in this manner: since D figures five hundred, I one, C a hundred, L fifty, V five, X ten, — which by the reckoning up of the letters makes six hundred and sixty-six, by which name, we understand Antichrist, who although he be cut off from the supernal light, and deprived thereof, yet transforms himself into an angel of light, daring to call himself light.

d. "'And I saw another beast coming up out of the earth.' He is speaking of the great and false prophet who is to do signs, and portents, and falsehoods before him in the presence of men.

e. "'And he had two horns like a lamb, that is, the appearance within of a man — and he spoke like a dragon.' But the devil speaks full of malice; for he shall do these things in the presence of men, so that even the dead appear to rise again.

f. "'And he shall make fire come down from heaven in the sight of men.' Yes, (as I also have said), in the sight of men. Magicians do these things, by the aid of the apostate angels, even to this day. He shall cause also that a golden image of Antichrist shall be placed in the temple at Jerusalem, and that the apostate angel should enter, and thence utter voices and oracles. Moreover, he himself shall contrive that his servants and children should receive as a mark on their foreheads, or on their right hands, the number of his name, lest anyone should buy or sell them."

### **270. Lactantius (cir. 310)**

a. "Nero would again reappear on earth as 'a messenger and forerunner of the Evil One, coming for the devastation of the earth and the overturning of the human race.'

b. "There will arise an impious king, hostile not only to mankind, but also to God. He will trample upon, torment, harass and put to death those who have been spared by that former tyrant. Then there will be ever-flowing tears, perpetual wailings and lamentations, and useless prayers to God ; there will be no rest from fear, no sleep for a respite. The day will always increase disaster, the night alarm. Thus the world will be reduced almost to solitude, certainly to fewness of men. Then also the impious man will persecute the just and those who are dedicated to God, and will give orders that he himself shall be worshipped as God. For he will say that he is Christ, though he will be His adversary. That he may be believed, he will receive the power of doing wonders, so that fire may descend from heaven, the sun retire from his course, and the image which he shall have set up may speak. And by these prodigies he shall entice many to worship him, and to receive his sign in their hand or forehead. And he who shall not worship him and receive his sign will die with refined tortures. Thus he will destroy nearly two parts, the third will flee into desolate solitudes. But he, frantic and raging with implacable anger, will lead an army and besiege the mountain to which the righteous shall have fled. And when they shall see themselves besieged, they will implore the aid of God with a loud voice, and God shall hear them, and shall send to them a deliverer . . . (cf. also prophesy 38)

#### **271. St. Hilary (d. 367)**

"Antichrist will teach that Christ was an imposter and not the real Son of God."

#### **272. St. Ephrem (d. 375)**

"When Antichrist begins to rave the Jews will doubt if he is really the Messiah. He will then remove the Jews from office and treat many of them worse even than the Christians. Antichrist will use worldly goods as bait. He will entice many Christians with money and goods to apostasize. He will give them free land, riches, honor and power. The devil will help him find all the hidden treasures of the world, even those at the bottom of the oceans. With those treasures he will attain greater success for the reign of Satan than at any time in past centuries. The waters will be firm as a rock under his feet and apparently at his command rivers and creeks will change

their course so that the water will for a time, flow up instead of downstream."

#### **273. St. Cyril of Jerusalem (d. 386)**

"Antichrist will exceed in malice, perversity, lust, wickedness, impiety, and heartless cruelty and barbarity all men that have ever disgraced human nature. Hence St. Paul emphatically calls him the man of sin, the son of perdition, the wicked one, whose birth and coming is through the operation of Satan, in all manner of seduction of iniquity.' (2 Thess. 2) He shall through his great power, deceit, and malice succeed in decoying or forcing to his worship two-thirds of mankind; the remaining third part of men will most steadfastly continue true to the faith and worship of Jesus Christ. But in his satanic rage and fury, Antichrist will persecute these brave and devout Christians during three years and a half, and torture them with such an extremity of barbarity, with all the old and his newly invented instruments of pain, as to exceed all past persecutors of the Church combined. He will oblige all his followers to bear impressed upon their foreheads or right hands the mark of the beast, and will starve to death all those who refuse to receive it." (Apoc. 13: 16)

#### **274. Sulpicius Severus (396) Life of St. Martin of Tours**

Various features about St. Martin's teaching concerning the end of the world (as Sulpicius reported Gallus stating it) were condemned by St. Jerome and by the so-called **Gelasian Decree**. But this section of the works of Sulpicius has been consistently read by responsible Catholics. As is evident, we are not the first generation to fear that Antichrist was very near.

a. "In Spain . . . a young man who had made a name for himself through many signs and wonders . . . gave himself out to be Elias. . . He (then) went further and said that he was Christ . . . Again, many . . . reported to us that . . . in the East someone boasted that he was John. From the appearance of pseudo-prophets of this kind, we can conjecture that the coming of Antichrist is imminent, those persons serving as advance agents for him of the Mystery of Iniquity". (Ch. 14, Life of St. Martin)

b. "One day we asked Martin about the end of the world. He said that Nero and the Antichrist would come first. Nero would subdue ten Kings and rule in the regions of the West. A persecution he was to impose would go so far as to require the worship of heathen idols.

"The Antichrist would first seize the empire of the East; he would have Jerusalem as his seat and imperial Capital. Both the city and its temple were to be rebuilt by him. His persecution would require the denial of Christ's divinity (he himself pretending to be Christ) and would by law impose circumcision on all. Finally, Nero himself was to perish at the hands of the Antichrist. In this way the whole world and all its people would be brought under the latter's yoke, until, at Christ's coming, the impious imposter would be overcome.

"There was no doubt (in Martin's mind) that Antichrist, begotten by the Evil Spirit, was already born and had now come to the years of boyhood, awaiting assume his empire. This we heard Martin say eight years ago (i. e. in A. D. 396). It is for you to judge how near to us now are those fearful events to come". (Ch. 14, Second Dialogue)

**275. St. John Chrysostom (d. 407)**

a. "The world will be faithless and degenerate after the birth of Antichrist."

b. "Antichrist will be possessed by Satan and be the illegitimate son of a Jewish woman from the East."

**276. St. Jerome (d. 420)**

"Antichrist will be born near Babylon. He will gain the support of many with gifts and money. He will sell himself to the devil and thereafter will have no guardian angel or conscience."

**277. St. Augustine (d. 430)**

a. "For to this beast belong not only the avowed enemies of the name of Christ and His most glorious city, but also the tares which are to be gathered out of His kingdom, the Church, in the end of the world.

b. "And when the thousand years are finished, Satan shall be loosed from his prison, and shall go out to seduce the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, and shall draw them to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. This, then, is his purpose in seducing them, to draw them to this battle. For even before this he was wont to use as many and various seductions as he could continue. And the words 'he shall go out' mean, he shall burst forth from lurking hatred into open persecution. For this persecution, occurring while the final judgment is imminent, shall be the last which shall be endured by the holy Church, throughout the world, the whole city of

Christ being assailed by the whole city of the devil, as each exists on earth. For these nations which he names Gog and Magog are not to be understood of some barbarous nations in some part of the world.

c. "For John marks that they are spread over the whole earth, when he says, 'The nations which are in the four corners of the earth,' and he added that these are Gog and Magog. The meaning of these names we find to be, Gog, 'a roof,' Magog, 'from a roof,' — a house, as it were, and he who comes out of the house. They are therefore the nations in which we found that the devil was shut up as in an abyss, and the devil himself coming out from them and going forth, so that they are the roof, he from the roof. Or if we refer both words to the nations, not one to them and one to the devil, then they are both the roof, because in them the old enemy is at present shut up, and as it were roofed in; and they shall be from the roof when they break forth from concealed to open hatred. The words, 'And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and encompassed the camp of the saints and the beloved city,' do not mean that they have come, or shall come, to one place, as if the camp of the saints and the beloved city should be in some one place ; for this camp is nothing else than the Church of Christ extending over the whole world. And consequently wherever the Church shall be,—and it shall be in all nations, as is signified by 'the breadth of the earth,'—there also shall be the camp of the saints and the beloved city, and there it shall be encompassed by the saints, wherewith they refuse to yield obedience to those who rage against them. For the firmament is 'heaven,' by whose firmness these assailants shall be pained with blazing zeal, for they shall be impotent to draw away the saints to the party of Antichrist. This is the fire which shall devour them, and this is 'from God ;' for it is by God's grace the saints become unconquerable, and so torment their enemies.

e. "'And now,' that is to say, not the fire of the last judgment. Or if by this fire coming down out of heaven and consuming them, John meant that blow wherewith Christ in his coming is to strike those persecutors of the Church whom He shall then find alive upon earth, when He shall kill Antichrist with the breath of His mouth, then even this is not the last judgment of the wicked.

f. "After this mention of the closing persecution, he summarily indicates all that the devil, and the city of which he is the prince, shall suffer in the last judgment. For he says, 'And the devil who seduced them is cast into

the lake of fire and brimstone, in which are the beast and the false prophet, and they shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.' We have already said that by the beast is well understood the wicked city. His false prophet is either Antichrist or that image or figment of which we have spoken in the same place.

**g.** "Truly Jesus Himself shall extinguish by His presence that last persecution which is to be made by Antichrist. For so it is written, that 'He shall slay him with the breath of His mouth, and empty him with the brightness of His presence.'

**h.** "I can on no account omit what the Apostle Paul says, in writing, to the Thessalonians, 'We beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ,' etc.

**i.** "No one can doubt that he wrote this of Antichrist and of the day of judgment, which he here calls the day of the Lord, nor that he declared that this day should not come un-less he first came who is called the apostate—apostate, to wit, from the Lord God.

**j.** "For when he fell from heaven as fire, and at a stroke swept away from the holy Job his numerous household and his vast flocks, and then as a whirlwind rushed upon and smote the house and killed his children, these were not deceitful appearances, and yet they were the work of Satan to whom God had given this power.

**k.** "Daniel prophesies of the last judgment in such a way as to indicate that Antichrist shall first come, and to carry on his description to the eternal reign of the saints. For when in prophetic vision he had seen four beasts, signifying four kingdoms, and the fourth conquered by a certain king, who is recognized as Antichrist, and after this the eternal kingdom of the Son of man, that is to say, of Christ. Some have interpreted these four kingdoms as signifying those of the Assyrians, Persians, Macedonians, and Romans. They who desire to understand the fitness of this interpretation may read Jerome's book on Daniel, which is written with a sufficiency of care and erudition. But he who reads this passage, --even half asleep, cannot fail to see that the kingdom of Antichrist shall fiercely, though, for a short time, assail the Church before the last judgment of God shall introduce the eternal reign of saints. For it is patent from the context that the time, times, and half a time, means a year, and two years, and half a year, that is to say, three years and a half. Sometimes in Scripture the same thing is indicated by months. For though the word times seems to be used here

in the Latin indefinitely, that is only because the Latins have no dual, as the Greeks have, and as the Hebrews also are said to have. Times, therefore, is used for two times."

**l.** "It is a familiar theme in the conversation and heart of the faithful, that in the last days before the judgment the Jews shall believe in the true Christ, that is, our Christ, by means of this great admirable prophet Elias who shall expound the law to them.

"For not without reason do we hope that before the coming of our Judge and Saviour Elias shall come, because we have good reason to believe that he is now alive; for as Scripture most distinctly informs us, he was taken up from this life in a chariot of fire. When, therefore, he is come, he shall give a spiritual explanation of the law which the Jews at present understand carnally, and shall thus "turn the heart of the father to the son," that is, the heart of fathers to their children; for the Septuagint translators have frequently put the singular for the plural number. And the meaning is, that the sons, that is, the Jews, shall understand the law as the fathers, that is, the prophets, and among them Moses himself, understood it. For the heart of the fathers shall be turned to their children when the children shall be turned to their fathers when they have the same sentiments as the fathers.

"The Septuagint used the expression, 'and the heart of a man to his next of kin,' because fathers and children are eminently neighbours to one another. Another and a preferable sense can be found in the words of the Septuagint translators, who have translated Scripture with an eye to prophecy, the sense, viz., that Elias shall turn the heart of God the Father to the Son, not certainly as if he should bring about this love of the Father for the Son, but meaning that he should make it known, and that the Jews also, who had previously hated, should then love the Son who is our Christ. For so far as regards the Jews, God has His heart turned away from our Christ, this being their conception about God and Christ. But in their case the heart of God shall be turned to the Son when they themselves shall turn in heart, and learn the love of the Father towards the Son.

"The words following, 'and the heart of a man to his next of kin,'—that is, Elias shall also turn the heart of a man to his next of kin,—how can we understand this better than as the heart of a man to the man Christ? For though in the form of God He is our God, yet, taking the form of a servant, He condescended to become also our next of kin.

It is this, then, which Elias will do, 'lest,' he says, 'I come and smite the earth utterly.' For they who mind earthly things are the earth. Such are the carnal Jews until this day; and hence these murmurs of theirs against God, 'The wicked are pleasing to Him,' and 'It is a vain thing to serve God' ".

**278. *St. Benedict* (d. 543)**

**a.** "During the three and one-half years reign of Antichrist, God will send Henoah and Elias to help the Christians."

**b.** "In the last times, the Benedictines will render the Church the truest service and fortify many in the faith."

**279. *St. Caesarius of Arles* (d. 543)** See Prophecy 67.

# CHAPTER IV

## MEDIAEVAL PROPHECY

**280.** The prophecies of several Irish saints are given under numbers 69 (Senanus), 70 (Columbkille), 74 (Maeltamlacht), 82 (Malachy). The only additional text we have is attributed to St. Patrick (d. 493) "The ocean shall inundate Ireland seven years before the end so that the devil may not rule over that people". St. Columbkille says: "Seven years before the last day the sea shall submerge Ireland in one inundation"; St. Nennius: "The sea will come over Ireland seven years before the Day of Judgment"; Leabhar Breac: "The sea shall overwhelm Ireland seven years before the Judgment."

**281.** For the following predictions see the prophecies in the former book: Premol (65), Merlin (72b), St. Odile (76), Leo the Philosopher (78), Thomas a Becket (83). Then there are several old national predictions which we do not repeat here: Irish 75, Welsh 73a, English 85, Scotch 86b, German, 87, 88b, Italian 92, 93b. To these we add the following:

### **282. Old German**

**a.** "In the truth you will rejoice, after darkness you will see light, because before the beginning of 2000, the Beast and the Whore will be thrown headlong into the abyss. They will never come forth again, the Sign of the Cross will be resplendent in the glory of light, with faith and law—one flock and one shepherd."

**b.** "Woe! Woe! Where Rhine and Moselle meet a battle shall be fought against Turks and Russians so bloody that the Rhine shall be dyed red for twenty-five leagues."

### **283. Old French**

"After the triumph of the Church under the Great Monarch and Pastor Angelicus many will revert to a sinful life and hate Christ."

### **284. Old Irish**

**a.** They will tax the pigs and goats  
They will tax the ducks and hens  
They would tax the very Deal (Devil)  
Should he come out of Heal (Hell)

**b.** The rise of Antichrist shall be as a black pig in the north and he shall race to the south.

### **285. St. Gregory the Great (d. 604)**

"In those days, near the end, hardly a Bishop, but an army of priests and two-thirds of the Christians will join the Schism."

### **286. St. John Damascene (d. 770)**

**a.** "Everybody who denies the incarnation of the Son of God, and that Jesus Christ is true God and perfect man, such person is Antichrist. But in a more special and principal manner he will be known as Antichrist who shall come about the end of the world.

**b.** "His mother will proclaim she gave birth to him while remaining a virgin. He will reign from ocean to ocean.

**c.** "Antichrist shall be an illegitimate child under the complete power of Satan; and God, knowing his incredible future perversity, will allow the devil to take a full and perpetual possession of him from his very sinful conception.

**d.** St. John Damascene (with St. Cyril of Jerusalem) affirms that "though Antichrist will from his childhood have the most wicked and cruel disposition, yet, inspired by a preternatural precocious malice, he will practice the most consummate hypocrisy, deceiving the Jews and all his followers. In proportion as he shall advance in age, knowledge, vice, and power, his ambitions will become excessive. He will not only strive for universal dominion over men upon earth, but, as St. Paul teaches, 'he will oppose and be lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; namely, Antichrist will oppose all that is duly or unduly worshipped, and be lifted up by his satanic pride and ambition above all that is called God, not allowing men to worship any other being but himself, as if he were the only God. 'So that he sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself as if he were God.' (2 Thess. 2) 'He shall speak words against the High One, and he shall crush the saints of the Most High, and shall think himself able to change times and laws.' (Daniel 7:25) "

### **287. Rabanus Maurus (d. 856)**

**a.** "Our principal doctors agree in announcing to us, that towards the end of time one of the descendants of the kings of France shall reign over all the Roman Empire;

and that he shall be the greatest of the Empire; and that he shall be the greatest of the French monarchs, and the last of his race.

**b.** "After having most happily governed his kingdom, he will go to Jerusalem, and depose on Mount Olivet his sceptre and crown. This shall be the end and conclusion of the Roman and Christian Empire.

**c.** "Antichrist will heal the sick, raise the dead, restore sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb, raise storms and calm them, re-name mountains, make trees flourish and wither at a word, rebuild the temple of Jerusalem, and make Jerusalem the capital of the world with the vast wealth from hidden treasure."

#### **288. *St. Methodius* (d. 885)**

**a.** "A time will come when the enemies of Christ will boast: 'We have subjected the earth and all its inhabitants, and the Christians cannot escape our hands.' Then a Roman emperor will rise in great fury against them . . . Drawing his sword, he will fall upon the foes of Christianity and crush them. Then peace and quiet will reign on earth, and the priests will be relieved of all their anxieties.

**b.** "In the last period Christians will not appreciate the great grace of God who provided a Great Monarch, a long duration of peace, a splendid fertility of the earth. They will be very ungrateful, lead a sinful life, in pride, vanity, unchastity, frivolity, hatred, avarice, gluttony and many other vices that the sins of men will stink more than a pestilence before God. Many men will doubt whether the Catholic faith is the true and only saving one and whether the Jews are perhaps correct when they still expect the Messiah. Many will be the false teachings and resultant bewilderment. The just God will in consequence give Lucifer and all his devils power to come on earth and tempt his godless creatures."

#### **289. *Adso the Monk* (d. 992)**

It would seem that the interpretation of the name "Antichrist" as given by the Monk Adso was most common, although many characterizations of Antichrist are seemingly based rather on the concept of "one resembling Christ in appearance and power." In keeping with his interpretation, he lists a few traits of Antichrist which are contrary to the character of Christ: Christ was humble; Antichrist will be proud. Christ came to raise the

lowly and redeem sinners; Antichrist will reject the humble and glorify sinners and teach the vices which are contrary to the Christian virtues. He will condemn evangelical law, seek his own glory, and will call himself the omnipotent God. Antichrist will be born of Jewish parents, of the tribe of Dan, but his mother will not be a virgin, as many believe. As the Holy Ghost came into the heart of Mary, so will the devil enter into the mother of Antichrist, and his diabolical power will always support Antichrist. Babylon will be his birthplace, but he will be reared and instructed in Bethsaida and Corzaim. After his education at the hands of malignant spirits he will go to Jerusalem and place his seat in the Temple which he will have restored. He will submit to the rite of circumcision, proclaiming that he is the son of the omnipotent God. His first converts will be kings and princes. His influence will be extended from sea to sea, largely through force and persuasive eloquence. He will perform many signs and great miracles. Those who believe in him will be marked on the fore-head with a sign. For three and one half years he will hold sway, and, at the end of that period, he will destroy Henoah and Elias, who will have previously opposed him by preaching the true faith. Shortly afterwards Christ will appear, and Antichrist will be killed by the Archangel Michael.

#### **290. *St. Anselm* (d. 1109)**

"Antichrist will rule the world from Jerusalem, which he will make into a magnificent city."

#### **291. *Legenda Aurea* (12th Century)**

**a.** "Advent or the coming of the Lord is celebrated during four weeks in order to signify that this coming is of four kinds, namely: in the flesh, in the spirit, in death, and at the Last Judgment. The last week remains uncompleted, to signify that the glory of the elect, such as the last coming of the Lord will bestow upon them, will be without end. But although this coming is, in reality, fourfold, the Church is especially concerned with two of its forms, namely: the coming in the flesh and the coming of the Last Judgment . . . The circumstances which will precede the Last Judgment are of three sorts: terrible signs, the imposture of Antichrist, and an immense conflagration."

**b.** " . . . the Last Judgment will be preceded by the impostor Antichrist, who will try to deceive men in four ways :

1. By a false exposition of the Scriptures, wherein he will try to prove that he is the Messiah, promised by the Law.
2. By accomplishing miracles.
3. By the distribution of gifts.
4. By the infliction of punishments.

**292. St. Hildegard (d. 1179)**

**a.** "Henoah and Elias are being instructed by God in a mysterious manner in paradise. God shows them the works of men as though they could see these with natural eyes. The two men are, therefore, much wiser than all wise men put together. The same force which removed Henoah and Elias from the earth will bring them back in a storm wind at the time when the Antichrist will spread his false doctrine. As long as they will dwell amongst men they will always be refreshed after 40 days, They have the mission from God to resist the Antichrist and lead the erring back to the road of salvation. Both men, distinguished by age and stature, will speak to men: 'This accursed one is sent by the devil in order to lead men into error. We have been preserved by God at a secreted place, where we did not experience the suffering of men. We are now sent by God in order to oppose the heresy of this destroyer. Look, if we resemble you in stature and age.' And because the testimony of both aged men shall agree they will be believed. All will follow these two men and abandon heresy. They will visit all cities and towns, where previously the Antichrist had sown his heresy, and through the power of the Holy Ghost will work genuine miracles. All the people will be greatly astonished at them. Henoah and Elias will confuse the followers of Satan with thunder strokes, and destroy them and fortify the Christian in faith. Therefore, the Christians will hurry to martyrdom, which the son of evil will prepare for them, like to a banquet, so that the murderers will grow tired of counting the dead on account of their great numbers; for their blood will run like rivers."

**b.** "Henoah and Elias have been taught much wisdom and knowledge in Paradise while awaiting their return to earth. God will instruct them every forty days while they are on earth. They will receive exceptional graces and powers from God to use against Antichrist."

**c.** "When the fear of God has been disregarded everywhere violent and furious wars will take place. A

multitude of people will be slaughtered and many cities will be trans-formed into heaps of rubbish. A few uncommonly cruel people will play their game at the expense of the peace and tranquility of the others. As it has been from the beginning of the world, God will deliver the rod of correction to his enemies for the extirpation of evil ...

**d.** "The apostasy' or 'falling away' spoken of in the Bible as preceding the reign of Antichrist is interpreted by St. Hildegard as meaning—'ab impero', 'a sede apostolico', 'a fide', i.e. 'from royalty', 'from the Pope', and 'from the faith' of Christ itself.

**e.** "The Son of Corruption and Ruin will appear and reign only for a short time, towards the end of the days of the world's duration ; the period which corresponds to the moment when the sun has disappeared beyond the horizon; that is to say, he shall come at the last days of the world. He will not be Satan himself, but a human being equaling and resembling him in atrocious hideousness. His mother, a depraved woman, possessed by the devil, will live as a prostitute in the desert. She will declare that she is ignorant as to the identity of his father, and will maintain that her son was presented to her by God in a supernatural manner, as was the Child of the Blessed Virgin. She will then be venerated as a saint by deceived people.

**f.** "Antichrist will come from a land that lies between two seas, and will practice his tyranny in the East. After his birth false teachers and doctrines will appear, followed by wars, famines, and pestilence.

**g.** "His mother will seldom let any one see him, and yet by magic art, she will manage to gain the love of the people for him. He will be raised at different secret places and will be kept in seclusion until full grown. When he has grown to full manhood he will publicly announce a hostile doctrine on religion. He will lure and attract the people to himself by granting them complete exemption from the observance of all divine and ecclesiastical commandments, by forgiving them their sins and requiring of them only their belief in his divinity. He will spurn and reject baptism and the gospel. He will open his mouth to preach contradiction. He will say, 'Jesus of Nazareth is not the son of God, only a deceiver who gave himself out as God and the Church instituted by him is only superstition'. The true Christ has come in his person. He will say, am the Saviour of the world'. Especially will he try to

convince the Jews that he is the Messiah sent by God, and the Jews will accept him as such. His doctrine of faith will be taken from the Jewish religion and seemingly will not differ much from the fundamental doctrine of Christianity, for he will teach that there is one God who created the world, who is omniscient and knows the thoughts of man and is just, who rewards the obeyers of his commands and the trespassers he chastises, who will raise all from the dead in due time. This God has spoken through Moses and the Prophets, therefore the precepts of the Mosaic laws are to be kept, especially circumcision and keeping the Sabbath, yet by his moral laws he will try to reverse all order on earth. Therefore he is called in Holy Writ the 'Lawless One'. He will think that he can change time and laws. He will discard all laws, morals and religious principles, to draw the world to himself. He will grant entire freedom from the commandments of God and the Church and permit everyone to live as his passions dictate. By doing so he hopes to be acknowledged by the people as deliverer from the yoke, and as the cause of prosperity in the world. Religion he will endeavor to make convenient. He will say that you need not fast and embitter your life by renunciation, as the people of former times did when they had no sense of God's goodness. It will suffice to love God. He will let the people feast to their heart's content so that they will pity the unfortunate people of former centuries. He will preach free love and tear asunder family ties. He will scorn everything holy, and he will ridicule all graces of the Church with devilish mockery. He will condemn humility and foster proud and gruesome dogmas. He will tear down that which God has taught in the Old and New Testament and maintain sin and vice are not sin and vice. Briefly he will declare the road to Hell is the way to Heaven.

**h.** "A great enemy of the Church, a precursor of Antichrist, will take the title of Saviour. Heretics will join this precursor of Antichrist and persecute the true Church of Christ. Their cunning will be great, so great in fact that they will be able to draw many righteous men to their side. The Bishops in general will remain faithful, but all will, on account of their courage and faithfulness to the Church, suffer much, yet many Protestants will console the children of God by their conversion to the Catholic Church. Immediately preceding Antichrist there will be starvation and earthquakes. (It will be remembered that Protestants did not yet exist at the date assigned this oracle).

**i.** "When the great ruler exterminates the Turks almost

entirely, one of the remaining Mohammadens will be converted, become a priest, bishop and cardinal, and when the new Pope is elected (immediately before Antichrist) this cardinal will kill the pope before he is crowned, through jealousy, he wishing to be pope himself; then when the other cardinals elect the next pope this cardinal will proclaim himself Anti-Pope, and two-thirds of the Christians will go with him. He, as well as Antichrist, are descendants of the Tribe of Dan. (Some say that the Turks are of the Tribe of Dan) .

**j.** "The mark (of Antichrist) will be a hellish symbol of Baptism, because thereby a person will be stamped as an adherent of Antichrist and also of the Devil in that he thereby gives himself over to the influence of Satan. Whoever will not have this mark of Antichrist can neither buy nor sell anything and will be beheaded.

**k.** "He will win over to himself the rulers, the mighty and the wealthy, will bring about the destruction of those who do not accept his faith and, finally, will subjugate the entire earth.

**l.** "The streets of Jerusalem, will then shine in the brightest gold with the blood of Christians which will flow like water. Simultaneously Antichrist will try to increase his wonders. His executioners will work such miracles when they torment the Christians that the people will think Antichrist is the true God. The executioners will not permit the Christians to win the martyrs' crown easily for they will endeavor to prolong their pain until they renounce their faith. Yet some will receive a special grace from God to die during the torments.

**m.** "Antichrist will make the earth move, level mountains, dry up rivers, produce thunder and lightning and hail, remove the leaves from the trees and return them again to the trees, make men sick and cure them, exorcise devils, raise the dead to life.<sup>1</sup> He will appear to be crucified and rise from the dead. All in all Christians will be astounded and in grievous doubts while Antichrist will be confirmed in their false faith.

**n.** "Finally, when he shall have converted all his plans into action, he will gather his worshippers about him and tell them that he will presently ascend toward heaven. However, at the moment of the ascension a bolt of

<sup>1</sup>Only God can raise the dead, only He will cast out devils. This we know from the Gospels. A copyist probably left out the words "seem to."

lightning will overwhelm and annihilate him. The planned ascent into heaven will have been prepared by the artful employment of ingenious devices, and the moment at which the event was to have taken place, leading to his destruction, will produce a cloud that will spread an unbearable odor. Through this many people will again come to their senses and to understanding.

**o.** "Then the people should prepare for the last judgment, the day of which is indeed veiled in secrecy and obscurity, but not far distant.

**p.** "A longer time of peace is to follow the desolation and wars, and which<sup>1</sup> will precede the second coming of Christ. During this time God will pour out His richest blessing. During these blessed days fertility and blissful prosperity will spread over the earth. As the clouds fertilize the earth, so shall the Holy Spirit enrich the nations with the dew of His Grace. A real summer of spiritual life will come. During this time also the holy angels, who formerly were held back from human society by the vapor of sin, will associate intimately with men, because they are delighted with the renewal and holiness of their lives. Many pagans will also be converted during this time, be baptized and acknowledge Christ with praise. Many converted Jews and heretics will also increase the glory of the Church, much to the surprise of mankind. Many wise men with the gift of prophecy will unfold the secrets and meaning of Holy Scripture."

**q.** See also Prophecy 84.

### **293. Bl. Joachim (d. 1202)**

"Towards the end of the world, Antichrist will overthrow the pope and usurp his see." See also Prophecy 97.

### **294. St. Francis of Assisi (d. 1226)**

"There will be an uncanonically elected pope who will cause a great Schism; there will be divers thoughts preached which will cause many, even those in the different orders to doubt, yea, even agree with those heretics which will cause my Order to divide; then will there be such universal dissensions and persecutions that if those days were not shortened even the elect would be lost."

### **295. St. Anthony (d. 1231)**

<sup>1</sup> 'and which' is probably a copyist's error for 'than'.

"After Antichrist sells himself to the devil he will no longer have a guardian angel or a conscience."

### **296. St. Cyril of Constantinople (d. 1235)**

"Foretells the fall of the Church and Papal throne."

### **297. Sister Ludmilla of Prague (cir. 1250)**

"Hardly three generations will pass after the world war, when one will also endeavor to prevent the Pope from exercising his sacred office, which will be a sign that the fall of Rome and the end of the world is near."

### **298. St. Thomas Aquinas (d. 1274)**

**a.** "Antichrist will pervert some in his day by exterior persuasion . . . He is the head of all the wicked because in him wickedness is perfect . . . As in Christ dwells the fullness of the Godhead so in Antichrist the fullness of all wickedness. Not indeed in the sense that his humanity is to be assumed by the devil into unity of person . . ., but that the devil by suggestion infuses his wickedness more copiously into him than into all others. In this way all the wicked that have gone before are signs of Antichrist." (Summa 111:8:8)

**b.** "Infidels and even Antichrist are not deprived . . . of the guardianship of angels. Although this help . . . does not result in . . . eternal life by good works, it does none the less . . . protect them from certain evils which would hurt themselves and others. Even the demons are checked by good angels lest they harm as much as they would. In like manner Antichrist will not do as much harm as he would wish." (Summa 1:113:4)

**c.** "The works of Antichrist may be called lying wonders either because he will deceive men's senses by means of phantoms, so that he will not really do what he seems to do; or because if he works real prodigies they will lead those into falsehood who believe in Him." (Summa 1:114:4)

**d.** "(His miracles may be) said to be real just as Pharaoh's magicians made real frogs, but they will not be real miracles because they will be done by the power of natural causes." (Summa II-11:178:1)

**e.** "Although men be terrified by the signs appearing about the judgment day yet before those signs begin to appear the wicked will think themselves to be in peace and security after the death of Antichrist and before the

coming of Christ seeing that the world is not at once destroyed as they thought hitherto." (Summa. Sup. 73:1)

**f.** "Some say that Enoch and Elias still dwell in paradise (Eden)." (Summa 1:102 :2)

**g.** "Elias was taken up into the atmospheric but not the empyrean heaven . . . and likewise Enoch was translated into the earthly paradise, where he is believed to live with Elias until the coming of Antichrist." (Summa III:49 :5)

**h.** "There are two things: The revolt which precedes Antichrist and the coming of Antichrist. The faith must first be received in all the world and afterwards many are to abandon it. Others speak of a revolt against the Roman Empire to which all the world was subjected; but the nations rejected the empire and Antichrist has not come. Others have it that the Roman Empire did not really cease but merely changed from a temporal into a spiritual kingdom. In this sense the predicted revolt must be against the Catholic Faith of the Roman Church. This is logical enough. Christ came when all were subject to Rome; therefore, a proper sign of the coming of Antichrist is the revolt against Rome.

"As to Antichrist himself, as Christ abounded in a plenitude of virtue Antichrist will abound in a multitude of all sins and as Christ is better than all holy persons so Antichrist is to be worse than all evil men. For this reason he is called Man of Sin. He is called, too, Son of Perdition, meaning that he is destined to the extreme of perdition. As all the good and the virtues of the holy ones who preceded Christ were figures of Christ so in all the persecutions of the Church the tyrants were and shall be figures of Antichrist and all the malice which lay hidden in them will be revealed at that time.

**i.** "The crime of Antichrist is duplex: He is against God and he puts himself before Christ. In opposing God, he puts himself above the true God, in place of all false gods and even denies the participation of humans in the Godhead. The pride of Antichrist surpassed that of all his predecessors and like Caesar and the King of Tyre, he will say he is God and man and so represented he will sit in the temple.

**j.** "Some say Antichrist is of the tribe of Dan and that, therefore, the Jews will first receive him and will rebuild the temple of Jerusalem and it will be in this temple that he will sit. Others, however, maintain that never will Jerusalem or the temple be rebuilt and that he will sit in

the Church in the sense that many from the Church will receive him. St. Augustine says that he with his adherents will form a Church just as Christ and his followers are a Church.

**k.** "Antichrist will come in God's good time. Those who now work evil pretending it is good do the work of Antichrist. The devil, in whose power Antichrist comes, already in the time of St. Paul was working his iniquity in a hidden manner through tyrants and seducers because the persecutions of times past are figures of that, ultimate persecution against all good persons and are imperfect when compared to it.

**l.** "Antichrist will be destroyed by the spirit of the mouth of Christ. That is, by the Holy Ghost or by Christ's command in that Michael will kill him on Mt. Olivet whence Christ ascended into Heaven just as Julian (the Apostate) was extinguished by the divine hand.

**m.** "Antichrist will enjoy the use of free will on which the devil will operate as it was said of Judas: 'Satan entered into him,' that is, by instigating him. He shall deceive both by worldly power and the operation of miracles. In the matter of worldly power, St. John (Apoc. XIII) says, 'He will control the treasures of gold and silver and all the precious things of Egypt.' The power of miracles will be simulated. 'He will do wondrous signs and even make fire come upon the earth' (Dan. XI) and thus, he will 'lead many into error even, were it possible, the elect' (Math. 24).

**n.** "But his miracles will be lies (as explained above in c and d). No one can perform a true miracle against the faith, because God is not a witness of falsity. Hence, no one preaching a false doctrine can work Miracles, whereas one leading a bad life could." (Comment. in II Thess. II, Lec. 1-III).

### **299. St. Mechtilda (d. 1299)**

**a.** "Antichrist will, through base and false strategem, and with presents of gold and gems, attain influence over the worldly princes. These will look up to him as their Lord and God.

**b.** "During the time of Antichrist an Order of Preachers will unfold its activities; before this its members will be active for 30 years in peace. They will have no home of their own but will be guests everywhere. They will carry a staff before them whereupon the sufferings of Christ and

His ascension is pictured. Many heathens and Jews will receive Baptism from these Brothers. Antichrist will pierce these men and capture all their followers.

c. "After the two prophets (Enoch and Elias) are killed, the greatest power on earth will be given to Antichrist. Then they will set up caldrons on the streets with boiling contents, and drive the men who are known as Christians, and their wives and children, there, to choose either to profess in the Deity of Antichrist and thereby keep their family and be rewarded with riches and a home, or to profess the Christian faith, and thereby, death in the boiling caldron. Thereupon the women and their children, who will choose to die, for love of Jesus, will be thrown into a pit of fire, covered with wood and straw and burnt."

d. "Both men are in Paradise, living in bliss and eating the same foods which once Adam had eaten. They, too, must shun, in obedience to God, the same tree from which Adam and Eve were not to eat. This tree is not large; its fruit looks very nice and lovely like a rose, in the interior, however, it is sour by nature whereby is indicated the bitter evil of sin. God has forbidden this fruit because it is very harmful to men and is even now regarded as poison. An angel will accompany Enoch and Elias from paradise. The clearness and bliss which surrounded their bodies will then disappear and they will receive again the terrestrial appearance and will become mortal beings. As soon as they will see the earth they will be frightened like people who see the ocean and do not know how they can cross it. They will eat honey and figs and drink water mixed with wine, while their spirit will be nourished by God. They will appear as preachers in the last time of misery when most of the good men have already died as martyrs, and they will console the people for a long time yet. Enoch and Elias will close in on the Antichrist; they will tell the people who he is, by whose power he works miracles, in which way he came into the world and what will be his end. Then many a man and woman will be converted."

"Enoch and Elias will expose the devilish trickery of Antichrist to the people. As a consequence he will put them to death. For three and one-half days their bodies will be exposed to insults and the followers of Antichrist will presume that all danger is now past, but suddenly the bodies of the two prophets will move, rise and gaze on the crowd and begin to praise God. A great earthquake, similar to that at Christ's resurrection, will take place: Jerusalem will be partially destroyed and thousands killed.

Then a voice from heaven will call out "Ascend!" whereupon the prophets will ascend into heaven, resulting in the conversion of many. Antichrist will reign thirty days after their ascension."

**300.** For other 12th Century oracles see Prophecies 99, 100, 101 and 103.

### **301. *John of the Cleft Rock (1340)***

a. "Man will often think he recognizes this or that in an individual indicating that he is Antichrist, since the persecutors of the Lamb are all similar. All evil doers of importance are precursors of Antichrist.

b. "This Prince of Liars will swear by the Bible and pose as the arm of the Almighty, chastising a corrupt age.

c. "He will be a one-armed man with innumerable soldiers resembling the legions of Hell whose motto will be: 'God With us.' (In World War I this was said to refer to the Kaiser)

d. "In the beginning he will work by cunning and crime. His spies will infest the whole world and he will become master of the secrets of the mighty. He will pay theologians to show that his mission is from God.

e. "A war will give him the opportunity to assume his true role—this war will not be the one he will wage against a French sovereign (Great Monarch?) but one which will within a fortnight involve the whole world and will be easily recognized by his mark. (on his followers ?)

f. "The Angels will enlighten men and in the third week they will wonder if this is truly the Antichrist, and realizing that it is, they will either have to fight to overthrow him or become his slaves.

g. "Antichrist will be recognized by various tokens: in especial he will massacre the priests, the monks, the women, the children, and the aged. He will show no mercy, but will pass torch in hand, like the barbarians, yet invoking Christ! His words of imposture will resemble those of Christians, but his actions will be those of Nero and of the Roman persecutors. He will have an eagle in his coat of arms as also will his lieutenant, the other wicked ruler—this latter will be a Christian who will die when cursed by the Pope, who will be elected at the beginning of the reign of Antichrist.

h. "Priests and monks will no longer be seen hearing

confessions and absolving the combatants: partly because they will be fighting alongside other Christians and partly because the Pope having cursed Antichrist will proclaim that all who fight against him are in the State of Grace and if they die they will go to Heaven as martyrs.<sup>1</sup> The Bull, proclaiming these things will re-ignite the courage of the faint hearted and will cause the death of the monarch allied with Antichrist. Before Antichrist is overthrown, however, more men will have been killed than were ever within the walls of Rome.

**i.** "Never will humanity have been faced with such a peril, because the triumph of Antichrist would be that of the demon, who will have taken possession of his personality. For it has been said that, twenty centuries after the Incarnation of the Word, the Beast will be incarnate in his turn, and will menace the earth with as many evils as the Divine Incarnation has brought it graces.

**j.** "Towards the year 2000 Antichrist will be made manifest. His army will surpass in number anything that can be imagined. There will be Christians among his cohorts, and there will be Mohammedan and heathen soldiers among the defenders of the Lamb.

**k.** "For the first time the Lamb will be all red. There will not be in the whole Christian world a single spot which is not red; and red also will be heaven, and earth, and water, and even the air; for blood will flow in the domain of the four elements at once.

**l.** "The battles fought up to that time will be as nothing compared with those which will take place in the country of Luther;<sup>2</sup> for the seven angels will simultaneously pour out the fire of their censers upon the impious land. In other words, the Lamb ordains the extermination of the race of Antichrist.

**m.** "That which makes the decree of the Lamb so implacable, is that Antichrist has dared to claim to be a Christian and to act in the name of Christ, and if he did not perish, the fruit of the Redemption would be lost, and the gates of Hell would prevail against the Saviour.

**n.** "Then will commence an era of peace and prosperity for the universe, and there will be no war. Each

<sup>1</sup>The part about "State of Grace" is apparently copied or translated wrong.

<sup>2</sup>There is something amiss here. Luther was unknown at the dates ascribed to this oracle.

nation will be governed according to its own heart and live in accordance with justice.

**o.** "There will be no longer Lutherans (1) or Schismatics. The Lamb will reign and the happiness of humanity will begin. Happy will be those who, escaping the perils of this marvelous time, are able to taste of its fruit. This will be the reign of the Spirit and the sanctification of humanity, which could not come to pass until after the defeat of Antichrist.

**p.** See also Prophecy 104

### **302. *Richard Rolle of Hampole (d. 1349)***

**a.** "The greatest opposition to Antichrist will come from the preaching of Henoah and Elias whom he will destroy after 1260 days. They will rise again after three and one half days and ascend into heaven. Antichrist will then reign for three and one half years. The first fifteen days will be a reign of terror. At the age of thirty-two and one-half years he will be slain on Mt. Olivet, probably by St. Michael. The jubilation of his followers will be suddenly cut short by a general slaughter. Forty-five days for repentance will intervene before the Last Judgment."

**b.** "After the destruction of Rome, Antichrist will appear and exalt himself above pagan deities and the Trinity. His name signifies one who is against Christ. Begotten of a sinful man and of a woman into whom the devil has entered, Antichrist will be born of the tribe of Dan in the city of Corozaim. The good angel assigned to him at his birth will be obliged to leave him as witches, necromancers and other disreputable characters take charge of his education in Bethsaida. Coming to Jerusalem, he will proclaim himself Christ and at first feign to be holy. He will succeed through false preaching, miracles, gifts, terror, aided throughout by the devil. An evil spirit will come out of the air and descend upon his followers. He shall feign a resurrection from the dead, cause rain to fall, stone images to speak, and perform other wonders, all through the power of the devil. The recalling of the dead to life will be only apparent; devils entering the dead bodies will cause the illusion. Antichrist will be the greatest tyrant of all time. His adherents will be marked with his sign. Devils shall be let loose from hell. The Jews will welcome him."

**c.** See also Prophecy 105.

### **303. *St. Bridget of Sweden (d. 1373)***

a. "The time of Antichrist will be near when the measure of injustice will overflow and when wickedness has grown to immense proportions, when the Christians love heresies and the unjust trample underfoot the servants of God.

b. "At the end of this age, the Antichrist will be born. As Christ was born from the highest type of womanhood (Virgin), so Antichrist will be born from the lowest (prostitute). He will be a child-wonder at birth. His mother will be an accursed woman, who will pretend to be well informed in spiritual things, and his father an accursed man, from the seed of whom the Devil shall form his work. The time of this Antichrist, well known to Me, will come when iniquity and impiety shall above measure abound, when injustice shall have filled the measure to overflowing, and wickedness shall have grown to immeasurable proportions. It is not in the time described by the brother whose books thou hast seen. Before, however, Antichrist arrives, the gate of Faith will be opened to some nations, and the Scripture shall be verified. People without intelligence shall glorify Me, and deserts shall be inhabited. Hence, when many Christians will be lovers of heresies, and wicked men will persecute the clergy and trample spirituality and justice under foot, this should be the sign that Antichrist shall come without delay.

c. "Lastly, he shall arrive, the most wicked of men, and, helped by the Jews, he will fight against the whole world; he will reign during three years, and shall have dominion over the whole earth; he will make every effort to abolish from the earth the Christian name, and very many Christians shall be killed.

d. "In the year 1980 the wicked shall prevail; they will profane and sacrilegiously defile the churches, by erecting in them altars to idols and to Antichrist, whom they will worship, and will attempt to force others to do the same.

e. "Rome will be visited by sword and fire and plowed under." (St. Frances of Rome also foretells this catastrophe, as well as many other prophets; however, St. Benedict of Nursia says that Rome will not be destroyed by outside powers, but will die from within, by natural causes such as storms, whirlwinds, and earthquakes.)

f. See also Prophecy 106.

### **304. Prophecy of Orval**

a. "God alone is great. Much good has been accomplished.

The saints are about to suffer. The man of sin arrives. He (Antichrist) is born from two bloods. The white flower becomes obscured during ten times six moons, and six times twenty moons (during about one hundred and eighty months), and it disappears, nevermore to be seen.

b. "In that time much evil will be done; little good. Many flourishing cities will perish through fire. Israel, with good heart, comes to Christ-God. The accursed sects and the faithful believers shall form two distinct parties.

c. "All is over. God alone shall be believed. A third part of the Gauls (France), and again a third part and half, shall have no more faith. The same shall be with other nations. And, behold, already six times three moons, and four times five moons, (thirty eight months) which are separated, and the age of the end is begun.

d. "After a number of moons not full (those evil days shall be shortened, as promised by our Divine Saviour, because of the elect. Matt. 24: 22). God fights through his two just ones (Enoch and Elias), and the man of sin (Antichrist) will get the upper hand (he will kill them.) But all is not finished. (The apparent temporary success of the wicked is ever the most certain sign of their impending defeat; and this defeat is always more complete in proportion to their success).

e. "The high God sets a wall of fire that obscures my understanding. I can see no more. May He be forever praised."

f. See also Prophecy 102.

### **305. Monk Kosmos**

"When ye shall see many ships assemble on the coast of Greece, women, children and old men will be forced to flee to the mountains to escape the sword of Antichrist."

### **306. Chronicles of Alberich**

"Before the time of Antichrist the 'Tower of Babel' will be rebuilt, the 'Caspian Mountain' reopened, the River Ethan will flow again, and 'Mohammedanism' will die or be destroyed."

### **307. Johannes von Lillenthal**

"At that time, the Church will suffer severe pressure, will practically lose all its wealth and will be severely oppressed by internal and external enemies "

**308. *St. Vincent Ferrer (d. 1418)***

"Apostolic men will come, poor, simple, meek and humble, who are little in their own eyes, devoted to each other with a burning love, who only think of and have nothing on their lips but Jesus, i. e. Jesus Crucified, who do not bother about the world, who forget themselves by uninterruptedly having in mind the honor of God and His Saints, who long for and expect death in order to possess the Highest Good . . . Then a happy time will arrive."

See also Prophecy 111.

**309. *Father Jerome Votin (d. 1420)***

"And after the end of five centuries (20th century) the servants of the altar will weep and suffer persecutions for the sake of justice. The shepherd (Pope) will be smitten and the fold scattered . . ." See also Prophecy 112.

**310.** Prophecies 113b, 115, 116, 117, and 118 dating from this century may be read here.

**311. *Bernardine Von Busto (d. 1490)***

**a.** "At the time when Antichrist is about twenty years old, most of the world will have lost the faith.

**b.** "Antichrist will be descended from the tribe of Dan. The people at that time will be very corrupt. He will preach to the people while flying through the air.

**c.** "Many fervent priests and religious in the wilderness and desert will be miraculously sustained by God. Some of them will travel about to encourage the Christians to remain firm in the faith till death.

**d.** "When a pious Christian is pleading to God for help before a crucifix in his room, Satan will disturb him in his prayers and confuse him. He will cause a voice to come from the crucifix saying: 'Why do you call on Me, as if I can help you? I am not God nor the Saviour of the world, but a sorcerer, an instigator and deceiver of the people, for I was a false prophet and as a consequence I am damned to everlasting hell fire. Therefore, call on me no more, lest by calling on me you increase the pain that I must suffer in Hell. Through the power of Almighty God, whose gospel is now preached throughout the world, I am urged and compelled to tell you the truth and reveal to you that I am not the Son of God, but rather the greatest sorcerer the world has ever had, and hence for all eternity I must suffer the severest pains without hope of redemption.' Also the

pictures of the Mother of God at times will speak when someone will be praying before them: 'Cease your supplications. I am not the Mother of God. I have no power with God. I am only a miserable creature. You should take refuge with the true Mother of the Most High, whose teachings are being taught to you today.' It will be the same with the pictures of the Saints. That it is the devil who speaks from the crucifixes and pictures but few will perceive, on the contrary, many will run excitedly to the apostles of Antichrist, to accept the new religion. By order of those apostles they will trample on the crucifix and holy pictures and break them in pieces.

**e.** "When a mother has her infant in her arms or puts it in the cradle, in a clear and distinct voice it will begin to speak, acknowledging the deity of Antichrist and urging the mother to leave Christ and turn to Antichrist. The child will reproach the parents, that they, in spite of the many miracles of Antichrist, still persist in their wickedness and obstinacy. Oh how much anguish will those parents have to bear. Yet many Christians will remember that this was all foretold of Antichrist for centuries past, and perceive the fraud of Satan and refuse to be deceived. They will stand firm and enlighten the faint-hearted and console them."

(This may be intended to explain Scripture: 'Woe to them that are with child, and give suck in those days.' Mt. 24: 19)

**312. *St. Francis de Paul (d. 1507)***

**a.** "A new Order will be founded, that of the Cruciferi, (cf. Pius XII) because its members will carry the cross on their banners. This Order will consist of three groups : the first group are the armed riders, the second group the priests, and the third group the nurses. The Crusaders will lead the Mohammedans, the teachers of heretical doctrines and bad Christians to Christ. (See also Prophecy 114)

**b.** "Antichrist will restore the power of Islam (Mohammedanism) destroyed by the Great Monarch."

**313.** To this century belong several seers quoted before. See Prophecies 121 (Catherine di Racconigi), 124 (Gameleo), 125 (Telesphorus).

**314. *Mother Shipton (d. 1551)***

**a.** "An ape shall appear in a leap year, That shall put all womankind in fear;

And Adam's make shall be disputed;  
And Roman faith shall be uprooted.

The fiery year as soon as o'er,  
Peace shall then be as before;  
Plenty everywhere be found,  
And men with swords shall plow the ground."

**b.** A woman-child, an ape, a bear  
Hath topsy-turned all the sphere.  
Look where thou wilt, far and wide.  
Fire burns on every side.

More I know but quake to tell,

I know too much in knowing hell.  
From sixty till the Beast be dead,  
The heavens warm with fiery red.

One hundred twenty to Amen  
One sixty six over one zero six to make an end,  
Six o'clock and six deal past  
The six days the Sabbath last

This much time the Church hath got  
To bring them to their blessed lot

(One commentator thinks the figures given above are to be  
read  $1666+106+120+66=1952$ )

# CHAPTER V

## MODERN PROPHECY

### 315. *Michael Nostradamus (d. 1566)*

a. "He that the Principality shall keep by great cruelty; At last shall see a great army, by fire, blow most dangerously. The Purveyor shall put all in disorder, When Mars shall be in the sign of Aries, Joined with Saturn and Saturnith. The Moon then shall be thy greatest misfortune, The sun being then in its exaltation.

b. "Because of the power of three realms the Holy See will be moved elsewhere. The blood of priests will flow in the streets and temples, as flows water after a furious rain. The Holy of Holies will be destroyed by Paganism and the Old and New Testament will be banished and burned.

c. "In a cycle of the lily (Bourbon) a great prince is born. He comes late (into the fray ?), yet early (in age ?) into his dominion. Saturn will be in Libra, its exaltation. (1951 is the next year for this occurrence. This dates the zenith of his power).

d. "After the seat is held seventeen years (Pius XI, Feb. 1922 - Feb. 1939), five shall change in the same length of years. (That would be five popes between 1939 and 1956).

e. "When the two evil ones (Saturn and Mars) are conjoined in Scorpio, (this conjunction occurs in January 1954) the great personage (a king or pope) will die within his palace. There will be a scourge within the Church together with the newly-elected ruler in northern and lower Europe.

f. "Then the King of the North, hearing the complaint of the people from his chief state, will raise up a mighty army, and pass through the limits of his last progenitors and great-grandfathers, to him who will replace almost everything in its old condition. The great Vicar of the Cope shall be put back to his pristine state; but, desolated and abandoned by all, will return to the sanctuary destroyed by Paganism, when The Sacred Scriptures will be burnt. After that Antichrist will be the infernal prince. During this last epoch, all Christendom, as well as the infidel world, will be shaken during the space of twenty-five years, (World War I and II) and the wars and battles will be most grievous, and the cities, castles, and other edifices will be destroyed with much effusion of blood, married women and widows violated, sucking children

dashed and broken against the walls of towns; and so many evils will be committed by means of Satan, the infernal prince, that nearly all the world will become desolated. Before the events occur, however, strange birds (airplanes ?) will cry in the air, to-day! to-day!' and after a time they will disappear. Shortly afterwards, there will be renewed another reign of Saturn, the age of gold. (Reign of Antichrist proper?) God the Creator shall say, hearing the affliction of His people, 'Satan shall be precipitated and bound in the bottomless abyss,' and then shall commence between God and men a universal peace. There he shall abide for the space of a thousand years, and after that he shall turn his greatest force against the power of the Church, and shall then be bound again.

g. "When the tomb of the Great Roman shall have been found, the day after shall be elected a Pontiff: hardly shall he be approved by the Cardinals when his blood shall be poisoned in the sacred chalice.

h. "At the foundation of the new party will be found the bones of the Great Roman, a fissure will reveal the marble of the sepulchre, ill covered, after an earthquake in April. When the source of the stream is traced a freshet will lay bare the marble and lead of the tomb, which will be that of the Great Roman (Peter?) whose motto was Deus in Me. (St. Peter's remains were found in 1949).

i. "By the appearance of a false holiness, the assembly shall be betrayed to the enemies. By reasons of quarrels and new schisms among the Cardinals when the Pope shall be elected, great amounts of false doctrine will be produced against him and Rome will be injured by the Mohammedans.

j. "Then shall begin the great empire of Antichrist who will come with a countless throng, so that the advent of the Holy Spirit, from the 48th parallel, will make a great change and chase away the abomination of Antichrist that made war on the sovereign Vicar of Christ (the Pope) and against his Church for a time and to the end of time. This will be preceded by an eclipse of the Sun, of denser darkness than has ever been seen since the Creation and up to the passion and crucifixion of Jesus Christ, and from that time until the coming one. There will take place in the month of October a great translation made so that the earth

will seem to lose the weight of its natural motion in an abyss of end-darkness. There will be premonitory signs in the spring, and there will be extreme changes, overthrows of kingdoms, and earthquakes."

**316. *Francisco Suarez (d. 1617)***

"Suarez, (after St. Jerome, St. Ambrose, Sulpicius Severus, et al.) says that Antichrist shall be born of Jewish extraction, and will profess the Jewish religion; not through real devotion, but through hypocrisy, in order more easily to persuade the great majority of that mysterious race to receive him as their Messiah. He will have two important objects in doing this. In the first place, he will thus mimic Jesus Christ; in the second place, he will thus obtain the enthusiastic support and the wealth of the Jews, and through this material advantage be able to open the way to his ambition for high dignities and human power. The opinion of these Christian writers is derived from the following words of the New Testament. Our Divine Lord and Saviour said to the Jews: 'I am come in the name of my Father, and you receive me not. If another (Antichrist) shall come in his own name, you will receive him.' (St. John 5: 43) St. Paul also says: 'He whose coming is according to the working of Satan, in all power and signs and lying wonders, and in all seduction of iniquity to them that perish, because they receive not the love of truth (Jesus Christ) that they may be saved; therefore God (in punishment of it) will send them the operation of error (Antichrist), to believe a lie.' (Thess. 2: 9-10) Our Divine Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ was born from the Jewish race, and, preaching to them the truth, confirmed it with many incontestable miracles, yet they obstinately refused to believe in him or in his doctrines. Antichrist shall be born from the same people, who will allow themselves to be deceived by his satanic power, signs, and lying wonders, and will enthusiastically receive him as their long-expected Messiah. Thus we see how obstinacy in error leads men to greater crimes and to final reprobation. Because they receive not the love of truth, that they may be saved; therefore God sent them the operation of error to believe a lie."

**317. *The Sibylle, Queen Michaula of Saba (printed 1619)***

"As Henoah and Elias will preach against the Antichrist and draw many away from him, he will, as soon as he perceives the damage, march towards Jerusalem in order to prove there that he be the true Messiah and God. He

will kill both prophets in Jerusalem. Their bodies will remain lying in the streets unburied, but on the fourth day they will be resurrected by a voice from heaven, 'Henoah and Elias arise!' and ride to heaven in a cloud. Then the followers of Antichrist will regret having believed him and will repent their sins. Thereupon, Antichrist will make it known that after fifteen days he will also ascend into heaven, so that no one can doubt his divinity. On the appointed day he will majestically seat himself on a beautiful chair, on Mt. Olivet, in view of a large crowd, and before all the people will lift himself up towards heaven through the help of the devil. But, here at the command of God, the Archangel Michael will cast him down to earth by a stroke of lightning."

**318. *St. Robert Bellarmine (d. 1621)***

"The executioners of Antichrist will work wonders while the Christians will be powerless in such matters."\*

**319. *Cornelius a Lapide (d. 1637)***

"He will cure the blind, dumb, deaf, lame, lepers, rheumatics and others, so that the world will be astounded, but he will not lay his hands on the sick until they have denied Christ. A great multitude of sick will flock to Antichrist and many will even make very long journeys to be cured by him."

**320. *Venerable Bartholomew Holzhauser (d. 1658)***

d. "The triumph of the Church will only be short and merely last until he who is to come, shall come—the son of ruin and corruption, who will unleash Satan anew.

e. "And while I trembled exceedingly and was amazed, I saw how everything turned against God . . . And I saw men and beasts being killed everywhere. A great wound was on earth and it was overflowed with blood. The bloodhound will harass the Church, and the greatest distress and chaos will reign . . .

f. "Antichrist will come as the Messiah from a land between two seas in the East.

g. "He will be born in the desert; his mother being a prostitute to the Jews and Hindus; he will be a lying and false prophet and will try to ride to heaven like Elias.

\*Note: According to St. Robert Bellarmine (Doctor of the Church), the return of Henoah and Elias before the last judgment is "most true," and adds that the opposite view is either heretical or approaching heresy. (Rom. Pont. 3:6; De Controv.).

**h.** "He will begin work, in the East, as a soldier and preacher of religion when thirty years old.

**i.** "Antichrist and his army will conquer Rome, kill the Pope and take the throne.

**j.** "He will restore the Turkish regime destroyed by the Great Monarch. The Jews, knowing from the Bible that Jerusalem will be the seat of the Messiah, will come from everywhere, and accept Antichrist as the Messiah.

**k.** "He will be able to fly. His flight will take place from Mt. Calvary. He will tell the crowd he is going after Henoch and Elias (who had arisen from the dead) in order to kill them again.

**l.** "Antichrist will live fifty-five and one-half years, that is 666 months (his days are numbered).

**m.** See also Prophecy 129.

### **321. *Venerable Mary of Agreda (d. 1665)***

**a.** "When the world will be drowned in terrible vices, Satan and all his devils will be let loose so that they may pave the way for the godless Antichrist to attain world dominion and final persecution.

**b.** "As mankind has lost its faith, the subjects of that time will be very much oppressed by their rulers and authorities. Then many people will come to the Antichrist, who will pretend to be exceedingly kind and generous to all, and tell him their troubles. He will console the oppressed and promise them help. Finally the delegates of certain nations, the Jews, Turks and Tartars will beg him to personally free them from their unbearable yoke. He will now declare himself ready to fulfill their wishes, while at the same time he will arouse the neighboring nations to revolution. The Jews will finally bring him a costly crown and a kingly garment, as well as a scepter, and declare him as their freely elected king. The kings of the world, who will hear of this, will laugh at it and not pay any attention to this little horn. In the meantime he will build a powerful army and take up residence in Babylon, where a magnificent palace will be built for him. Many Jews will then stream to Babylon. Then the Antichrist will seek to enlarge his kingdom. He will, therefore, occupy with his troops various surrounding districts in Asia. Then, like a storm wind, he will appear in Egypt with his army and conquer this country, as well as Ethiopia. He will then endeavor to make himself loved by the subjugated nations by a friendly behavior, and by

exacting a very small tribute from them. He will declare everywhere that he is destined to be the Saviour of all the oppressed. He will not in the least let it be known that he strives for a world kingdom. Thereupon he will march into the promised land and occupy Jerusalem. Now, at last the kings of the world will become frightened; they will recognize that they are dealing with the Antichrist, especially since the Jews of the whole world will make known the great talents and deeds of the Antichrist, so that his praise shall resound throughout the world. Then the kings will send armies to the Holy Land, but the Antichrist will slay them all."

**c.** (Taken from the "City of God" describing the Last Supper) . . . "Then also the angels of her guard, all the angels of heaven, and among them likewise the souls of Enoch and Elias, in their own name and in the name of the holy Patriarchs and Prophets of the old law, fell down in adoration of their Lord in the holy Sacrament."

. . . "The great high priest Christ raised up his own consecrated body and blood in order that all who were present at this first Mass might adore it in a special manner, as they also did. During this elevation his most pure Mother, Saint John, Enoch and Elias, were favored with an especial insight into the mystery of his presence in the sacred species."

. . . "The effects of holy Communion in the body of Christ were altogether miraculous and divine; for during a short space of time the gifts of glory flowed over in his body just as on mount Tabor, though the effects of this transfiguration were manifest only to his blessed Mother, and partly also to Saint John, Enoch, and Elias."

.. "Then saint Peter, at the command of Christ the Lord, administered two of the particles of holy Communion to the two patriarchs, Enoch and Elias. This holy communion so rejoiced these two holy men, that they were encouraged anew in their hope of the beatific vision, which for them was to be deferred for so many ages, and they were strengthened to live on in this hope until the end of the world. Having given most fervent and humble thanks to the Almighty for this blessing, they were brought back to their abiding place by the hands of the holy angels. The Lord desired to work this miracle in order to pledge Himself to include the ancient natural and written laws in the benefits of the Incarnation, Redemption and general resurrection; since all these mysteries were contained in the most holy Eucharist. By thus communicating Himself

to the two holy men, Enoch and Elias, who were still in the mortal flesh, these blessings were extended over the human race such as it existed under the natural and the written laws, while all the succeeding generations were to be included in the new law of grace, the Apostles at the head. This was all well understood by Enoch and Elias, and, returning to the midst of their contemporaries, they gave thanks to their and our Redeemer for this mysterious blessing."

**d.** See also Prophecy 130.

### **322. *Dionysius of Luxemburg* (d. 1682)**

**a.** "After the birth of Antichrist the people of the world will be very wicked and Godless. People of real virtue will be very scarce. Pastors in many places will neglect the service of God, and will live with women. Even the religious will crave for worldly things. The churches will be dreary and empty like deserted barns . . . at the time when Antichrist is about twenty years of age the whole world will be without faith, subjects will be oppressed by rulers and others in authority. In every period of tribulation God aids His Church, and He will do it in the time before the coming of Antichrist. From the midst of His Church He will raise up a Christian ruler who will perform most remarkable deeds. With divine assistance, this ruler will not only lead erring souls back to the true faith but also deal a heavy blow to the foes of the empire, the Turks, take away their empire and restore it to Christianity.

**b.** "The conception of Antichrist will be like Christ's except it will be by the devil\* instead of the Holy Ghost. He will have the devil's power like Christ had God's.

**c.** "Antichrist will present himself to the Jews as the Messiah. They will be his first followers. (2 Thess. 2: 9)

**d.** "Antichrist will have the powers of the devil from the beginning. He will be so evil it would seem his father was the devil. He will inherit his evil tendencies from his mother, who will also train him in evil.

**e.** "His wife will be a Jewess but he will have many women, especially the daughters of rulers. (Dan. 11: 27)

**f.** "Antichrist's life will be a mockery of Christ's. He will be a convincing speaker, have great knowledge, the gift of tongues (Apoc. 13: 5) and be a child wonder at six or

seven.

**g.** "He will take the riches of the world to Jerusalem and appear to have power over natural laws.

**h.** "Antichrist will be an iconoclast (even against pagan images). Most of the world will adore him. He will teach that the Christian religion is false, change the ten commandments, confiscation of Christian property is legal, and that Saturday is to be observed instead of Sunday. All his wonders could not be written in a book. They will be more wonderful than the Old and New Testaments. All with the mark of Antichrist will be possessed by the devil. There will be persecution without rest for those who do not have the mark. He will read peoples' minds, raise the dead\*, reward his followers and punish the rest."

**i.** "Elias will cause the rain, dew and snow to cease in those countries where the inhabitants oppose the two prophets and refuse to reject Antichrist. The first land to be so punished will be Palestine in order to win over the Jews.

"After Elias finds the 'Ark of the Covenant' of the Jews (hidden until the recall of the Jews to God), he and Henoah will place the Blessed Sacrament upon it. The Jews will then realize that Jesus Christ and not Antichrist is the true Messiah. They will desert Antichrist and make a pilgrimage to Mount Nebo (where the Ark is found) bewailing the hardheartedness of the ancestors. Thereafter they will accept the Christian faith."

**j.** "The Antichrist will kill Henoah and Elias and leave them unburied. These will, however, be resurrected after three and one-half days and ascend into heaven in a cloud in the presence of their enemy. This miraculous event will actually confuse Antichrist. In order that the nations will not abandon him, he will lift himself with great majesty into space on Mt. Olivet, with the purported intention to cast down the prophets who have ascended into heaven. But, in this moment Christ will strike him down. The earth will open and swallow him and his prophets alive. Then a large part of Jerusalem will fall into ruins from the earthquake."

**k.** "When Antichrist hears that the two prophets have miraculously ascended into heaven he will proclaim in Jerusalem that it was through witchcraft that they were

\*This is denied by St. Thomas and others.

\*This is denied by St. Thomas and others.

able to ascend into heaven, but that he will follow and bring them back, to prove that, being God, their sorcery is subject to him. His ministers will assemble a vast crowd on Mt. Olivet, Antichrist will talk to the people and then, with the aid of Satan, he will ascend, like an Eagle, heavenwards."

**323.** Other prophecies from these years are numbers 131 (Rudolph Gekner), 136 (The Monk of Padua), 139 (Capuchin Friar).

**324. *Hermit of Nazara (18th Century)***

"From day to day we may expect another universal chaos."

**325. *St. Louis de Montfort (d. 1716)***

"The training and education of the great saints, who will appear towards the end of the world, is reserved for the Mother of God. These great saints will surpass in holiness the majority of the other saints like the cedar of Lebanon surpasses the lowly shrub. These great saints, full of grace and zeal, will be chosen in order to oppose the enemies of God who will appear everywhere. By their word and example these saints will bring the whole world to a true veneration of Mary. This will bring them many enemies, but also much blessing." See also Prophecy 135.

**326. *Father Nectou, S. J. (d. 1772)***

"The Venerable Abbe Nectou did not assign any precise time for all these events, (those given in Prophecy 137) which he predicted to me,' says the Abbe Raux, his friend. 'He stated, however, that those persons who shall behold this last revolution will thank God for having preserved them to witness this glorious triumph of the Church.'

"Finally, the Venerable Nectou foretold, that when the above-mentioned events shall be near at hand, everything upon earth shall be so upset and confused, as if God had entirely withheld his providence from mankind, and that, during the worst crisis, the best that can be done would be to remain where God has placed us, and persevere in fervent prayer."

**327. *Bernhardt Rembordt (d. 1783)***

**a.** "After a time of peace and prosperity, during the reign of the Great Monarch, the people will again become wicked. Then in punishment the precursor of Antichrist will come, and there will be more wars.

**b.** "They want to found a new kingdom of Christ, and all faith is to be banned and people do not care anymore whether they go to church or not.

**c.** "They call themselves servants of God, but they are servants of the flesh.

**d.** "They take unto themselves one woman, then two, then three, and make a religion out of their sinfulness.

**e.** "For their belly is their God and the destruction of Christ their goal.

**f.** "With it the false prophets will fall. As such many will burn themselves with their wives and children. And four hundred of them will be strangled with intestines. And those that are left will be cast from a rock on the Rhine. That is the beginning of the blood-era. The Holy City of Cologne will then witness a frightful battle. Many strange people will be murdered here, and men and women will be fighting for their faith. And it will not be possible to avoid a horrible devastation of Cologne. And there one will wade in blood up to the ankle."

**328. *Jane Le Royer (d. 1798)***

**Sister Mary of the Nativity**

**a.** "Many precursors, false prophets, and members of infernal secret societies, worshippers of Satan, shall impugn the most sacred dogmas and doctrines of our holy religion, shall persecute the faithful, shall commit abominable actions; but the real and extreme abomination and desolation shall more fully be accomplished during the reign of Antichrist, which will last about three years and a half.

**b.** "Thereupon I saw a great power arising against the Church. It despoiled, plundered and laid waste to the vineyard of the Lord, made of it a footpath for those passing over it, and derided it before the nations as an object of scorn and mockery. After desecrating the celibate and suppressing monasticism, this power boldly confiscated the properties of the Church and at the same time usurped the powers of the pope, whose person and laws they condemned.

**c.** "You will soon become aware of a great transformation. For the end has not as yet set in and they have not as yet reached the goal, as' they suppose. To be sure, the dawn begins to break, but the age that follows will be stormy and full of suffering.

**d.** "Woe, woe, woe to the last century which is descending! What tribulations precede its commencements.

**e.** "Out of this mighty voice I recognized that these woeful tribulations will make their appearance in the age before the judgment. And as I pondered over and weighed, in God, the century, I saw, that which begins with 1800 will not yet be the last.

**f.** "I see that when the Second Coming of Christ approaches, a bad priest will do much harm to the Church.

**g.** "When the time of the reign of Antichrist is near, a false religion will appear which will be opposed to the unity of God and His Church. This will cause the greatest schism the world has ever known. The nearer the time of the end, the more the darkness of Satan will spread on Earth, the greater will be the number of the children of corruption, and the number of Just will correspondingly diminish.

**h.** "Antichrist will kill the Pope, probably by crucifixion. As a child of ten he will know more than anyone else in the world and when he is thirty he will begin his real work.

**i.** "The day of retribution will new (end of reign) begin, because, being full of the spirit of Lucifer, with the greatest presumption and self-love he will consider himself God, and in his haughtiness he will endeavor, together with his followers, to solemnly arise to Heaven to the throne of God. The Almighty has already prepared St. Michael with power and justice and charged him to oppose Antichrist in the heavens. When the demon group with Antichrist in their midst arrives, St. Michael will descend from Heaven with great speed upon them, being filled with holy indignation. With his appearance great fear surges through the proud army. A terrible voice sounds forth from the mouth of St. Michael as the earth opens: 'Begone you cursed ! Down into the deepest abyss of Hell!' A bolt of lightning from the cloud casts Antichrist and his cohorts into the fearful abyss of fire and flames with such force that the deepest foundations tremble and all Hell resounds. With the fall of Antichrist will come severe earthquakes, thick darkness will cover the Earth, the ground will open in thousands of places under the feet of the inhabitants and cities, towns, castles and an immense number of people will be swallowed up. One-half of that immense crowd on Mt. Olivet will be cast in the abyss with Antichrist. The ocean will move frightfully and waves arise heavenward overflowing the

coast and inundate the earth. All these calamities are only to frighten the remaining into accepting the Grace and Mercy of God."

**j.** "Fifteen days after the ascension of Henoah and Elias into heaven, terrible catastrophes will come upon the earth: most severe earthquakes, tidal waves inundating much of the earth's surface, culminating in a thick darkness over the entire earth."

### **329. Birch Tree Prophecy (before 1800)**

"There will come a time when the world is averse to God. Loyalty and faith rule no more. Then there will arise a general insurrection, so that the father will fight against the son and the son against the father. At this time attempts will be made to distort the dogmas of faith in Church and school. New books will be introduced. The Catholic Church will then be greatly oppressed and her enemies will cunningly strive to annihilate her altogether. But then it will not be long before a change takes place. A frightful war breaks out." See also Prophecy 89.

### **330. Sister Marianne von Blois (d. 1804)**

**a.** "Before the great combat the wicked shall be masters. They will perpetrate all the evils in their power, but not as much as they desire, because they shall not have the time. Good and faithful Catholics, less in number, shall be on the point of being annihilated, but a stroke from Heaven will save them. (Three days darkness?)

**b.** "O power of God! O power of God! All the wicked shall perish, and also many good men. O, how frightful shall these calamities be! The churches shall be closed, but only for the space of twenty-four hours. Religious women, being terrified, shall be on the point of abandoning the convent, but they shall remain. At this time such extraordinary events shall take place that the most incredulous will be forced to say, 'the finger of God is there.' O power of God! There shall be a terrible night, during which no one shall be able to sleep. These trials shall not last long, because no person could endure them. When all shall appear lost, all will be saved. It is then that dispatches shall arrive, announcing good news, when the Te Deum shall be sung, in a manner in which it has never been heard before. It is then that the Prince shall reign, whom people will seek, that before did not esteem him. At that time the triumph of religion will be so great that no one has ever seen the equal. All injustices will be repaired, civil laws will be formed in harmony with the laws of God

and of the Church. The instruction given to children will be most Christian; pious guilds for workmen shall be reestablished; the triumph of the Church and of France shall be most glorious.

c. "One will have to pray much, because the wicked will try everything. Before the big battle they will be masters. They will do as much evil as they possibly can, however, not as much as they would want to do, because they will not have the time for it. A big battle will take place between the good, and the wicked; it will be terrible. For nine hours continuously the thunder of canon will be heard. The less numerous good will be for a moment on the brink of being destroyed; but oh! the power of God! All the wicked will perish."

### **331. *The Pinsk Prediction (1819)***

"The Civiltà Cattolica of Rome, 1864, related the following, tested by a person worthy of confidence, that heard it from the Polish religious to whom the prophesy was made: 'In the year 1819, the Rev. Father Korzeniecki, a most zealous Dominican preacher, was most strictly forbidden by the Russian schismatical government to publish any writing, to preach, or even to hear confessions, under penalty of exile to Siberia. He was most afflicted in being thus deprived of [his vocation].

One evening, (1819) about nine o'clock, before going to rest, this holy religious opened the window of his cell in the monastery wherein he lived, and looking up towards heaven he made with great fervor the following prayer: 'O glorious martyr of Jesus Christ, Blessed Andrew Bobola! You who so many years since foretold the liberation and restoration of our Poland, you who see our masters determined to force her to become through schism an enemy of God, ah! Do not allow such a scourge and humiliation to fall upon her. Obtain, holy martyr, from the omnipotence of God, that our common Catholic country may be delivered from her schismatic Protestant yoke.' Having after this prayer shut up the window and prepared to lay down on his humble bed, the holy martyr appeared to him and said: 'Behold, I am the person to whom you have addressed your prayer ; open again the same window and you will see . . .' The good religious, surprised and somewhat terrified, opened the window, when, to his great amazement, the enclosed grounds and little garden attached to the monastery had disappeared, but in their stead he saw an immense plain. Then the blessed martyr, resuming, said to him: 'You behold now the fields of

Pinsk, (northern Poland) where I had the glory of suffering martyrdom for the faith of Jesus Christ . . . Now, looking again in the same direction, you will learn what you wish to know.' The Rev. Father Korzeniecki once more turned his eyes towards the place indicated, and beheld that vast field covered with Russian, Turkish, French, English, Austrian, and Prussian armies, and others which he could not well discern, all of them fighting in a most furious manner one against the other.

Not being able to comprehend the meaning of this vision, Saint Andrew explained it to him in the following words: 'When the war which you see shall end, then the kingdom of Poland shall be established, and I shall be acknowledged its principal patron. In token of the reality of this vision and of the realization of this prophecy, behold my hand.' In saying this the blessed martyr placed his hand flat upon the little table in the cell, and disappeared. Amazed beyond expression, the pious religious was attempting to make some short prayer in thanksgiving to God for the favor received, and being entirely restored to his senses he looked immediately on the table and really beheld the impression of the martyr's hand. With sentiments of lively devotion, he kissed it several times, after which he quietly retired to his needed rest. As soon as he awoke on the following morning, his first impulse was to look again for the miraculous impression, which he found just the same as on the preceding evening, and this more than ever convinced him of the reality of the vision of the previous night. Then, having gathered in his room all the religious of the monastery, he showed to them the miraculous sign of the hand, and related to them all that had happened to him the evening before."

### **332. *Anna Catherine Emmerich (d. 1824)***

a. "In the center of Hell I saw a dark and horrible looking abyss, and into this Lucifer was cast, after being first strongly secured with chains; thick clouds of sulphurous black smoke arose from its fearful depths, and enveloped his frightful form in the dismal folds, thus effectually concealing him from every beholder. God himself had decreed this: and I was likewise told, if I remember right, that he will be unchained for a time fifty or sixty years before the year of Christ 2000. The dates of many other events were pointed out to me which I do not now remember; but a certain number of demons are to be let loose much earlier than Lucifer, in order to tempt men, and to serve as instruments of the divine vengeance. I

should think that some must be loosened even in the present day, and others will be set free in a short time.

**b.** "Antichrist will fight a successful battle at Megiddo in Palestine after which seven rulers, from fear will subject themselves to Antichrist and he will thereafter become lord of the world.

**c.** "I see new martyrs, not of the present time, but in the next century. I see them pursued. I see how here and there good and pious people and especially the religious orders, are tortured, imprisoned and murdered . . .

**d.** "I saw a picture of a dreadful battle. The entire field was covered with vapor. They shot everywhere out of thickets and the air, which were full of soldiers. The place was low-lying territory and in the distance were great cities. I saw St. Michael descending with a great multitude of angels and dispersing the combatants. That, however, will only happen when everything seems lost. There will be a leader who will invoke St. Michael and then victory will descend. The enemy were in the majority but the small loyal band overthrew whole lines. It was a frightful battle, and at last only a small band of good people were left and they became the victor.

**e.** "I wish the time were here when the Pope dressed in red will reign. I see the Apostles, not those of the past, but the apostles of the last times, and it seems to me, the Pope is among them.

**f.** "A pale faced man floated slowly over the earth and, loosening the cloths, which wrapped his sword, he threw them on sleeping cities, which were bound by them. This figure also dropped pestilence on Russia, Italy and Spain. A red noose lay around Berlin, and from there it came to Westphalia. Now the man's sword was naked, bands red as blood hung from its hilt and blood trickled from it on Westphalia.

**g.** "The Jews shall return to Palestine and become Christians towards the end of the world."

### **333. *Elizabeth Canori-Mora* (d. 1825)**

"God will make use of the power of darkness in order to root out the followers of Sects and godless who want to shake and destroy the foundation of the Church . . . They will be punished by the cruelty of demons and die a tragic and barbarous death. Hereupon the grand triumph of the Catholic Church will follow and all stream into the fold of

the Catholic Church, and recognize the Pope as the representative of God." See also Prophecy 150.

**334.** To this period belong prophecies 152 (Belez), 153 (Wittman), 154 (Bufalo), 158 (Lataste), 161 (Clausi), 168 c. d, (Porzat), 162 (Mayence), 164 (Steiner).

### **335. *Blessed Anna Maria Taigi* (d. 1837)**

**a.** "God will decree two afflictions. One will originate on earth, namely wars, revolutions and other evils. The other judgment comes from the air.

**b.** "A very thick darkness shall envelop the earth during three days. This awful darkness shall be impregnated with such pestilential vapors, and filled with such frightful apparitions, that they will cause, in a more special manner, the death of the hypocritical or avowed enemies of the Holy Church.

**c.** "On this terrible occasion so many of these wicked men, enemies of his Church and of their God, shall be killed by this divine scourge, that their corpses round Rome will be as numerous as the fish which a (then) recent inundation of Tiber had carried into the city. All the enemies of the Church, secret as well as known, will perish over the whole earth during that universal darkness, with the exception of some few, whom God will soon after convert. The air shall be infested by demons, who will appear under all sorts of hideous forms.

**d.** "During this darkness artificial light will be impossible. Only blessed candles can be lighted and will afford illumination. He who out of curiosity opens his window to look out or leaves his house will fall dead on the spot. During these three days the people should remain in their homes, pray the Rosary and beg God for mercy.

**e.** "A heavenly apparition shall come to reassure the faithful. St. Peter and St. Paul will appear on the clouds, and all men shall see them; and, in a supernatural manner, faith shall return to their hearts. Innumerable conversions of heretics shall cause universal edification.

**f.** "One day, Anna Maria, while shedding a torrent of tears, prayed and offered her actions and sufferings for the conversion of sinners, for the destruction of sin, and that God might be known and loved by all men. Then God manifested to her the horrible sins of persons of every condition, and how grievously he was offended. At this sight the servant of God experienced a profound sorrow, and sighing, she exclaimed: 'Dearly beloved! what is the

remedy for this disaster?' Jesus Christ answered: 'My child, the Church, my spouse, my Father, and myself shall remedy everything. For after a punishment . . . those who shall survive shall have to conduct themselves well.' At this point she saw innumerable conversions of heretics, who will return to the bosom of the Church; she saw, also, the edifying conduct of their lives, as well as that of all other Catholics.

**g.** "During several successive days, Anna Maria beheld a most excessive darkness spreading itself over the whole world. She likewise saw falling ruins of walls, accompanied by much dust, as if a great edifice had tumbled down. This scourge was shown to her on divers occasions. This may indicate the ruins caused by frightful earthquakes, or the destruction effected by the wicked Communists. We presume, and assume as pretty certain, that this darkness will be sensible, similar to that of Egypt, mentioned in Exodus, tenth chapter, and that it shall continue during three days.

**h.** "Religious shall be persecuted, priests shall be massacred, the churches shall be closed, but only for a short time; the Holy Father shall be obliged to abandon Rome.

**i.** "Our Lord said to her: 'First five big trees must be cut down in order that the triumph of the Church may come. These five trees are five great heresies.' Then the Servant of God said: 'Two hundred years are hardly sufficient that all of this may happen.' And Our Lord replied: 'It won't take as long as you think!'

**j.** "First, several EARTHLY scourges will come. They are going to be dreadful, but they will be mitigated and shortened by the prayers and penances of many holy souls. There will be great wars in which millions of people will perish through iron. But, after these earthly scourges will come the HEAVENLY one, which will be directed solely against the impenitent. This scourge will be far more frightful and terrible; it will be mitigated by nothing, but it will take place and act in its full rigor. However, in what this heavenly scourge will consist, God did not reveal to anyone, not even His most intimate friends."

### **336. *Franciscan Friar of Mt. Sinai* (d. 1840)**

**a.** "A terrible war will break out throughout Europe; they will tear each other to pieces and blood will flow in streams.

**b.** "Spain and Portugal both have to efface a debt of blood, partly because of the inhumanness with which they conquered America, murdering so many thousands in a cruel manner, all because of vain gold, and partly because they captured so many innocent people in Africa, all images of God, and sold them into slavery like cattle. The potentates of these two thrones will be murdered. Then both countries will unite and establish a common Republic. All inhabitants will return to peace and order; but their foreign possessions will sever themselves from these two countries. The Catholic religion will again bloom as originally.

**c.** "France will be involved in a foreign war. As soon as this is over, however, the people will revolt and murder the President, whereupon a terrible blood bath will ensue. More than half of the city of Paris will be turned into ashes.

**d.** "England, this country of merchants which supports all injustices for the sake of gain, will become the scene of the greatest cruelties. Ireland and Scotland will invade England and destroy it. The royal family will be driven out and half of the population murdered. Poverty will come and all colonies will sever themselves from England.

**e.** "Italy, Italy, thou beautiful country! I cry over thee! A part of your prosperous cities will be destroyed; here so many Germans find their grave.

**f.** "Blessed years will then again make their appearance, and the year 1957 will heal all wounds. Blessed are they who live to see this year."

### **337. *La Salette Prophecy* (1846)**

The publishers of the present edition (1974) have omitted the secret messages of La Salette because in 1915 the Holy Office in Rome issued a monitum that books, pamphlets and articles claiming to treat of the secrets of La Salette were condemned. It is our understanding that this eventuated because the supposed secret messages of La Salette were becoming more and more numerous, and many of them had a decidedly anti-clerical bent. About the year 1851 the two seers of La Salette, Melanie and Maximin, sent Pope Pius IX, in the care of two trustworthy priests their own handwritten accounts of what secret revelations the Blessed Mother had made to them. Rome has never revealed the contents of these original messages. According to the seers, Our Lady told

them that after 1855 they could freely make known the messages. Since the messages were long and quite involved, it is understandable that they would be somewhat different from their original versions. However, over the years, the seers were induced to issue still further versions of the messages, and perhaps even other parties invented messages and had them circulated in Melanie and Maximin's names. To the best of our knowledge, the injunction against the secret messages of La Salette has never been raised. It should be noted, however, that La Salette remains an approved apparition to this day and one of the most extraordinary in the history of the Church. The two sins prevalent in that day which she mentioned were cursing and work on Sundays. Light on the Mountain tells the story of La Salette admirably well and is currently available from the publishers.

**338. *Sister Rose Colomba Asdenti of Taggia (d. 1847)***

"A great enemy of the Church, a precursor of Antichrist, will take the title of Saviour. Heretics will join this precursor of Antichrist and persecute the true Church of Christ. Their cunning will be great, so great in fact that they will be able to draw many righteous men to their side. The Bishops in general will remain faithful, but all will, on 'account of their courage and faithfulness to the Church, suffer much, yet many Protestants will console the children of God by their conversion to the Catholic Church. Immediately preceding Antichrist there will be starvation and earthquakes."

See also Prophecy 15g.

**339. *John Baptist Stickelmeyer (1848)***

"The Shepherd foretold the coming of the Reds, in which he foresaw the Berlin-Moscow pact and the partition of Poland. He then warned that it would be time to take to the woods, for the time of Universal Killing would be at hand. He warned the people not to leave the woods, for the Universal Killing will be followed by the Universal Dying caused by starvation and pestilence. Following these times, people may leave the woods in safety, for the Great White King will come and once more there will be peace."

**340. *Sister Bertina Bouquillion (d. 1850)***

a. "I have seen the holy patriarch Henoah, one of the two just men who shall have to fight against Antichrist, and sustain the faithful during their severe trials at the end of

the world. He was dressed like a missionary, ready, as it were, to start for his great approaching difficult mission; the end of the world."

b. "The coming of Antichrist will be unobserved by most people."

c. "The end of time is nearing and Antichrist will not delay in coming. However, neither we nor those sisters who come after us will see him, but those who come after them will fall under his reign. At the time of his coming nothing will change in this house. All will be in its usual order. The religious exercises, the work, the occupations in the wards — all will be done in the customary manner, when suddenly all the sisters will be aware that Antichrist is master of the world. The beginning of the End will not come in the nineteenth century but certainly in the twentieth century."

**341. *John O'Connell (1858)***

"Lest the deceptions, snares and danger of Antichrist should fall upon the Irish, He promised to send a deluge over Ireland seven years previous to the burning of the spheres."

**342. *St. John Mary Vianney (d. 1859)***

"A time will come when people will believe that the end is near. It will be a sign of the last Judgment. Paris and two or three other cities will experience a transformation. Paris will be demolished but not altogether. However, one will behold still more frightful things to come. There is, nevertheless, a limit beyond which the demolition will not progress." See also Prophecy 163.

**343. *Palma Maria Addolorata Matarelli (d. 1863)***

a. "The massacre of priests, as also of some dignitaries of the Church.

b. "A short but furious war, during which the enemies of religion and of mankind shall be universally destroyed.

c. "Rome shall have to endure severe trials from the malice of wicked men. But at the critical moment, when the rebellious Republicans shall attempt to take possession of the Holy City, they shall be suddenly arrested at the gates and forced to fly away in terror, crushed under the deadly blows of the exterminating angel.

d.' "The destruction of Paris. The civil war, which will, in

consequence, break out in these countries, accompanied by other dreadful punishments, as pestilence and famine.

e. "Supernatural prodigies which shall appear in the heavens. There shall be three days' darkness. Not one demon shall be left in hell. They shall all come out, either to excite the wicked murderers, or to dishearten the just and shall cause the death of large multitudes of incredulous and wicked men. For this awful occasion, which, sooner or later, will certainly arrive, Palma Maria recommends the use of blessed candles, which alone shall be able to give light and preserve the faithful Catholics from this impending dreadful scourge. This shall be frightful! frightful!! but a grand cross shall appear, and the triumphs of the Church will make people quickly forget all evils."

### **344. Rev. Frederick William Faber (d. 1863)**

a. "From the first, all the troubles of the Church were regarded as types of Antichrist, as Christ had His types; so we naturally conclude with this. It is not an idle speculation; Scripture puts it before us.

#### **b. *The person of Antichrist.***

1. A single person. 'The man of sin, the son of perdition, that wicked one.' (2 Thess. 2: 3) 'This is Antichrist, who denieth the Father and the Son.' (1 John 2:22)

2. Many believed in a demoniacal incarnation — this will not be so — but he will be a man utterly possessed. (Card. Berulle.)

3. Not come yet — Mahomet was not he — the signs are not fulfilled.

4. He is to be a king — his kingdom in visible antagonism to the kingdom of Christ — so all civil oppositions have been precursors of Antichrist.

5. Certainly a Jew — uncertain if of tribe of Dan —origin probably obscure.

6. With zeal for the temple, gives himself out as the Messiah.

7. With immense talents, awfully assisted by the devil — immense wealth, Dan. xi — immoral, Dan vii. and xi. unparalleled in deceit — deceiving even the elect.

8. His doctrine an apparent contradiction of no religion, yet a new religion. Comparison with French Revolution.

(1) He denies the divinity of Christ. (2) Asserts that he is the Messiah. (3) Worship of devils. (4) He is an atheist, (5) but begins by affecting respect for the law of Moses. (6) Lying miracles, false resurrection, mock ascension. (7) He has an attendant pontiff so separating regal and prophetic office.

#### **c. *His kingdom.***

1. Not hereditary — got by degrees, by fraud, talent, and iniquitous diplomacy.

2. It will begin at Babylon. (Zach. v. 11.)

3. It will extend in influence over the whole civilized world.

4. Jerusalem will be the metropolis.

5. When his empire is at its full, it will last only three years and a half.

#### **d. *His persecution.***

1. Unparalleled horror of it. (Apoc. xx.)

2. In spiritual things—(1) there will be hardly any mass, (2) but the worship of his image and the wearing of his mark ; (3 ) Majority of Christians will apostatize, (4) but the Church will not be destroyed.

3. Saints will be greater than ever — martyrs greater, as the first fought against men, the latter will fight against devils, our Lady's Saints, vide Grignon de Montfort.

4. Enoch and Elias, now confirmed in grace, and waiting — they will preach in sackcloth — for as long a time as Christ, i.e. three years and a half less nineteen days — their martyrdom — they will lie unburied.

5. Jesus kills him, and comes to the doom forty-five days after; some say that St. Michael will kill him on Mount Olivet.

#### **e. *Protestantism an anticipation of Antichrist.***

(1) Its attitude towards the Blessed Virgin Mary, (2) the Mass, (3) sign of the cross. (4) All its sects unite against the Church. (5) Its carelessness about Baptism; sixth angel drying up Euphrates. (6) It blasphemes Saints.

#### **f. *The Five-and-Forty Days.***

(1) Space for repentance. (2) Full of signs. (3) The Lord

comes and the weary world is judged and burnt.

**g. Lessons.**

1. The reign of Antichrist is to be the last temporal reign: so the Church's last enemy is to be a kingdom, the consummation of the wickedness of all kingdoms; how significant !

2. What part should we take in this persecution? Let us measure it by the boldness of our profession now — by our strictness with ourselves — by our self-denial in charity for others — by our perseverance in the practices of penance — by the fervor and the frequency of our prayers — by the rigorousness of the examinations of our conscience. It is always to each of us the five-and-forty days; Christ will come — He will not tarry — let us have our loins girded and our lamps burning, that when the midnight cry is raised, and the Bridegroom cometh, we may go forward with holy awe to meet our Saviour and our Judge."

**345. Mother Alphonse Eppinger (1867)**

a. "In the impending revolutionary chaos eminent religious will be assassinated by dignitaries. Rome will see blood of priests flowing. Convents will be sacked. Churches laid waste. Laws will be enacted against religion and the worship of God. Through the stroke of the scourge the Lord wishes to re-awaken the right spirit among those in holy and sacred positions. Secretly conducted agitations, revolts, insurrections, slaughter and the creation of a state of alarm and anxiety within the ranks of general society will be characteristic signs of the times when the evil ones shall have established themselves in power. God wishes to administer punishment for allowing faith to wane and for the sins that engulf the world, and therefore permits the raging passions of man to have free reign until they reach a point where they will subside of themselves . . .

b. "A great persecution of priests will break out, but it will not be so severe in Alsace and, therefore, many foreign priests will fly thither . . . For many clergymen are no longer zealous for the glory of God and the salvation of souls. Their hearts are set on the specious goods of this life. Through chastisement they must be torn away from these things in order to bring about a change in their point of view

c. For the rest see Prophecy 166.

**346. Maria von Merl (d. 1868)**

"The fourth successor of Pope Pius IX will live to see the great revolution within the Church."

**347. Anonymous Prophecy Found in the Public Library of Piacenza (before 1873)**

"Bella, fames, pestis, fraudes Saturnia regna  
Sternet, et veteres pellentur ubique tyranni.

Pastor erit claves, non-regna gubernans.  
Monstra loquor ! Turn cum pariet bos rubeus hydram,

Nec Deus extinguet flammam, nec deseret jram,  
Nisi prius Ausoniae feriant mala singula gentes.

Tempus erit prope lustrum. Mox aliger ingens  
Surget ut e somno, rostro metuendus et ungue.

Colla bovis caedet, sitibundus iniqui draconis  
Viscera depascet. Gallorum trina colorum

Sternet humi; 'statuet in propria reges.  
Galatia genitus terra Vir Justus et aequus

Pastor erit : toto surget Concordia Mundo.  
Una fides, unus regnabit in omnia Princeps."

Translation : "Famine, pestilence, war, and frauds shall prostrate the Italian kingdoms, and the ancient kings shall everywhere be expelled. The Supreme Pastor will hold the keys of Heaven, but shall be deprived of earthly kingdoms.

"Horrible spectacle ! When the red ox (Communism) shall give birth to the hydra (Anarchy) God will not extinguish the flames nor calm his anger until all these calamities shall have stricken the people of Ausonia (Italy). This state of affairs shall last about five years.

"Then an enormous bird (Great Monarch) shall awake, as from a sleep, and with its terrible bill and claws shall sever the ox's neck, and shall eagerly devour the intestines of the wicked dragon. He shall drag to the mud the tricolor flag of the French and restore to their dominions the legitimate kings. A just and pious man born in Gallicia shall be the Supreme Pontiff; then the whole world shall be united and prosperous. One faith only and one emperor shall reign over the whole earth."

**348. The Pious Dupont of Tours (d. 1876)**

"Satan will become so violent because he feels that he will be beaten."

**349. Bishop of Mainz (d. 1877)**

"There will come no peace but rather more wars amongst all nations of the earth; bloodier and more terrible than that which we now (1870) have before our eyes."

**350.** Other late 19th and early 20th century prophecies are numbers 169b (Pius IX), 170 (Baourdi), 171 (Pie), 173 (Bosco), 176 (Tilly), 178a (Chambau), 177 (Christine).

**351. Marie Deluil Martiny (d. 1884)**

**a.** "I shall perform miracles. Neither the efforts of Satan nor the unworthiness of men will prevent me. Before time expires I desire to be compensated for everything which has been inflicted upon me. I want to pour out all graces which have been rejected. I am like a swollen stream which nothing can stop from overflowing its banks.

**b.** "Let us hasten the triumph of Christ over hell and the hostile powers through prayer and sacrifice."

**351. Marie Julie Jahenny of La Faudais (d. 1891)**

"During the time of the approach of the punishments announced at La Salette, an unlimited amount of false revelations will arise from hell like a swarm of flies; a last attempt of Satan to choke and destroy the belief in the true revelations by false ones." See also Prophecy 174.

**352. Paul de Moll (d. 1896)**

"France will be cleansed through great punishments."

**353. L'Abbe Joseph Maitre Prophecy of the Popes, (Imprimatur 1898)**

**a.** "Let us re-read the grave warnings which St. Paul sent to the Thessalonians on the subject of the Man of Sin: 2 Thess. 2: 1-16 'But there is one entreaty we would make of you, brethren, as you look forward to the time when our Lord Jesus Christ will come, and gather us in to himself. Do not be terrified out of your senses all at once, and thrown into confusion, by any spiritual utterance, any message or letter purporting to come from us, which suggests that the day of the Lord is close at hand. Do not let anyone find the means of leading you astray. The apostasy must come first; the champion of wickedness must appear first, destined to inherit perdition. This is the rebel who is to lift up his head above every divine name,

above all that men hold in reverence, till at last he enthrones himself in God's temple, and proclaims himself as God. Do not you remember my telling you of this, before I left your company? At present there is a power (you knew what I mean) which holds him in check, so that he may not shew himself before the time appointed to him; meanwhile, the conspiracy of revolt is already at work ; only, he who checks it now will be able to check it, until he is removed from the enemy's path. Then it is that the rebel will shew himself; and the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the breath of his mouth, overwhelming him with the brightness of his presence. He will come, when he comes, with all Satan's influence to aid him; there will be no lack of power of counterfeit signs and wonders; and his wickedness will deceive the souls that are doomed, to punish them for refusing that fellowship in the truth which would have saved them. That is why God is letting loose among them a deceiving influence, so that they give credit to falsehood; he will single out for judgment all those who refused credence to the truth, and took their pleasure in wrongdoing.

**b.** "'We must always give thanks in your name, brethren whom the Lord has so favoured. God has picked you out as the first-fruits in the harvest of salvation, by sanctifying your spirits and convincing you of his truth; he has called you, through our preaching, to attain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Stand firm, then, brethren, and hold by the traditions you have learned, in word or in writing, from us. So may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, so may God our Father, who has shewn such love to us, giving us unfailing comfort and welcome hope through his grace, encourage your hearts, and confirm you in every right habit of action and speech.'

## THE INTERPRETATION

"In this obscure passage many points remain mysterious. Is it not the case with all prophecies till they are fulfilled? We can however extract more than one precious truth.

**c. TRADITIONAL TEACHING** — "At the epoch of St. Paul the time for the second coming of Our Lord had not arrived. Instead of proving it, as our modern theologians try to do by more or less human reasons, St. Paul tells the faithful of Thessalonica, to judge everything by the light of Faith and to guard the holy traditions.

"What do these traditions teach us? They teach says the Apostle that Evil is to first triumph by a general apostasy: A man will appear who will stand up definitely against

God and His Christ: he will be the right arm of Satan and he will seduce by false miracles those who will have abandoned the Faith. A terrible chastisement for impiety and unbelief !

"This sign has not appeared yet in its proper and absolute sense. The sacred text appears to give to the Man of Sin such particular marks, a power of seduction so terrible, that we cannot recognize him in the history of the past, nor in contemporary happenings.

**d. THE MYSTERY OF INIQUITY — ITS ACTION THROUGHOUT THE AGES —** "But this great apostasy is not to come without preparation. Already in the Apostolic times St. Paul tells us, the mystery of iniquity was doing its work. What was the hidden force which the Apostle wished to make known by those words? It was without doubt heresy, which even in the time of the Apostles had its chiefs and its adepts.

"Already the "Simonians" and the "Gnostics" had separated from Jesus Christ.' (L'Abbe Drach)

"However we must see in this work of Evil more than just isolated revolts. It is a hidden force which without ceasing opposes the Church. It betrays itself in the course of time by the successive defections of the heresiarches and by the incessant attacks of which Christianity is the object; especially it has taken root in the impious and brutal sect which since the seventh century, opposes to the Cross, the symbolical crescent, as a perpetual menace.

"This mystery of iniquity which acts in the dark is the reign of Satan, which only waits for the permission of God to manifest itself.

**e. THE ACTION OF EVIL IN MODERN SOCIETY —** "Studying this question from this point of view we can find that Evil has made great headway especially since the coming of Protestantism.

"In the 18th century, Naturalism and Rationalism had been directly opposed to the reign of Jesus Christ in the world; the Secret Societies were directing the struggle.

"In the 19th century, the fruit of that detestable work of destruction was gathered. More and more, modern society turns away from Jesus Christ and His religion. Protestantism in our day is no more than a form of Rationalism.

"Can we not recognize in this spirit, alas! too general a

terrible symptom if we refer to it the words of St. Paul.

## **THE FINAL APOSTASY—ANTICHRIST**

**f. JESUS, MASTER OF THE WORLD, STILL PREVENTS THE MANIFESTATION OF THE GREATEST EVIL —** "The words which follow this warning are very obscure: He who checks it now will be able to check it, until he is removed from the enemy's path.

"A great number of interpretations are given about these words. Many refer them to the Roman Empire which exercised its power in the world at the time of St. Paul.

**g. SOCIETY WILL DENY JESUS AGAIN —** "But Monsignor L'Abbe Drach, whom we follow here, thinks that this interpretation is contrary to the text as well as to history. He brings together the words (who checks) with those (which holds him in check). He who checks is he who prevents the mystery of evil from developing, it is at the same time He who takes possession of the world, Jesus Christ Himself.

"Now Jesus who has transformed the world by His teachings and the action of His grace, will be again one day repudiated, denied by those to whom He brought hope and salvation. It is thus that the end of (v.7) the object of the remark (until he is removed from the enemy's path) brings together the idea put in relief by the Apostle.

"When the social reign of Jesus will have come to an end, when ungrateful humanity will have abandoned its God, then, the impious man, the man of sin, the Antichrist will come. By his seductions and his cursed charms he will make for himself adepts, and the first chastisement of unbelief, in the divine teachings will be its opposite, an unbelievable BELIEF in the superstition, and in the religion of Satan.

"From this point of view, we can recognize many characteristic traits in our epoch.

"One wishes, it is true, to speak of God, of religion. But religion for many is nothing more than a vague Deism which makes of the SUPREME BEING a sort of abstraction, afar off, indifferent to human affairs and the things of humanity.

"One speaks of love of men, of civism and of patriotism. But under these grand words the most odious egotism lies hidden. A vain philanthropy has replaced Christian

Charity, the cult of reason and of matter has taken the place of the adoration of Christ and of respect for His Church, the source of true Charity.

"And however the strong spirits, the independents allow themselves to be enchained by tyrannical bands, and abdicate their liberty for the benefit of those cursed societies which lead the modern world, Free masonry, secret societies of every kind. These men who mock at the SUPERNATURAL, have an excessive faith when things relating to occult sciences or black magic are in question.

"Alas! the relations of the demon with humanity are only too real and we should take care to beware of laughing at

the strange manifestations which are produced by magnetism or spiritism. We should also beware of trying

to find out explanations either natural or scientific of these phenomena.

"We believe then, we also, in the reality of very many happenings which seem to betray the intervention from the world of Spirits. But is it not strange to see men, who pretend to be independents and under the pretext of freedom of reason, shake off the yoke of all positive religion whilst they give themselves up blindly to practices which are made up by the intervention of hidden forces frightening in their effects as well as suspect in their nature.

"All these signs correspond from afar with those described by St. Paul as the time when the mystery of iniquity will be unveiled.

# CHAPTER VI

## TWENTIETH CENTURY PROPHETS

### 354. *Sister Gertrude Marie of Angers (1907)*

"I saw the triumph of the Church in the near future. How magnificent it will be! It will be the kingdom of the Sacred Heart. How many saints there will be! However, before that there will be many victims. Heresy will be destroyed; its plans will be destroyed, its efforts rendered fruitless, and just at the hour when it was believed to have accomplished everything."

### 355. *Pius X (d. 1914)*

"I see Russians in Genoa." See also Prophecy 179.

### 356. *Sacred Heart Picture—Mirabeau, France*

a. (1914) ". . . The war will be so long and destructive that one has to look back very far to find its equal. But, the time after the war will be more terrible than the war itself.

b. (1917) "I shall conquer all nations, but I shall destroy the tool of which I made use.

c. (1917) "Plundering and death shall make their entrance there. (Vatican) The grave of my apostle shall be desecrated . . . They will all be dispersed.

d. (1919) "Two thrones are shaking, the throne of England and the throne of Spain. England is in danger; she is like a volcano. She will suffer the chastisement of her apostasy. The mighty will be robbed of their power. The prayer and penance of the saints of England ascend to Me in powerful supplication. May she return to Me; I would know how to protect her."

### 357. *Mrs. Marie Mesmin*

a. (1902) "Poor children ! If you knew what will happen to you, you would be afraid and fearful. A war is coming the like of which has never before been experienced. It will be terrible. Up to the age of fifty years all men will have to go to war. I see, how big birds drop fire on the cities. Besides war, also pestilence and other entirely unknown diseases will come about which the physicians know nothing. Big earthquakes will come and mountains will move. Famine and revolution will come; one will be forced to hide . . . The day is coming when there will be no more food to eat. The rich will suffer just as much as

the poor. Money will have no value.

b. "We stand on the eve of judgment. We have departed from the good Lord in order to serve the evil one. He will now serve us in his fashion. It is not God who wants to visit us . . . The moment has come when the evil one wishes to satisfy his passions, and since he likes only blood and crime, oh how many tears and sufferings, what horrible things will come! Finally the nations will tear each other to pieces: English against English, Italian against Italian, Spaniard against Spaniard, French against French. It will be terrible. Catastrophe will follow catastrophe!

c. (Nov. 7, 1918) "Do not believe, my children, that now all is ended in this apparent calm. Where are the converted people? Did the world return to God? If the people would do penance one could say: soon will come the liberation, the renovation and a new prosperity in everything. But that is not the case, and dreadful evils await us . . .

d. "As revealed by the Mother of God: 'By my tears (in La Salette and Bordeaux) I wanted to make you understand that prayer and penance can keep away the punishments . . . If one would pray nothing would happen. God is powerful enough to govern mankind; all would be renewed in peace without the terrible punishments which will exterminate three-fourths of mankind. God does not lack the means whereby to let those disappear who act against His law. If you could obtain a mitigation of the punishment, you would already have attained much!'"

### 358. *Apparition of Our Lady at Fatima (1917)*

a. Preparation by the Angel: "Fear not, I am the Angel of Peace. Pray with me. 'My God, I believe, I adore, I hope, I love you! I ask pardon for those who do not believe, nor adore, nor hope, nor love you.'

"Offer continually to the Lord prayers and sacrifices in reparation for the numerous sins which offend Him, and in supplication for the conversion of sinners. Try then to bring peace to your country. I am its Guardian Angel. Above all accept and bear with submission the sufferings which it will please the Lord to send you.

"The Angel appeared holding a Chalice in his hand

surmounted by a Host, from which drops of Blood flowed into the Chalice. Leaving the Chalice and Host suspended in mid-air, the Angel knelt beside the children and made them recite three times the following prayer: 'Most Holy Trinity, Father, Son and Holy Ghost, I adore You profoundly! I offer You the most Precious Body and Blood, Soul and Divinity of Our Lord Jesus Christ, present in all the tabernacles of the world, in reparation for all the outrages committed against It; and, by the infinite merits of His Sacred Heart, through the intercession of the Immaculate Heart of Mary, I pray for the conversion of poor sinners.'

"Then rising, he took the Host which he gave to Lucy, and the Chalice which he divided between Jacinta and Francis, saying: 'Receive the Body and Blood of Jesus Christ horribly outraged by ungrateful men. Make reparation for their sins and console your God'."

**b.** Words of Our Lady: "You must recite the Rosary every day in honour of the Blessed Virgin, to obtain the end of the war through Her intercession, for only She can help you.'

"Sacrifice yourselves for sinners, and say often, especially when you make sacrifices: Oh Jesus, it is for love of You, for the conversion of sinners, and in reparation for the offences committed against the Immaculate Heart of Mary.'

"When reciting the Rosary, say after each decade: Oh my Jesus, forgive us our sins, save us from the fire of hell, and lead all souls to heaven, especially those who have most need of Thy mercy.'

"Pray, pray very much, make sacrifices for sinners. Remember that many souls are lost because there is nobody to pray and to make sacrifices for them.'

"Men must amend their lives, and ask pardon for their sins.

'Men must no longer offend Our Divine Lord, Who is already offended too much.'

I promise to help at the hour of death with the graces needed for their salvation, whoever on the first Saturday of five consecutive months, shall confess and receive Holy Communion, recite five decades of the Rosary, and keep me company for fifteen minutes while meditating on the fifteen mysteries of the Rosary with the intention of making reparation to me'."

**c.** The Secret of Fatima: "The children were shown a vision of hell, in all its horror, after which the Blessed Virgin said to them: 'You have just seen hell where the souls of poor sinners go. To save them the Lord wishes to establish in the world the devotion to My Immaculate Heart. If people do what I shall tell you, many souls will be saved and there will be Peace.

The war [World War I-1914-1918] will soon end. But if men do not stop offending the Lord it will not be long before another and worse one begins; that will be in the Pontificate of Pius XI.

When you see the night illuminated by an unknown light, know that it is the great sign which God is giving you, indicating that the world, on account of its innumerable crimes, will soon be punished by war, famine, and persecutions against the Church and the Holy Father.

In order to prevent it I shall come to ask for the consecration of Russia to my Immaculate Heart, as well as Communions of Reparation on the First Saturdays of the month.

If my requests are granted Russia will be converted and there will be peace. Otherwise Russia will spread her errors through the world fomenting wars and persecutions against the Church. Many will be martyred, the Holy Father will have much to suffer; several nations will be destroyed.

In the end my Immaculate Heart will triumph. The Holy Father will consecrate Russia to me, Russia will be converted, and there will be a certain period of peace'."

**d.** Words of Jacinta: 'The sins that lead most souls to hell are sins of the flesh!

"Certain fashions will be introduced which will offend Our Divine Lord very much. Those who serve God ought not to follow these fashions ...

'The sins of the world are too great! The Blessed Virgin has said that there will be many wars and disturbances in the world: wars are only punishments for the sins of the world.'

"The Blessed Virgin can no longer restrain the arm of Her Divine Son, which will strike the world . . .

"Men must do penance . . . If they amend their lives, Our Lord will still forgive them ; but if they do not reform, the

punishment will surely come.

". . . So many lives will be lost, and almost all will go to hell. So many houses will be destroyed, and so many priests will be killed.

"Have you seen the Holy Father? . . . I do not know how it happened, but I saw him in a very large house, kneeling before a little table, weeping, with his head between his hands. Outside there was a crowd . . . Poor Holy Father!"

e. "The children never failed to add three Hail Marys to their rosary for the Holy Father.

"The salvation of the world depends on the fulfillment of the three requests of the Blessed Virgin at Fatima: (1) Sacrifice — fulfillment of daily duty — make sacrifices necessary to avoid sin (2) Daily recitation of the Rosary and devotion to the Five Saturdays (3) Consecration to the Immaculate Heart of Mary."

### **359. *Berry* (published 1920) — Interpretation of the Apocalypse**

a. "When applied to the last days of the world these verses bear a more literal interpretation.\* Then shall 'the sun be darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be moved.' The sun will probably be obscured by volcanic ashes sent up from many places as the result of terrible earthquakes and eruptions of volcanoes. The veiled light of the moon will appear red as blood. Myriads of meteors resembling stars will fall to earth, kindling the whole world into flames. The heavens shall be rolled up as the scroll of a book. In other words, the atmosphere will be so obscured that the sun and moon will become invisible as at the beginning of creation. The mountains and continents shall be overturned and the whole world shall return to chaos.

"Comparing this description with the first chapter of Genesis we find the confusion of elements occurring in inverse order to that of their unfolding at creation. The faithful who witness these terrible convulsions of nature will prepare for the judgment of God. They shall be more terrified at the anger of God and of His Christ than by the upheaval of the material world.

"Then shall men wither away from fear and expectation of what shall come upon the whole world.' They will cry out

\* See Apocalypse quoted above in No. 231.

in their terror: 'O ye mountains, fall upon us! Ye hills, cover us!' for 'who shall be able to withstand the wrath of God?' This thought is beautifully expressed in the sequence of Masses for the dead: 'Day of wrath, O day of mourning, Lo, the world in ashes burning. Seer and Sybil gave the warning. What Shall I, frail man be pleading? Who for me be interceding When the just are mercy needing?'"

b. "The prophecies of this chapter have been fulfilled many times in the past. No doubt they will often be verified in the future. It should be noted, however, that a progressive accumulation of evils is predicted. At first it affects individuals only. (v.7) Then a nation or an entire church is involved, (v.8) and a number of great heretics fall away from the Faith. (v.10) Finally the whole Church suffers from a weakening of Faith and discipline. (v.12) This gradual progression of evil, 'this mystery of iniquity' which was working even in the days of St. Paul, will finally usher in the Antichrist.

"An eagle appears in mid-heaven proclaiming three great woes to follow the sounding of the remaining trumpets. Two interpretations are permissible. The first recognizes in the eagle a powerful nation which shall be an instrument of God's judgments upon the world. The other interpretation sees in the eagle a symbol of new preachers of the Gospel. God raises up new saints or religious orders to arouse the faithful to renewed faith and zeal in his service. Nevertheless, three great evils shall afflict the Church before her final victory over the world and the devil.

"Whatever interpretation be adopted, there can be no doubt that this verse heralds the beginning of a new and important epoch in the history of the Church."

c. "The invasion of the locusts is the first woe predicted by the eagle. The two yet to come will fill up the 'mystery of iniquity' with the appearance of Antichrist and his prophet.

"God sends a sixth angel to instruct and guide the Church. This mission will still further reveal the thoughts of many hearts. The wicked continue to be separated from the just.

"A voice from the golden altar commands the captive angels of the Euphrates to be released. As noted above, the altar is Christ who makes trials and tribulations a means of sanctification for souls and an increase of fervor and holiness in the Church. They also serve to spread the

blessings of the Gospel for as Tertullian says : 'The blood of martyrs is the seed of Christians.'

"Christ Himself gives command to release the captive angels thus showing that the enemies of the Church have no power against her unless God permits. The Church can say to her enemies as Christ said to Pilate: 'Thou shouldst not have any power against me, unless it were given thee from above.'

"The captive angels are demons who will arouse new enmities against the Church. In a figurative sense they represent the new enemies thus aroused against the Church, whether they be nations, individuals, or secret societies hostile to her. Four, the number of universality, indicates how widespread will be their influence.

"With the prophets of old the region of the Euphrates was ever the country whence came the enemies of God's people. Its mention here indicates that these new enemies will arise among nations already hostile to the Church. In a secondary sense the term may be taken literally to represent peoples from that region who are hostile to the Church.

"The four angels of the Euphrates, now ordered to be released, may be the same as those whom Christ forbade to injure the earth until the Church could be firmly established after the persecutions.

"Even the time for the manifestations of these evil spirits and their minions has been accurately fixed in the designs of Providence. The very day and hour has been determined.

"Great numbers will be done to death in the religious wars and revolutions stirred up by these angels from the Euphrates. The prophecy may also mean that large numbers will be led into new errors and schisms. Both interpretations are fully justified by the history of the pretended Reformation and the wars that followed it.

"These scourges shall be more terrible than any yet predicted. The first plagues were brought to earth by four horsemen. Then we saw four charioteers, the four winds, ready to scourge mankind. Here we find a vast array of cavalry. The chastisements sent upon the world increase with the growth of iniquity and the approach of Antichrist.

"The description of horses and riders in this vision gives some idea of their boldness, strength, and cunning ferocity. They inflict upon men the plagues of fire, smoke

and sulphur. The fire is persecution and war. Smoke symbolizes the obscuring of doctrine and the weakening of faith ; sulphur, the moral depravity which follows.

"The fire, smoke and sulphur issue from the mouth of the horses. From the mouth should proceed words of wisdom; instead there come forth heresies, and incitements to revolt and revolution. It should be noted that Luther openly preached revolt and revolutions to the peasants of Germany, but when they put his words into practice, he turned to the princes and urged them to stamp out the revolt with fire and sword

"The horses of this vision inflict injuries with their tails which resemble serpents. Amongst all peoples the serpent is a symbol of lying and hypocrisy. These vices have ever characterized the enemies of the Church.

"There is no question here of real artillery as some have imagined. St. John is giving only the broad outlines of the Church's history. He is not concerned with the material means employed by men to wage war against her.

"The vision of locusts and the vision of cavalry horses are not two representations of one and the same event. They foreshadow two distinct events that follow one another in the order of time. The one is the great revolt against the Church brought about by the fallen star. The other consists of wars and disturbances which follow in the wake of that revolt.

"After these plagues have passed there still remain many who worship idols, and many guilty of robbery, murder and immorality. This is verified today. Although nineteen hundred years have elapsed since the first preaching of the Gospel, whole nations are still steeped in idolatry, and Christendom seems hopelessly divided by heresy and schism."

**d.** "An Angel coming in clouds of grace and glory brings to St. John a book of further prophecies. The rainbow about his head symbolizes mercy, while the brightness of his countenance expresses the power of his teachings to en-lighten souls. The feet as of fire indicate that he shall lead the Church in the ways of truth and justice as the pillar of fire guided the Israelites in the wilderness.

"The book is open to signify that the prophecies therein revealed to St. John are intelligible and shall be understood in due time according to the needs of the Church. The angel places one foot upon the sea, the other

upon the land to express God's supreme dominion over all things.

"The voice like the roar of a lion is the voice of the Gospel which shall penetrate to the very ends of the earth teaching divine truth, condemning error, and threatening persecutors with the vengeance of God. Here, as elsewhere, the thunders may symbolize the anathemas of the Church against all wickedness and error; but it would be useless to comment on their exact meaning since St. John was commanded to seal up the words of his prophecies until the time appointed by God for their publication. The words of the seven thunders may also have been such as St. Paul heard — 'secret words which it is not granted to man to utter.'

"Lifting his hand to heaven the angel calls upon the God of all creation to witness the truth of his words that time shall be no more. This does not mean that the end of the world is at hand, but that the time for judgment against obstinate sinners and persecutors has arrived.

"This judgment shall be the great persecution of Antichrist and its attendant evils. Then shall be accomplished the 'mystery of God' which has been announced (evangelized) by the prophets of old. To evangelize is to announce good tidings, hence this 'mystery of God' is probably the plenitude of the Redemption applied to all nations of earth. After the destruction of Antichrist and his kingdom all peoples shall accept the Gospels and the Church of Christ shall reign peacefully over all nations.

"Eating the book symbolizes an intimate union with the Holy Ghost by which the mind of the Apostle is illuminated with the spirit of prophecy. St. John finds the book sweet to the taste because it announces mercy to the elect and the final triumph of the Church. It is bitter in so far as it predicts dire persecutions for the Church and terrible punishments for the wicked."

e. "As the two prophets are taken up to heaven, Jerusalem is shaken with a mighty earthquake in which seven thousand people perish and a tenth part of the city is destroyed. At the sight of these prodigies all who survive are converted and begin to praise and glorify God. Here is seen the great Mercy of God who punishes not to destroy but to convert and save."

f. "In the foregoing chapters St. John outlines the history of the Church from the coming of Antichrist until the end of the world in order to give a connected account of the

two prophets Henoah and Elias, (or Moses) and the result of their labors. In this chapter he shows us the true nature of that conflict. It shall be war unto death between the Church and the powers of darkness in a final effort of Satan to destroy the Church and thus prevent the universal reign of Christ on earth.

"Satan will first attempt to destroy the power of the Papacy and bring about the downfall of the Church through heresies, schisms and persecutions that must surely follow. Failing in this he will then attack the Church from without. For this purpose he will raise up Antichrist and his prophet to lead the faithful into error and destroy those who remain steadfast.

"The Church, the faithful spouse of Jesus Christ, is represented as a woman clothed in the glory of divine grace. In the Canticle of Canticles the Church is likewise described as 'she that cometh forth as the morning rising, fair as the moon, bright as the sun.' The brightness of the sun is a fitting symbol for the enlightening power of the Church's teachings.

"The moon was beneath her feet. St. Gregory the Great and St. Augustine see in this dominion of the Church over the whole world, and her contempt for the perishable goods of this life. The moon with its ever changing phases is a , figure of the transitory things of earth.

"The crown of twelve stars represents the twelve Apostles and through them the whole ministry of the Church. It may also denote the assembly of faithful nations symbolized by the mystic number twelve.

"The Church is ever in labor to bring forth children to eternal life. In the sad days here predicted the sorrows and pains of delivery shall be increased many fold. In this passage there is an evident allusion to some particular son of the Church whose power and influence shall be such that Satan will seek his destruction at any cost. This person can be none other than the Pope to be elected in those days. The Papacy will be attacked by all the powers of hell. In consequence the Church will suffer great trials and afflictions in securing a successor upon the throne of Peter.

"The words of St. Paul to the Thessalonians may be a reference to the Papacy as the obstacle to the coming of Antichrist: 'You know what withholdeth, that he may be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity already worketh; only that he who now holdeth, do hold, until he

be taken out of the way. And then that wicked one shall be revealed.'

"St. John now sees in heaven a red dragon with seven heads and ten horns ; each head bearing a diadem. (Communism?) The dragon is Satan red with the blood of martyrs which he will cause to flow. The meaning of the seven heads and ten horns must be sought in the description of the beast that represents Antichrist where they symbolize kings or worldly powers. Those of the dragon must have a similar meaning, and indicate that Satan's attacks against the Church will be organized and carried out by the governments and ruling powers of those days.

"With the beast of Antichrist only the horns have diadems as symbols of royalty or governing power. The heads are branded with names of blasphemy. Hence they symbolize the sins and errors that will afflict the Church. Seven, the number of universality, indicates that in this final struggle to prevent the universal reign of Christ all forms of sin and error will be marshalled against the Church. A prelude to this may be seen in the errors of Modernism which has been rightly designated 'a synthesis of all heresies.' The number seven is also appropriate since all sins are included in the seven capital sins. In like manner all errors that have afflicted the Church may be summed up in these seven: Judaism, paganism, Arianism, Mohammedism, Protestantism, rationalism, and atheism.

"The dragon is seen in heaven which is here a symbol of the Church, the kingdom of heaven on earth. This indicates that the first troubles of those days will be inaugurated within the Church by apostate bishops, priests, and peoples — the stars dragged down by the tail of the dragon.

"The tail of the dragon represents the cunning hypocrisy with which he succeeds in deceiving a large number of people and pastors — a third part of the stars. Arianism led away many bishops, priests, and peoples. The pretended Reformation of the sixteenth century claimed still larger numbers but these cannot be compared to the numbers seduced by Satan in the days of Antichrist.

"The dragon stands before the woman ready to devour the child that is brought forth. In other words, the powers of hell seek by all means to destroy the Pope elected in those days.

"The woman brings forth a son to rule the nations with a

rod of iron. These are the identical words of prophecy uttered by the Psalmist concerning our Saviour Jesus Christ. They confirm our application of this vision to the Pope, the vicar of Christ on earth to rule the nations in His stead and by His power.

"It is now the hour for the powers of darkness. The new born Son of the Church is taken 'to God and to his throne.' Scarcely has the newly elected Pope been enthroned when he is snatched away my martyrdom. The 'mystery of iniquity' gradually developing through the centuries, cannot be fully consummated while the power of the Papacy endures, but now he that 'withholdeth is taken out of the way.' During the interregnum 'that wicked one shall be revealed' in his fury against the Church.

"It is a matter of history that the most disastrous periods for the Church were times when the Papal throne was vacant, or when anti-popes contended with the legitimate head of the Church. Thus also shall it be in those evil days to come.

"The Church deprived of her chief pastor must seek sanctuary in solitude there to be guided by God himself during those trying days. This place of refuge prepared for the Church is probably some nation, or nations, that remain faithful to her. In those days the Church shall also find refuge and consolation in faithful souls, especially in the seclusion of the religious life.

"St. Michael, the guardian angel of the Church, shall come with his hosts to defend her against the onslaughts of Satan and his minions. The followers of St. Michael are the angelic hosts of heaven and all faithful bishops and priests of the Church. The minions of Satan are the fallen angels with the leaders of heresy, schism, and persecution.

"The battle is waged in the Church, the kingdom of heaven, from which the dragon and his angels are cast out and hurled down to earth. The earth symbolizes the nations hostile to the Church — the world over which Satan rules. By the aid of St. Michael the Church shall purge herself of all heretics, schismatics and apostates. A similar work was accomplished by the Council of Trent in the sixteenth century."

**g.** "The Church is called upon to rejoice over the defeat of the dragon and the glorious martyrdom of her children; but woe to the earth and the sea — all mankind. Realizing that the time of his power is short, Satan will now loose upon earth all his rage and fury in a last effort against the

Church. His attempt to destroy her from within having failed, he will now seek to crush her by hatred and persecution from without.

"In this new danger the Church shall receive the wings of an eagle to defend her and carry her to the place of refuge which God has prepared. The wings are probably two armies sent in defense of the Church by some nation that remains faithful. This interpretation seems justified by verse 16.

"In a spiritual sense the two wings are faith and prayer. In the faith and prayer of her children, and especially in the contemplative life of religious orders the Church shall find a refuge of consolation which Satan cannot violate. The desolation of those three and one-half years may be compared to that of the three days following our Lord's death on the cross. The faith and prayers of Mary, of the holy women, and of the Apostles afforded the only consolation in those days of anguish.

"This chapter indicates that the Church shall find refuge for three and one-half years on two different occasions; the one during the internal warfare against the Church and the other after the dragon has been cast out. It is possible that the two-fold attack against the Church will be carried on simultaneously, making the refuge mentioned in verse 6 coincide with the one mentioned here. However, the whole context seems to be against such an interpretation.

"The dragon now seeks to overwhelm the Church with a veritable flood of tribulations, but some faithful nation, or nations, (the earth) comes to her rescue. This verse proves that the great revolt of nations mentioned by St. Paul will not be universal. God will preserve at least one nation to defend the Church in that hour when, humanly speaking, everything seems hopeless.

"Satan now realizes that victory will be difficult. His first attempt failed miserably. In this second conflict new tactics must be employed. He will now seek to lead the faithful astray by a false Messiah whom he will raise up in the person of Antichrist. This new adversary is to spring from the sea — the nations already hostile to the Church —hence Satan takes his stand by the shore to call forth the man of sin, the son of perdition.

"It is a solemn moment of 'fear and expectation of what shall come upon the whole world.'"

**h.** "The beast from the sea is Antichrist who was foretold

by Daniel, the prophet, in a vision quite similar to this of St. John. Our study of the Apocalypse thus far makes it certain that a beast cannot be identified with the Roman Empire as many interpreters have done. Others, following the opinion of St. Augustine, take the beast as a symbol of all the wicked and unfaithful. This interpretation is true in a measure since Antichrist could not accomplish his nefarious work without disciples and followers. Hence the beast may be taken by extension to represent the whole empire of Antichrist. Nevertheless it is certain, in fact Suarez holds it as an article of faith, that Antichrist is a definite individual. The words of St. Paul to the Thessalonians leave no room for doubt in this matter.

"It is a very general opinion that Antichrist will set himself up as the Messiah. This opinion seems to be supported by the words of our Saviour: 'I am come in the name of my Father, and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive.' This pretension to Messiah-ship will make it necessary that he spring from the Jewish race.

"The coming of Antichrist opens the decisive conflict between the Church and the powers of hell. It shall be the complete realization of the prophecy of Genesis: 'I will put enmities between thee and the woman and thy seed and her seed.' The seed of the serpent is Antichrist and his followers; the seed of Mary, the woman, is Jesus Christ and his faithful disciples.

"The beast has seven heads and ten horns like those of the dragon. As the representative of Satan, Antichrist will be aided and abetted by the same kings and rulers symbolized in both instances by the horns and diadems. Antichrist will follow in the footsteps of his master by employing every form of sin and error to seduce the faithful. Hence each head is branded with a name descriptive of the sin or error it represents. All heresies blaspheme by denying some dogma of Faith; thus, for example, atheism denies the existence of God ; Arianism rejects the divinity of Christ; Mohammedanism denies both the divinity of Christ and the Trinity of God, while Judaism refuses to recognize our Lord as Messiah.

"The beast resembles a leopard in cruelty. The feet of a bear are symbols of stealth, while the mouth of a lion is an emblem of that strength and power which Satan confers upon his representative. Through the power of Satan, Antichrist will perform great wonders to deceive the people and lead them to accept him as the true Messiah.

St. Paul says that the coming of Antichrist will be 'according to the working of Satan, in all power, and signs, and lying wonders.' Our Lord also warns the faithful of false miracles in those days: 'For there shall rise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show signs and wonders insomuch as to deceive (if possible) even the elect. Behold I have told it to you beforehand.'

"The head wounded unto death but healed in a marvelous manner signifies that one of the powers supporting the cause of Antichrist shall be overcome by the sword in its conflict with the Church. But to the surprise of all, this power will quickly rally its forces and thereby lead many to believe in Antichrist. As noted above, the heads represent spiritual rather than temporal powers. Since the heads of the dragon wear the diadem of royalty they may symbolize powers that combine both the spiritual and the temporal.

"Those who adore Antichrist on account of his 'lying wonders' thereby adore Satan who gives the power to perform them. Power and material prosperity are the rewards for those who serve him as the devil signified to Christ on the mountain: 'All these (kingdoms) will I give to thee, if falling down thou wilt adore me.' Antichrist accepts this infamous bargain and receives the empire of the world — 'Who shall be able to fight against him?'

"The power of Antichrist will be of short duration (three and one-half years), but during this time he will pour out blasphemies against God and against the Blessed Sacrament of the altar (the tabernacle of God.) He will also malign and vilify those who remain faithful to God and to His Church. He will be given power to wage war against the Church and to overcome it for a time. He shall rule over many nations and many peoples will adore him; his kingdom shall have the semblance of catholicity or universality. This is the great revolt of the nations foretold by St. Paul, but it shall not be truly universal; one nation at least, shall remain faithful to the Church in those days, and the elect whose names are written in the book of life will not adore Antichrist.

"These two verses contain consoling promises to the faithful, but dire warnings for the wicked; hence, the solemn admonition: 'If anyone have an ear, let him hear.' Antichrist and his followers, at first victorious, shall soon be overcome and destroyed. As they have meted out to others, it shall be measured unto them. They who have led the faithful into captivity and put them to death, shall

themselves be made captives and put to the sword. Hence the faithful must suffer in patience with full confidence of victory."

i. "The beast arising from the earth is the false prophet — the prophet of Antichrist (Lucifer). Our divine Saviour has a representative on earth in the person of the Pope upon whom He has conferred full powers to teach and govern. Likewise Antichrist will have his representative in the false prophet who will be endowed with the plenitude of satanic powers to deceive the nations.

"If Antichrist be of Jewish extraction, as he probably will, the sea from which he arises signifies Judaism. Then the earth whence comes the second beast is a symbol of the Gentile nations in revolt against the Church. The two horns denote a twofold authority — spiritual and temporal. As indicated by the resemblance to a lamb, the prophet will probably set himself up in Rome as a sort of anti-pope during the vacancy of the papal throne mentioned above. But the elect will not allow themselves to be deceived; they will recall the words of our Lord: 'Then if any man shall say to you: Lo here is Christ, or there, do not believe him.'

"Antichrist will establish himself in Jerusalem where a great number of Jews will have gathered through some such movement as Zionism. The vast majority of Jews have ever clung to the belief that God will one day restore the kingdom of Israel through a Messiah — an 'Anointed one' — of the house of David. When Antichrist manifests himself to those in Jerusalem with his 'lying wonders' they will immediately proclaim him their king and Messiah. Then through the power of false miracles the prophet will soon lead the Gentile nations to adore him as the true Messiah promised of old by the prophets. St. Paul clearly states that Antichrist will give himself out as God: 'He opposeth, and is lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped, so that he sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself as if he were God.

"Many theologians believe that Antichrist will rebuild the temple of Jerusalem in which he will establish his throne and be worshipped as God. The words of St. Paul, cited above, certainly seem to favor this belief, and there can be no doubt that such an achievement would secure immediate recognition for Antichrist and his projects. On the other hand the prophecy of Daniel seems to preclude such a possibility: 'And there shall be in the temple the abomination of desolation: and the desolation shall

continue even to the consummation, and to the end.' It matters not how scholars interpret this abomination, the words of Christ clearly prove that it was to lead directly to the destruction of the temple by the Roman army in 70 A.D. The destruction then wrought shall be final — it shall 'continue even to the consummation, and to the end.'

"Julian the Apostate attempted to rebuild the temple in the fourth century but the undertaking was frustrated in a miraculous manner. 'The place was made inaccessible by fearful balls of fire that broke out near the foundations and so scorched and burned the workmen that they were forced to retire. The frequent attacks finally caused the work to be abandoned.'

"The 'temple of God' in the above passage from St. Paul probably means all places of Catholic worship in general, and in particular the churches of Rome and Jerusalem. The 'abomination of desolation' has been wrought in many Catholic churches by heretics and apostates who have broken altars, scattered the relics of martyrs and desecrated the Blessed Sacrament. At the time of the French Revolution a lewd woman was seated upon the altar of the cathedral in Paris and worshipped as the goddess of reason. Such things but faintly foreshadow the abominations that will desecrate churches in these sorrowful days when Antichrist will seat himself at the altar to be adored as God.

"The prophet, of course, shall have power to perform the wonderful works of his master. Among other prodigies he will bring down fire from heaven, probably to offset the preaching and miracles of Elias, and thus seduce great numbers. He will also have statues of Antichrist erected to be adored by those whom he has seduced. These statues will give out oracles as did those of ancient paganism. In fact the reign of Antichrist and his prophet will be a veritable renewal of paganism throughout the world.

"The followers of Antichrist will be marked with a character in imitation of the sign that St. John saw upon the foreheads of the servants of God. This indicates that Antichrist and his prophet will introduce ceremonies to imitate the Sacraments of the Church. In fact there will be a complete organization — a church of Satan set up in opposition to the Church of Christ. Satan will assume the part of God the Father; Antichrist will be honored as Savior, and his prophet will usurp the role of Pope. Their ceremonies will counterfeit the Sacraments and their works of magic be heralded as miracles. A similar project

was attempted in the fourth century when Julian the Apostate counterfeited Catholic worship with pagan ceremonies in honor of Mithras and Cybele. He established a priesthood and instituted ceremonies in imitation of Baptism and Confirmation.

"During the persecution under Diocletian statues of the gods were set up in stores and market places where customers were obliged to honor them and offer incense. None could buy or sell without the contamination of pagan worship. In the days of Antichrist the false prophet will adopt similar tactics to accomplish the downfall of the faithful. No one will be able to buy or sell the necessities of life without implicating himself in the worship of Antichrist.

"For the name of Antichrist, St. John gives a cryptogram that will enable the faithful to recognize him as soon as he makes his appearance in the world. This cryptogram consists of the numerical value of the letters in his name. St. John says that it is the number of a man. This may mean that the name is that of a definite individual, thus showing that Antichrist is not to be identified with the Roman Empire nor with the wicked generally as some maintain.

"In computing the number of Antichrist authors are divided in their opinions as to whether the Latin, Greek or Hebrew letters should be used. The prevailing opinion today regards the use of Hebrew as the most probable. In the new Jewish kingdom of Jerusalem the use of Hebrew will certainly be encouraged if not made obligatory. Even today Hebrew is one of the recognized languages of Palestine, and is widely used by the Jews living there.

"At present, the majority of scholars, both Catholic and Protestant, interpret the number 666 as a cryptogram for Nero Caesar as written in Hebrew characters. But according to our interpretation this is an impossible solution because the days of Antichrist are still in the future. Furthermore, the career of Nero does not correspond to that of Antichrist except in so far as he persecuted the Church. His coming was not 'in all power, and signs and lying wonders' as St. Paul predicts concerning Antichrist.

"Father Sloet of Holland proposed a solution based upon the title of Antichrist as king of Israel. The Jews have ever looked forward to the Messiah as a great leader to restore the kingdom of Israel. They rejected our Lord because He did not fulfill this expectation. We may be sure that the

pretensions of Antichrist will not be wanting in this regard. He will be king of a restored Israel — not only king, but the king par excellence. In Hebrew this idea could be expressed by the words 'hammelek l'Yisrael,' which have the requisite numerical value of 666; but in order to obtain this number kaph medial must be used in melek (king) instead of kaph final. Since he will be a king under false pretenses, this interpretation could readily be accepted."

**j.** "A third angel threatens all followers of Antichrist with eternal damnation. They shall be punished with all the rigors of God's infinite justice untempered by mercy. The wine of wrath shall be poured into the cup unmixed with the water of mercy. This is a reference to the ancient custom of mixing water with wine for drinking.

"These verses clearly prove that the pains of hell are eternal, and without respite. 'The smoke of their torments shall ascend up forever and ever: neither have they rest day nor night.'"

**k.** "The followers of Antichrist have been warned of defeat and eternal punishment; the faithful have been encouraged by promise of victory here and eternal happiness hereafter. The time of judgment is at hand; the final conflict now begins. The separation of the good from the bad will be still further accomplished. As on the last day, Christ sends forth His angels to gather the wheat into the barns while the cockle is being bound into bundles for the fire. The gathering in of the good through martyrdom is represented as a harvest. The destruction of the wicked is depicted as the vintage of God's wrath. The realization of this judgment will be found in the complete destruction of the kingdom of Antichrist in subsequent chapters.

**l.** "The reaper sitting upon a bright cloud, is an angel who comes in the name of Christ to execute His orders. Hence he bears the resemblance of Christ and is surrounded by a cloud of glory. He also wears a crown of gold, the emblem of royalty, because as representative of Christ he exercises dominion over all peoples.

"The cloud of glory and the crown of royalty might lead one to accept the reaper as Christ Himself. Yet the context makes it plain that the reaper cannot be identified with Christ since he is commanded by an angel to thrust in his sickle. Furthermore, Christ has told us in the Gospel that angels shall be commissioned to separate the wheat from the cockle.

"The voice from beneath the altar, commanding the vintage to be gathered is the voice of a martyr whose blood cries to heaven for vengeance. This martyr who has 'power over fire' is probably Elias who will destroy Antichrist by sending down fire from heaven. The prophet Joel also describes the judgments of God against unholy nations as a vintage and a treading of the wine-press.

"The wine-press of divine wrath shall be trodden outside the city of Jerusalem. Final victory over Antichrist will be won through great slaughter and bloodshed in a battle near the Holy City, perhaps in the Valley of Josaphat. The prophecy of Joel may refer to this event instead of the last judgment; 'Let the nations come up into the Valley of Josaphat: for there I will sit to judge all nations round about . . . in the valley of destruction; for the day of the Lord is near.'"

**m.** "The first vial is poured out upon earth to inflict malignant sores upon those who follow Antichrist. This resembles the sixth plague sent upon Egypt in which 'there came boils with swelling blains in men and beasts.' God also threatened the unfaithful Jews in the wilderness with like punishment: 'May the Lord strike thee with a very sore ulcer in the knees and in the legs, and be thou incurable from the sole of the foot to the top of the head.' Herod Agrippa was similarly stricken when he allowed himself to be hailed as God.

"In a moral sense this plague refers to the shame and confusion of those who harden their hearts and close their ears to the voice of the Church. In this sense it refers especially to the Jews who reject the true Messiah and become leaders against His Church in the days of Antichrist.

"The second plague changes the waters of the sea into blood and destroys all living things therein. This may be taken literally as in the first Egyptian plague when Moses turned the water of all Egypt into blood. In a figurative sense the sea represents the nations in revolt against the Church. They shall be chastised by war and revolution almost to extermination. But if the destruction of 'every living soul' be taken literally the sea must refer to particular nations or peoples.

"The streams and their sources shall likewise be changed into blood. In a symbolic meaning this signifies that the teachers of error and blasphemy shall be slain.\

"The Church teaches that nations as well as individuals

have angels to guide and protect them. The Bible speaks of the guardian angels of the Persians and Macedonians. The angel of the waters mentioned here must be the guardian of those nations hostile to the Church. He is forced to acknowledge the justice of God's judgment against them. It is just retribution for the blood of martyrs which they have shed. What they meted out to others is now measured unto themselves."

**n.** "The fourth vial is emptied on the sun which thereupon sends forth its scorching rays to torture the wicked; but Pharaoh-like instead of being converted they harden their hearts and blaspheme God.

"In a figurative sense the burning rays of the sun are the rigors of God's justice. Christ, the sun of justice, is a guiding light to the faithful, but a consuming fire to the wicked.

"The fifth plague is directed against Jerusalem, the residence of Antichrist and the capital of his kingdom. This kingdom of darkness shall be made still darker by the confusion and ruin. The enemies of the Church shall bite their tongues in anger and despair, yet they will not repent of their sins.

"As in 9:14, the Euphrates symbolizes nations in revolt against the Church. Here they are the Gentile nations subject to Antichrist. The vision probably means that these nations shall be so reduced in strength by the sixth plague that kings from the East will not hesitate to march against them. These eastern kings probably represent nations that remain faithful to the Church and now come to her defense.

"Antichrist and his prophets prepare to resist this attack by sending out messengers with the power of false miracles. By means of these prodigies kings and people are rallied to the cause of Antichrist and march to his defense against the invading armies.

"This verse is a warning to the faithful to be prepared for the great conflict. They must guard well their garments of good works lest they be found without God's grace in that evil day. Our Lord gave a similar warning when He foretold the destruction of Jerusalem: 'Watch ye therefore, because you know not what hour your Lord will come.'

"The armies from the East will meet the forces of Antichrist near Jerusalem. The scene of carnage that follows makes the field of battle another Megiddo, where

the invading armies are completely victorious. A further description of the battle is found in Ch. 19. It seems that it will occur after the fall of Rome.

"Armageddon is the Greek for Har-Mageddo (Mount Mageddo), a place often drenched with Israel's blood. The defeat of Antichrist may be accomplished on this very battle ground."

**o.** "As the seventh angel pours out his vial upon the air, a great voice from the temple cries out 'It is done.' This voice, mentioned in v. 1, now proclaims the defeat of Antichrist and the destruction of his empire. The lightnings flashing and the thunders rolling in heaven are symbols of divine judgments. The great earthquake is the social upheaval following the fall of Antichrist.

"Perhaps the thunder and lightning, and the hail mentioned below should be taken literally like the disturbance of the elements described in Exodus: 'The Lord sent thunder and hail, and lightning running along the ground: and the Lord rained hail upon the land of Egypt. And the hail and fire mixed drove on together: and it was of so great bigness, as never before was seen in the whole land of Egypt.'

"The great city (Jerusalem) is divided into three sections by yawning chasms caused by the earthquake. A similar punishment befell Jerusalem after the death of the two witnesses when one-tenth of the city was destroyed and seven thousand persons perished. The rending of the rocks by an earthquake at the time of our Lord's death upon the cross warrants the belief that these later disturbances will be actual upheavals of the earth.

"In a figurative sense the division of the city may refer to rival factions warring amongst themselves. During the siege of Jerusalem by the Roman army in 70 A. D. the greatest sufferings were caused by warring factions within the walls of the city.

"Rome, the great Babylon, is also destroyed and the cities of the Gentiles are laid waste. These cities are probably the capitals of those nations that submit to the domination of the neo-pagan empire of Rome and thus become parts of the empire of Antichrist."

**p.** "The fall and devastation of Rome\* were mentioned in

\*This author's conviction that Rome, Italy is to become again the capital of a pagan empire and be utterly destroyed is by no means a necessary conclusion. Just as Rome is said to be Babylon yet is not, so the false prophet's capital is said to be Rome but need not be. Pagan

Rome inherited Babylon's ignominy and the false prophet's capital shall inherit that of both Babylon and pagan Rome and shall- suffer as did Babylon and as Rome would have suffered had she not been converted by becoming Christian. Where the Antichrist will establish the seat of his religion we do not know. We do not say that it will not be at Rome but only that it need not be as far as this text is concerned.

the preceding chapter, but its importance as the seat of the false prophet and the capital of a world-wide empire under Antichrist demands a more detailed account. Hence St. John now describes at length the new pagan empire of

Rome (Ch. 17) and foretells its complete and final destruction (Ch. 18).

"The great harlot sitting by many waters is Rome holding sway over many nations that share in her corruption and infidelity to God. Ancient Tyre and Ninive were likewise designated as harlots by the prophets Isaias and Nahum. St. John simply follows out the symbolism in which infidelity to God is called fornication and adultery.

"St. John is led into a desert which foreshadows the great devastation and desolation that shall be wrought upon the unfaithful city. There he beholds a harlot seated upon a scarlet beast having seven heads and ten horns and covered over with names of blasphemy. This is evidently the beast from the sea — a symbol of Antichrist. Hence the vision indicates that the new pagan empire of Rome holds sway over the nations through the power and influence of Antichrist.

"Scarlet is the emblem of imperial power — a power exercised over the nations by Antichrist through his prophet in Rome. Scarlet is also the color of blood and forebodes terrible persecutions in which the blood of martyrs will flow in copious streams. The significance of the heads and horns and the names of blasphemy has been explained in connection with the beast from the sea. A further development is found in verses 9,17.

"The harlot wears a mantle of purple and gold, an emblem of the imperial power possessed by Rome as capital of a vast empire. The gems and gold cup imply riches and material prosperity, but the cup is filled with every iniquity and immorality. Riches and luxury have ever been the great demoralizers of nations as well as of individuals.

"Through her power and riches Rome leads other nations to worship Antichrist and imitate her own immoralities. Hence the harlot bears upon her forehead the mystic title: 'Babylon the Great, Mother of the Fornications and the

Abominations of the Earth.' It seems that Roman harlots often wore upon their foreheads a label whereon their names were conspicuously displayed. Here the name is a mystery showing that Babylon is used figuratively for Rome as in the Epistle of St. Peter and other early literature.

"The woman glutted with the blood of martyrs is a warning to the faithful of great persecutions at Rome and throughout the empire during the reign of Antichrist and his prophet.

"The angel's interpretation bristles with difficulties. He says the beast was, and is not, but shall come forth from the abyss only to perish again after a short time. In verse 2 the beast is identified with one of the heads which shall be the eighth although it is one of the seven, and shall quickly go into destruction. Further on (v. 16), it is said that the ten horns of the beast (in Greek, 'the ten horns and the beast') will fight against the harlot and destroy her by fire.

"Those who take Nero to be the Antichrist find an explanation for these mysteries, which at first sight, seems quite plausible. They have recourse to a popular legend that Nero, after attempting suicide, fled to the East and would soon reappear with the Parthian armies to conquer Rome and regain his throne. The writing of the Apocalypse is assigned to the reign of Vespasian who thus becomes the sixth head — the one who 'now is,' — Titus is the seventh who is yet to come. His short reign fulfills the prediction: 'He must remain a short time.' Then Nero, one of the five who have fallen, returns with the kings of Parthia (the ten horns) to regain his throne and establish himself as the eighth although he is one of the seven.

"This interpretation is ingenious but impossible, as already noted, Nero cannot be identified with Antichrist. But the insuperable difficulty lies in the fact that it destroys inspiration. The use of a legend in an inspired work might be admitted, incongruous though it seems, but a prophecy without fulfillment cannot be inspired. Yet according to the above widely received interpretation the prophecy remains unfulfilled except in so far as Domitian was known as a second Nero on account of his cruelty. If the ten horns be interpreted as the Parthian kings, or as satraps, there is no ground in history for representing Domitian or any other Emperor, as their leader. Neither was Rome ever destroyed by a Parthian invasion.

"The settled conviction of many scholars that Nero was Antichrist makes it necessary to refer this whole prophecy to the time of St. John and interpret the seven heads as Roman Emperors. But the context shows that the prophecy concerns events that are still in the future, and most probably the seven kings will not be emperors of Rome. The 'one who now is' refers not to the time of St. John, but to the time when the prophecy shall be fulfilled.

"St. John says there will be many Antichrists ; in fact there were many even in his day: 'Even now there are become many Antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last hour.' Again he writes: 'And every spirit that dissolveth Jesus is not of God: and this is Antichrist of whom you have heard that he cometh and he is now already in the world.' According to these words of St. John every teacher of error and every adversary of the Church is an Antichrist.

"Nero has ever been considered one of the principal Antichrists. Sts. Peter and Paul were the two witnesses raised up against him. Arius, leader of the first great heresy, may well be called an Antichrist with St. Athanasius and St. Hilary as the witnesses opposed to him. Mohammed, Luther, and Voltaire are often enumerated as Antichrists and many others could be added to the list.

"These few examples are sufficient to show that Antichrist will be like the true Messiah in having forerunners who typify him in various ways ; and since they are types of Antichrist it is not surprising that the prophecies concerning him can often be applied to them also in one or more particulars. But in Antichrist alone will they be realized in every particular. Hence the faithful will recognize him and avoid his snares, but the rest of mankind will be deceived by his 'lying wonders.'

"The angel tells St. John that the seven heads are seven mountains and seven kings. The seven mountains upon which the harlot sits are quite generally interpreted as the seven hills of Rome. The only apparent reason for mentioning the seven hills would be to show that the name Babylon is used figuratively for Rome, but the usage seems to have been well known to the early Christians. The connection of kings and mountains under one symbol suggests the imagery of the ancient prophecies where mountains so often figure as symbols of kingdoms and empires. Hence the seven heads, which are seven mountains, may be seven principal nations subject to

Rome in the days of Antichrist.

"One of the seven kings devotes himself and his kingdom so completely to the cause of Antichrist that he can rightly be identified with the beast as is done in Verse 11. This is the head which St. John saw in a former vision where it was wounded unto death but revived and healed in a mysterious manner to the astonishment of all.

"Five are fallen, one is, and the other is not yet come,' and the 'beast which was, and is not; the same also is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into destruction.' Any attempt to explain this mysterious prophecy before its accomplishment can be nothing more than speculation. Nevertheless we may find a solution that has some degree of probability.

"Verse 10 may mean that five nations supporting the cause of Antichrist are overcome, one still maintains the conflict, and a seventh has not yet submitted to the domination of Rome. but will soon do so only to be defeated after a short time. Through the influence of Antichrist and his lying wonders, the nations most devoted to his cause will rally from defeat and be organized anew as the eighth kingdom although it is really one of the seven. It shall soon go down to destruction in the final defeat of Antichrist and the destruction of his empire.

"Again the prophecy may be interpreted of the rulers instead of their kingdoms. In this sense 'five are fallen,' etc., would probably mean that the rulers of five nations have fallen from power, presumably by violent means, but the sixth still holds his throne. In the seventh kingdom a ruler is yet to come who will use his power in support of Antichrist.

"One of the five kings, identified with the beast on account of his great devotion to the cause of Antichrist, has received a sword wound unto death but is quickly healed and reorganizes his kingdom, or obtains power over another nation. Thus he becomes the eighth, yet in reality he is one of the seven. The sword wound unto death may be understood literally thus making this extraordinary recovery one of the 'lying wonders' of Antichrist, or his prophet, to deceive the nations.

"The ten horns are ten kings or princes who shall come to the assistance of Antichrist for a short time. They will place all their power and resources at his command to accomplish the one object in view — the destruction of the Church. Despite their efforts they shall be overcome

by the faithful of Christ who is Lord of lords and King of kings.

"As in other visions the waters, or the sea, symbolizes human society. Here they represent in particular the peoples and nations subject to Rome and with her in revolt against the Church. The seven principal ones were symbolized above by seven mountains.

"After a time the beast and his allied kings (the ten horns) will make war upon Rome and lay it waste with fire and sword. The barbarian invasions of Rome in the fourth and fifth centuries give some idea of the manner in which Rome shall become the prey of a 'scourge of God' in punishment for revolt against the Church and for its worship of Antichrist. St. John gives no reason why Antichrist and his allies turn against Rome except that God put it into their hearts to accomplish His purposes.

"According to the vulgate, only the ten kings will make war upon Rome: 'The ten horns which thou sawest in the beast: these shall hate the harlot,' etc. The Greek text reads: 'The ten horns which thou sawest and the beast: these shall hate,' etc. This is evidently the better reading, as it fits into the context, God put it into the hearts of the ten kings to give their power to the beast to do His words. The 'words of God' can be nothing else than the destruction of Rome."

**q.** "The mighty angel is probably a great saint or prophet raised up to enlighten the Church by his teaching and to foretell the destruction of Rome as Jonas foretold the fall of Ninive, and Daniel that of ancient Babylon. But if 'angel' be taken literally it is probably St. Michael, the guardian of the Church or St. Gabriel, the mighty' one of God.

"The angel speaks of the fall of Rome as something already accomplished to show that it must surely come to pass. It shall be left so desolate that wild beasts will find it a fitting abode and unclean birds will hover about its ruins. Thus also did Isaias prophecy concerning ancient Babylon: 'Wild beasts shall rest there and their houses shall be filled with serpents . . . and owls shall answer one another there, in the house thereof, and sirens in the temples of pleasure.'

"Some interpreters take the words of the angel to mean that the ruins of Rome shall become the lurking place of evil spirits according to the words of Christ: 'When an unclean spirit is gone out of a man he walketh through dry

places seeking rest.'

"The terrible destruction and desolation of Rome is a punishment for her many sins and for the sins into which she has led other nations. The kings and merchants of the earth have been led into the sins and vices of Rome, and with her they have upheld Antichrist in his efforts against the Church.

"Another voice from heaven — a voice of mercy — warns the faithful of the impending ruin and exhorts them to seek safety in flight. In like manner did our Lord warn His disciples to flee from Jerusalem upon the approach of the Roman army. Heeding these words of warning the faithful fled to Pella in Peraea and thus escaped the terrible sufferings of the siege.

"These verses are an apostrophe to the ministers of God's judgments, apparently the ten kings of the preceding chapter. They are to punish the wicked and unfaithful city for all the evils she has heaped upon them, presumably the evils resulting from apostasy and adherence to Antichrist. They shall punish her also for her own apostasy and worship of Antichrist: 'Double unto her double according to her works: in the cup wherein she hath mingled mingle ye double unto her.'

"The ruin and desolation of Rome shall be commensurate with her former glory, riches and power. The proud city that 'sits a queen' with neither fear nor anxiety, shall be humbled in the dust.

"The kings of earth who have shared her guilt shall lament the fate of the city, but they stand afar off fearing to come to her assistance. Such is usually the friendship between nations!"

**r.** "In response to the summons given above, (18:20), St. John hears the voices of praise from great multitudes. They are the martyrs in heaven and the faithful on earth singing the praises of God for the manifestation of His justice in the fall of Rome. The ruins of the city shall remain as a lasting memorial of God's judgments upon unfaithful nations and peoples: 'Her smoke ascendeth for ever and ever'."

**s.** "Antichrist and his allied kings now make a last effort against the forces of Christ and His Church. 'I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war with him that sat upon the horse.' This seems to be a reference to the battle at Armageddon

mentioned above (16 :16). Three false prophets were sent as messengers of Antichrist to gather the kings of earth to battle but Antichrist and his forces are overcome and a voice from the temple cries out 'It is done.' Antichrist and his prophet are cast into hell, and their allies put to the sword. It is the last battle in the great conflict between the Church and the powers of darkness."

**360. *Sebastian Michaeliz (before 1922)***

"Beelzebub shall accompany Antichrist in the form of a bird with four feet and a bull's head. He is the son of Beelzebub. He will torture Christians like demons are tortured. He will be able to fly, speak all languages, and will have various names."

**361. *Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin at Beauraing (1932-1933)***

"I am the Mother of God and the Queen of Heaven. Pray a great deal. Pray always. I shall convert sinners."

**362. *Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin at Banneux (1933)***

"I am the Blessed Virgin of the Poor. I have come to relieve suffering. Believe in me, I will believe in you. Pray a great deal !"

**363. *Sister Faustina (d. 1938)***

"About the year 1931 Our Lord demanded of Sister Faustina the painting of a picture and indicated to her what it should be like. Unable to paint the picture herself, she was given permission by the Superiors to instruct an artist in the painting of the picture of the "Mercy of God." Following are the promises of Our Lord made to Sister Faustina:

"I promise that the soul which shall venerate this picture will not perish. I further promise that soul victory over its enemies already here on earth and especially in the hour of death. I myself shall defend that soul as my own glory .

I am giving to people a vessel, with which they should come to fetch graces from the font of Mercy. That vessel is this picture with the subscription: 'Jesus, I trust in Thee.' I desire that the first Sunday after Easter be celebrated as the Feast of Mercy . . . Anyone who approaches on this day the source of Life, will obtain complete remission of punishment and sin. Mankind will not find peace, unless it turns with confidence to My Mercy. Before I come as a

just judge I will reveal myself as the King of Mercy so that no one will be able to excuse himself on the Day of Judgment, which is slowly approaching."

**364. *Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin at Heede (1937-1940)***

"The Blessed Virgin ordered prayer, MUCH PRAYER especially for the conversion of sinners."

During Lent, 1946 Our Lord appeared saying: "Men did not listen to my Most Holy Mother at Fatima when She appeared to them and admonished them to do penance. Now, I myself am coming at the last hour to warn and admonish mankind. The times are very serious! Men should finally do penance, turn away from their sins and pray, pray much in order that the wrath of God may be mitigated; particularly the holy rosary should be prayed very often! The rosary is very powerful with God! Worldly pleasures and amusements should be restricted."

When a dance was planned and assigned for October 2, 1945, our Saviour said to Gretchen Gansforth, the privileged one: "Tell the pastor — I command that this dancing party may not take place. He must announce it publicly in church. Woe to those parents who nevertheless allow their daughters to go there. They shall at once have a very severe account to render !"

"I want Heede to become a model parish. All abuses should be redressed anti the inhabitants should give a good example to the pilgrims."

**365. *Apparitions of the Blessed Virgin at Bonate (1944)***

The Blessed Virgin appeared to Adelaide Roncalli and instructed her "To tell bad mothers to stop committing ugly sins, to pray and do penance, and then, after a little time, the Madonna will bring to an end the troubles that are afflicting us now."

"Everybody — the just and sinners — must pray, pray without tiring for the world in its suffering !"

**366. *Apparition of the Blessed Virgin at Pfaffenhofen (1940-1946)***

a. April 25, 1946 The "beautiful lady" urged the girls to trust her, saying "Wherever it is being taught that I am all-powerful, I will spread peace, for peace will be where all men have faith in my power.

"I am the Sign of the Living God and my children will carry the imprint on their brows, and while the Star will persecute the imprint, my imprint will conquer the Star." (The word Star appears to stand for Lucifer, as would be concluded from later messages.)

**b.** May 25, 1946 "I am the great Mediatrix of Grace. Just as the world cannot gain the Father's mercy except by the sacrifice of the Son, so you, too, cannot be heard by my Son except through my intercession. Christ is so little known because I am not known. The Father cast His wrath over the nations of the earth because they cast out His Son. The world was consecrated to my Immaculate Heart, but this consecration has become a terrible responsibility for many. I demand that the world live that consecration! Have absolute faith in my Immaculate Heart. Have faith that mine is all power with the Son. Replace your sinful hearts by my immaculate one, then I will be the one who attracts the power of God, and the love of the Father anew will bring Christ to perfection within you. Do fulfill my prayer so that Christ may rule soon as King of Peace. The world must empty the chalice of divine wrath to its depth because of the countless sins which offend my heart.

"The Star of the Abyss (Lucifer?) will roar more violently than ever and cause terrible destruction because it knows that its time is short and because it sees already many have gathered about my Sign. He has no power over it even though it will kill the bodies of many. But from this sacrifice accomplished for me my power will grow to lead those who remain to the victory for Christ. Some have received my imprint, and there will be many more. In the bloodiest of days I will warn you, my children, not to forget that this very cross is a grace. Thank the Father for this grace time and again. Pray and sacrifice for sinners. Sacrifice yourselves and all your works through the Father! Surrender yourselves to me entirely! Pray the rosary! Do not pray so much for material goods! There is more at stake today. And do not expect signs and miracles! I want to accomplish things in hiding, as the great Mediatrix of Grace. I want to convey to you peace of heart, if you accept my demands. Only on such a peace can the peace of nations be established. Then Christ will rule as the King of Peace, over all peoples.

"See to it that my wishes are conveyed to the world. I will give you the necessary strength to do it."

**c.** June 25, 1946 "I am the great Mediatrix of Grace. The Father wants the world to recognize His handmaid. Men

must believe that I am the eternal bride of the Holy Ghost, the faithful Mediatrix of all graces. My sign is about to appear. Thus God wills it. Only my children recognize it because it manifests itself in hiding, and therefore they honor the Eternal One. I cannot reveal my power to the world as yet. I must go into retirement with my children. In hiding I will perform miracles in the souls until the (ordained?) number of victims is complete. It is up to you to shorten the days of darkness. Your prayers and sacrifices will destroy the image of the Beast. Then I will be able to reveal myself, in honor of the Almighty. Choose a sign for yourself in order that the Trinity may soon be adored and honored by all! Pray and sacrifice through me! Pray always! Pray the rosary! Pray to the Father for everything through My Immaculate Heart! If it is for His honor He will give it to you. Pray the Immaculate Rosary as I have shown it to you. Do not pray it for material rewards, but pray for graces in favor of individual souls, for your communities for the peoples of the earth, in order that all may love and honor the Divine Heart. Observe the Holy Saturday devoted to me the way I have suggested it. The apostles and priests ought to devote themselves to me especially in order that the great sacrifices which the Inscrutable One demands from them very particularly may grow in holiness and worthiness when they are laid into my hands. Make many sacrifices for me and make your prayer a sacrifice Be selfless.

"The only thing that matters today is that the Eternal One be honored and that atonement be made to Him. If you devote yourselves to this completely, I will take care of everything else. I will impose crosses upon my children that will be as heavy and deep as the sea because I love them in my sacrificed Son. I pray, be prepared to bear the cross in order that soon the Trinity may be honored. I demand that men soon fulfill my wishes because it is the will of the Father and because it is necessary for His greater honor and glory today and forever. A frightful woe the Father holds in store for those who will not submit to my will.

**d.** Answering the request that "the woman" give some outward sign, this reply was given: "I have provided so many signs already and spoken so often, but men have not understood. Upon the manifestation of outward signs great masses of people always came who were not concerned with the things that are essential. Were I to give outward signs many people would carry a heavy responsibility because they would not accept my will.

"This revelation is to go to everybody, but the rank and file will not take it seriously. This will lead to a condition in any case where these revelations will be reserved to a small group. In this small group I will perform signs and miracles which the world does not see. Only those will see them who see what is hidden. Where a small group begins to do my will I shall perform miracles in the souls such as never before, but only my children will see these miracles. I am pleased that first in your country a small group was found which recognizes my position and has formed their lives accordingly and fulfilled my wishes. I am pleased that this small flock conveys the Father's thoughts to the world. Not only I myself want to intercede with the Father. Many must intercede with the Father. That is why I need many to make reparation. I need many children who are prepared to help.

"Already a small group has made many sacrifices for me on this spot. I was pleased by them and have accepted them. A sanctuary should be built here such as this group plans it. I want my message to be conveyed to everybody textually. Then there will be a division of minds. When my message is spread, details and subordinate aspects of it should not be emphasized, but my will should be made manifest as the will of the Father. A small flock will understand the message rightly and absorb it. The great mass of people will reject it and not take it seriously and even take offense at it. However, you must not be afraid, for I am always with you. A small flock of those who understand my thoughts already is at hand, represented in all countries. They will receive my message and spread it and take it seriously. They have properly understood my position as wonderful Mother and Mediatrix of Graces. I am pleased by that and I will show them hidden mysteries."

e. The "Immaculate Rosary" requested by "the woman" provided for inserting the following mysteries between the individual decades: "By Thy Immaculate Conception — Save our Country! — Protect our country! — Sanctify our country! — Rule our country!" However, "country" could be substituted for by some other intention.

f. Prayer of the Angels, who surrounded "the woman," — "Hail, Eternal Lord, Living God who always was a terrible, rightful Judge, merciful Father always benign! Thine now and always be adoration, praise and honor and glory through Thy sun-clad daughter, our wonderful Mother!

"Hail, sacrificed God-Man, bleeding Lamb, King of Peace, Tree of Life, our Head, gate to the Father's heart, eternally born of Life, eternally united with the One that Is, Ruler ! Thine be now and always glory and greatness and adoration, atonement and praise through Thy Immaculate Mother and our wonderful Mother!

"Hail, Spirit of the Eternal God, always holy, God manifesting and effecting Itself since all eternity ! Burning fire from the Father to the Son, thunderous storm who conveyeth power and light and fervor to the members of the eternal Body, eternally burning Love, God-Spirit forming all the living, red stream of fire in the eternally Loving One toward the mortals. To Him be always anew and in all eternity power and glory and splendor through Thy Bride crowned with the stars our Mother.

"You, great Mediatrix Grace! Pray for us."

### **367. *The Apparition of Tre Fontane (1947)***

"I am she who is in the Divine Trinity; I am the Virgin of the Revelation. You persecute me. Now, it is enough. Enter the holy fold, the heavenly court on earth. The nine Fridays of the Sacred Heart have saved you. You must be like the flowers which Isola (his daughter) has picked; no lamentation is made, they are silent and do not rebel . . . The prayers out of the mouth of him who prays with faith, are like golden arrows which reach into the Heart of Jesus . . . With this dirt of sin I shall perform powerful miracles for the conversion of unbelievers."

"Love one another. Let us love one another always for the good of the whole world?!

Long and lovingly she spoke to him, the merciful Mother to the prodigal son. She showed him all that God, in His Revelation, had taught us of her graces and her privileges from the beginning of her existence until "my Son and the angels came to take me at the moment of my passing." She spoke eloquently of prayer "a golden arrow going out from the mouth of the Christian and piercing the Heart of God." She urged him to avoid the sins of the flesh which so greatly disgust and offend God, infinite purity, and her, Virgin without stain. She assured him that by means of the dust of the earth, of this cave, where so many sins had been committed ("sinful soil") she would obtain marvels of conversion and of healing. She urged him to pray much and to obtain prayers, especially for three ends: the conversion of sinners, the enlightenment of unbelievers, the return of all Christians to the unity of the faith. And

the prayer she urged him to say is the prayer she had so earnestly recommended at Lourdes, at Fatima, and on so many other occasions: the rosary."

### **368. Lipa (1948)**

Manila.—The "finger of God" had no part in the alleged rain of rose petals and the apparitions of the Blessed Virgin reported to have taken place at Lipa in late 1948. This is the decision of a special commission of Philippine Bishops, who studied the case under the direction of Archbishop Gabriel M. Reyes, the highest-ranking member of the Islands' Hierarchy.

"We, the undersigned Archbishop and Bishops," the commission's statement declared, "constituting for the purpose a special commission, having attentively examined and reviewed the evidence and testimonies collected in the course of repeated, long, and careful investigations, have reached the unanimous conclusion and hereby officially declare that the above-mentioned evidence and testimonies exclude any supernatural intervention in the reported extraordinary happenings—including the shower of petals—at the Carmel of Lipa."

In addition to Archbishop Reyes, the statement was signed by Bishops Cesar Guerrero of San Fernando, Mariano Madriaga of Lingayan, Rufino Santos, Apostolic Administrator of Lipa; Juan Sison, Auxiliary of Nueva Segovia; and Vicente Reyes, Auxiliary of Manila.

The central figure in the rose petal mystery at Lipa was reported at the time of its alleged occurrence as Teresita Castillo, then a 21-year-old Carmelite postulant. According to her testimony at the time, she was walking in the convent garden on the afternoon of September 12, 1948, when her attention was attracted by a vine swaying though there was no breeze.

She said she saw no one but heard a voice urging her to come to the spot for 15 consecutive days. The next day she allegedly saw a lady in white. The following days she was reportedly accompanied by other nuns, who were said to see mysterious rose petals scattered over the ground. The postulant alone saw the vision of a lady, it was reported.

Later a shower of the mysterious rose petals allegedly fell in the convent cells and on the staircase, and were also said to have been seen by people outside the cloister.

When the alleged phenomenon attracted wide attention both in the Philippines and other parts of the world, an official ecclesiastical investigation was launched, first by the Lipa diocesan authorities and then by members of the Philippine' Hierarchy. (NCWC Radio and Wire, April 2, 1951).

### **369. Rev. Theophilus Reisinger, O. M. Cap. (d. 1941)**

Letter written by Father Reisinger to the author, April 18, 1940, for publication:

"About Antichrist: In my exorcisms the evil spirits, and among them Lucifer, had made it known that Antichrist is already born. But be sure Rev. Father, I wanted the truth from the mouth of the infallible truth, from Christ Himself. Many things Christ had revealed already but only during the Mass, therefore I told my 'Mystic': Ask Christ whether Antichrist is already born. Christ appeared to the Mystic during the Mass at the Consecration, lifted up on the Cross, bleeding from all the wounds. After the Consecration He approached her and remained until the Agnus Dei and gave the following answer: 'Yes, Antichrist is already born, but he is yet too small and too young, wherefore, he cannot appear yet publicly. At the age of 33 years, he will begin his persecution against the Church and this will fall into the year 1952 and his end will come in the year 1955.'

"After some years, I had Christ asked something about Antichrist, but He answered : 'These questions cannot be answered, tell your Confessor: He knows that Antichrist is already born ; he knows where he lives ; he knows when he will begin his persecution, when his end shall come ; he knows his name 666 and this should suffice him.'

"I had to perform another Exorcism and one of the evil spirits spoke out of the body, very loud 'Ha! in the year 1952, Antichrist will begin his persecution.'

"Antichrist will have his 20th birthday this year. Judas Iscariot possesses the man, who will appear as Antichrist. Antichrist should have been here already according to St. Francis de Paul and Bartholomew Holzhauser, and Franz Ferdinand of Austria was appointed as the Great Monarch. But there were many souls of Atonement and the coming of Antichrist was postponed and the appointment for the Great Monarch went over to Otto of Hapsburg. Christ says: He will accomplish great things in the time of Antichrist and the 2nd Verse of Apoc. Chapter VI means Otto. The time for Antichrist can no more be postponed

because he is already born. Now dear Father, whatever I have written down here are the words of Christ. That Antichrist should begin in 1965 is not quoted right. Many priests and people believe that the destruction of Antichrist is the end of the world. This is only the first act of the General Judgment. After this follows the time 'One flock and One Shepherd.' And then the final end." Editor's note: Despite the assurance given here this is still one man's opinion.

**370. *Apparition of Our Lady at Gimigliano, Italy (April-May 1948)***

Our Lady appeared to 12 year old Anita Frederici on 25 different occasions from April 18th to May 23rd. On five previous occasions, from April 3rd, an angel appeared to the child. Nine secrets were entrusted to Anita by Our Lady: three are to be revealed on Easter Sunday, 1953; and six on the feast of Our Lady of Sorrows, 1963.

The principal message of Our Lady was this :

1. Pray for priests;
2. Pray for sinners;
3. Say the Rosary;
4. Pray for the conversion of Russia; (particularly emphasized)
5. Pray for the Holy Father.

Similar to the great miracle at Fatima, phenomena of the sun were noted not only at Gimigliano, but at places as far distant as thirty miles, by thousands of people.

**371.** Other modern seers and commentators will be found quoted in Prophecies 181 (Benedict XV), 183 (Lamy), 184 (de Billiante), 187 (Neumann), 188 (Pius XI), 189 and Appendix I (Pius XII), also 185, 186, 190, 191, 195, 197, 198, and 199 (all anonymous).

The long prophecy attributed to Father Pio is omitted because it is repudiated by Father Pio and his superiors. Likewise we omit reference to several other interesting

phenomena either because the material does not relate to the subject of the book or because we have not been able to get reliable information on the events.

**372.** In closing this book we feel that it is wise to point out again the very great danger of being deceived by phenomena which seem to be beyond nature. In this connection we quote a warning which appeared in the press of the world under the date line Vatican City, February 3, 1951—"Catholics were warned today against false assertions of the supernatural whose widespread prevalence threatens to "discredit the true miracle."

"The warning was given in a front page article in the Vatican's L'Osservatore Romano by Monsignor Alfred Ottaviani, assessor of the Supreme Holy Office - one of 11 congregations which govern Roman Catholic Church affairs.

"'Pretexts and uncontrolled assertions of supernatural manifestations,' he wrote, 'are these days springing forth a little bit everywhere.

"'This has progressed to the point where there has occurred deplorable disobedience of ecclesiastical authority that had intervened to apply needed curbs.'

"Msgr. Ottaviani said: 'We are witnessing for years an increase of popular passion for the marvelous, even in religion, throngs of faithful go to scenes of presumed visions and prodigious pretexts, deserting, instead, the church, the sacraments and sermons.'

"This, the monsignor said, occurred in Italy, following assertions of visions in Voltago, in Belgium at Hamsur-Sambre, in Germany at Heroldsbach and in the United States in Necedah. Msgr. Ottaviani said he could list other examples in other countries, both near and far. He added:

"The Church certainly does not want to put in shadow that which God does that is prodigious, but wishes only to hold the faithful alert on that which comes from God and that which does not come from God. She (the Church) is the enemy of false miracles." (No. 372 is added by the editor)

# BIBLIOGRAPHY

The bibliography prepared for this work by Father Culleton cannot be found. What follows is a list of books and manuscripts on prophecy and allied subjects by Catholics found in his library or mentioned in his notes. A few non-Catholic books and one or other work published since 1949 are added. A star indicates that the book is still in print, (NC) that the author seems to be a non-Catholic.

- \*American Eccl. Review, Jan. 1951 "The Jewish Road to Rome"
- \*Ancient Christian Writers edited by Quasten and Plumpe
- Anti-Nicene Fathers edited by Roberts and Donaldson (NC)
- Apocrypha, \*Apocryphal New Testament edited by James (NC), \*Apocrypha . . . of the Old Testament edited by Charles (NC)
- \*Barthas and Fonseca: Our Lady of Light (Fatima)
- Bell: Peasant Life in Old German Epics (NC)
- \*Benson: Lord of the World
- Berry: Apocalypse of St. John
- \*Bible, The Old Testament, Douay Version; The New Testament, Confraternity Version
- Billuart: Theologia Juxta Mentem D. Thomae
- Boost: Die Geschichte and die Propheten . . .
- Brooks: The Jews in the Light of Prophecy (NC)
- \*Catholic Biblical Quarterly, Vol. XIII, No. 1.
- Cheyne and Black: Encyclopaedia Biblica (NC)
- Clericus: Das Buch der Wahr- and Weissagungen
- \*D'Ales: Dictionaire Apologetique de la Foi Catholique
- Eichinger: Die Ehrwürdige . . . Elizabeth Canori-Mora
- \*Fathers of the Church edited by Schopp, Deferrari, et al.
- Fonseca: Nossa Senhora de Fatima
- Forbes: A Little Sister of the Sacred Heart (Lateau)
- \*Furfey: The Mystery of Iniquity
- Galua: Futura Grandeza de Espana . . .
- Hastings: Dictionary of the Bible (NC)
- Izard: Louise Lateau
- Kapsner: Begone Satan; Mary Crushes the Serpent
- Konzinator: La Salette and die Nachste Zukunft
- Krogh-Tonning: Die Hl. Brigitta von Schweden
- \*Lucken: Antichrist and the Prophets . . . in the Chester Cycle
- \*Luddy: Life of St. Malachy
- Luetzenburg: Vita Antichristi
- Mackenzie: The Popes of St. Malachy's Prophecy (NC)
- Maitre: La Prophetie des Papes; Les Papes et La Papauté . . .
- Manning: The Four Great Evils of the Day
- \*Marchi: The Crusade of Fatima
- Martindale: Antichrist
- \*McGlynn: Vision of Fatima
- \*McGrath: Fatima or World Suicide
- Neuman, Therese Works on this mystic are numerous, e.g. De Houre, Messmer, Schimberg, Theodorowicz, Thomas, Waitz, Witt. \*Von Lama has several works.
- \*Newman: Essays Critical and Historical
- \*Norton: Visitations of Our Lady
- Nostradamus. This author has numerous translators and commentators, e.g., \*Allen, Lamont, \*McCann, Roberts, Ward (all NC except Allen)
- \*Oca: More about Fatima
- \*Oesterreicher: Seeds of Hope (on the Mystery of Israel)
- Parent: Le Secret Complet de La Salette

Patrologiae . . . Cursus Completus edited by Migne. See index P. L. Vol. 220, Coll. 266-308

Pelligrino: The Christian Trumpet . .

\*Prat: Theology of St. Paul (vol. 1)

Ratton: Antichrist, An Historical Review

\*Ryan: Our Lady of Fatima

Sardi: Leben des . . . Kaspar del Bufalo

\*Schneweis: Angels and Demons according to Lactantius

Spirago: Genaues caber den Antichrist; Die Malachias—Weissagung . . . ; Der Weltuntergang; Die Zukunft Deutschlands . . .

\*Thomas Aquinas: In Omnes S. Pauli Ap. Epistolas Commentaria; Summa Theologies . . . Translated . . . First American Edition.

Ullathorne: The Holy Mountain of La Salette

\*Vacant et al.: Dictionaire de Theologie Catholique

\*Vigouroux-Pirot: Dictionaire de la Bible

Wetzel: Die Falschen Propheten . . . Other works are listed in The Prophets and Our Times

## MANUSCRIPTS

Augustine: On the Barbarian Times

Beecher: The Private Prophets

Bunse: The Earling Case

The Case of Mrs. Brennan

Culligan: The Last World War

Favro: The Two Witnesses

Landfield: An Extraordinary War Prophecy

Laplante: Events at Necedah

O'Brien: Barbara Groves Mei

Pseudo-Pio: Revelations; Additional Revelations

Qui Parle dans Tout Ce Qui Suit?

The Ram and the He-Goat

The Schultejann Case

Stark: Necedah

Swanson: Gibraltar Must Fall

Theophilus: About Antichrist

The Wedding of Gog at Magog

Westropp: Manifestations . . . at Necedah (two versions)

Letters or Circulars from Abendroth; Bechtolf; Bolt; Brandt; Characky ;Husted; Iago; Kelle; McKinnon; Miller and others.

# INDEX

## Page References to Prophecies and Commentators

- Abraham, Testament of 158  
Adso 158  
Alberich, Chronicle of 192  
Andrew Bobola, St. 201  
Anselm, St. 185
- Anthony, St. 188  
Apocalypse 132, 144, 148  
Apostles, Epistle of the 162; Constitutions of the 165  
Asdenti, Rose Colomba 204  
Augustine, St. 181
- Banneux 224  
Barnabas, Epistle of 161  
Bartholomew, Book of 160 Gospel of 162  
Baruch, II Book of 157  
Beauraing 224
- Ben Sirach 138  
Benedict, St. 183  
Berry, E. Sylvester 212  
Birch Tree 200  
Blois, Marianne von 200
- Bonate 224  
Bouquillion, Bertina 204  
Bridget of Sweden, St. 191  
Busto, Bernardine von 193  
Canori-Mora, Elizabeth 202
- Challoner, Bishop 141, 142  
Clement, St. 165  
Clement of Alexandria, St. 170  
Columbkille, St. 184  
Commodianus 178
- Culleton, Rev. H. G., life and ideas Antichrist VII, 130  
Cyprian, St. 178  
Cyril of Constantinople, St. 188  
Cyril of Jerusalem, St. 180  
Daniel 140
- Deuteronomy 137  
Didache 165  
Dionysius of Luxemburg 198  
Dupont of Tours 206  
Ecclesiasticus 138
- Emmerich, Anna Katherine 201  
Enoch, Book of 153; Secrets of 155  
Ephrem, St. 180  
Eppinger, Alphonse 206  
Esdras, IV Book of 156; Revelation of 159
- Ezechiel 139  
Faber, Frederick William 205  
Fatima 210  
Faustina, Sr. 224  
Francis of Assisi, St. 188
- Francis de Paul, St. 193  
French (old) 184  
Gallus 180  
Gelasian Decree 180  
Genesis 136
- German (old) 184  
Gertrude Marie of Angers 210  
Gimigliano 228  
Giraud, Maximin 203  
Gregory the Great, St. 184
- Hamsur-Sambre 228  
Heede 224  
Hermes, Pastor of 165  
Heroldsbach 228  
Herve, J. M. 135
- Hilary, St. 180  
Hildegard, St. 186  
Hippolytus, St. 171  
Holzhauser, Bartholomew 196  
Irenaeus, St. 165
- Irish (old) 184  
Isais 138; Martyrdom of 158; Testament of 159  
Jahenny, Marie Julie 207  
James, Epistle of 161  
Jeremias 139
- Jerome, St. 180, 181  
Joachim, St. 188  
John, St., Apocalypse 132, 144, 148; Gospel 146; Epistles 147; Apocrypha attributed to 160, 161.  
John Chrysostom, St. 181

John of the Cleft Rock 190  
 John Damascene, St. 184  
 John Mary Vianney, St. 204  
 Joseph, History of 159  
 Jubilees, Book of 155

Jude, St. 144; 147  
 Justin, St. 169  
 Kings, III Book 137: IV Book 137  
 Kosmos 192  
 La Salette 203

Lactantius 179  
 Lapide, Cornelius a 196  
 Le Frois, Bernard J. 132  
 Leabhar Breac 184  
 Legenda Aurea 185

Lilienthal, Johannes von 192  
 Lipa 227  
 Louis de Montfort, St. 199  
 Ludmilla of Prague 188  
 Luke, St. 143; 145

Maccabees, I Book 143  
 Mainz 207  
 Maitre, Joseph 207  
 Malachias 143  
 Maria of Agreda 197

Mark, St. 144  
 Matarelli, Palma 204  
 Martin of Tours, St. 180  
 Martiny, Marie Deluil 207  
 Mary of the Nativity 199

Matthew, St. 144; 145  
 Mechtilda, St. 189  
 Merl, Maria von 206  
 Mesmin, Marie 210  
 Methodius, St. 185

Michaeliz, Sebastian 224  
 Michaula of Saba 196  
 Mirabeau 210  
 Moll, Paul de 207  
 Mount Sinai Friar 203

Nazara, Hermit of 199  
 Necedah 228  
 Nectou 199  
 Nennius, St. 184  
 Nostradamus, Michael 195

O'Connell, John 204  
 Origen 177  
 Orval 192  
 Ottaviani, Alfred 228  
 Paralipomenon, II Book 138

Patrick, St. 184  
 Paul, St. V, 130; 146  
 Paul, Apocalypse of 161  
 Peter, St. 147  
 Peter, Apocalypse of 160

Pfaffenhofen 224  
 Piacenza 206  
 Pilate, Acts of 159  
 Pinsk 201  
 Pio 228

Pius X 210  
 Prat, Ferdinand 130  
 Psalms 138  
 Rabanus Maurus 184  
 Reisinger, Theophilus 227

Rembordt, Bernhardt 199  
 Robert Bellarmine, St. 196  
 Rolle, Richard 191  
 Royer, Jane Le 199  
 Shipton, Mother 153

Sibylline Oracle 164; 196  
 Stickelmeyer, John Baptist 204  
 Suarez, Francisco 195  
 Sulpicius Severus 180  
 Taigi, Anna Maria 202

Tertullian 171  
 Thomas, Apocalypse of 163  
 Thomas Aquinas, St. 188  
 Tiburtina Sibylla 164  
 Tre Fontane 226

Victorinus, St. 179  
 Vincent Ferrer, St. 193  
 Voltago 228  
 Votin, Jerome 193  
 Wisdom 138

Zenobius, St. 178

